



BRINGING THE FARM TO LIVE IN ANOTHER WORLD

BOOK 07

Ming Yu

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Bringing The Farm To Live In Another World

(带着农场混异界)

by

Ming Yu

(明宇)

Synopsis

A series about a man who awakens in a strange land to find himself in the body of a complete waste of human life. He has to try to help rebuild a family that has fallen to only himself and his few retainers. As the first arc of the story it grows and becomes an epic journey of adapting to new land while crippled by a drug he was forced to ingest as he was banished to a wasteland by the old nobles of the capital after his family sided with the wrong heir to the throne in line for succession.

His only aid in this unfamiliar world is a strange ability that was present when he awoke in his new body. He's got the ability to enter a world that is basically a farming simulation game, except all of the food is usable in the outside world. For someone stuck in a wasteland, only this cheat will help him survive and move forward in this unfamiliar world along with his few loyal retainers as he tries to rebuild a fallen family. Farming, selling crops, trying to find a way forward with a body that's crippled.

Follow the journey of Zhao Hai as he lives his life in a magical world filled with intrigue, farming, business, battle, more farming, and other exciting non farming things, followed by farming and cultivation.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Shif, bagelson, Trung Nguyen @ [For Kalimdor!](#)

Translation Edits by Argos Yesu @ [For Kalimdor!](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 601 – Settling In

The next day after Zhao Hai and Tess' agreement, Tess announced to his tribesmen that they would be moving to a new place.

This fact made the other Diamond Apes feel somewhat at a loss. They don't know what's going on, why would they suddenly move to another place?"

Zhao Hai didn't participate in this matter. This wasn't something that needed his help, it was all left up to Tess and the others. The Diamond Ape tribe had already stayed in this place for more than 5000 years. And in these 5000 years, their lives had been calm. Aside from looking for the Divine Artifact as well as the ice beasts, they didn't suffer any other trouble. It was a sort of mundane heaven, one which had beasts living in it.

And now they were suddenly leaving, this made the minds of the other Diamond Apes turn blank. But Tess told them about the situation of the volcano and compared it to the Black Wasteland. This managed to calm the people down.

Seeing the reactions of the Diamond Apes made Zhao Hai gawk. Then he immediately understood why. They had lived in seclusion for too long that they would find it strange seeing other strangers in their vicinity. If they suddenly come across an assortment of new people, then they might not be able to adapt.

But fortunately, the place where they would be going to was the Black Wasteland. This meant that they would just be moving from their mundane life into a less mundane place but somewhere without wild beasts. Perhaps this was the best result for them.

Tess' influence in the tribe was very high that after he talked his tribesmates through, they started to pack up and prepared to leave.

The things that they focused most was actually their magic

beasts, which were the fire rabbits. These magic beasts were quite big, they weren't much shorter than the argali. It can eat anything and it rarely get sick. It was a very good type of magic beast.

However, when one considers money, these rabbits were inferior to argali. Because of this, Zhao Hai wanted the Diamond Apes to raise argali, not these fire rabbits.

However, Tess words reminded Zhao Hai that the Diamond Apes haven't raised argali for more than 5000 years. They simply didn't have the knowledge to herd argali. If Zhao Hai immediately swaps their fire rabbits for argali, then they might find it hard to adapt.

Zhao Hai and Tess stood on the wall and observed the people preparing. After their talk, Zhao Hai told Tess that Iron Mountain Fort would be prepared after three days. Zhao Hai also sent some undead to Green in order to rush the preparations.

Tess and the others were still not finished preparing. They had lived in here for a long time that not even a stick was spared in their packing. Seeing this scene made Tess smile bitterly.

Zhao Hai didn't care about it too much. These people were just unwilling to give their stuff up due to nostalgia, it wasn't something strange. Tess sighed and looked at Zhao Hai, "Mister, I think it'll take two days before they finish packing. If you are in a hurry, I can make them go faster."

Zhao Hai faintly smiled and shook his head, "It's fine. The Wasteland is already prepared. Being late for one or two days wouldn't matter. Just have them take their time. There's no need to worry."

Tess said, "I'm just afraid that you might miss the chance to get the Beast God's Spear."

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "Don't worry, the Beast God's Spear has already been here for 5000 years. If something did happen, one or two days wouldn't make much of a difference."

Tess nodded, then he said, “Mister, the Beast God’s Spear is a very important matter to our tribe. I have a request. If Mister finds the Beast God’s Spear, please bring it to our Diamond Ape tribe first. We’ve sought for this thing for 5000 years, the least we could do is see it with our own eyes.”

Zhao Hai nodded and, “Patriarch, rest assured. If I do retrieve the Beast God’s Spear, I’ll go back to this volcano and show it to you so you could perform a ritual.”

Tess nodded, he hadn’t requested Zhao Hai about doing a ceremony at the volcano because it was already too much to ask for. Therefore, the only thing he could ask was to see them Beast God’s Spear.

Zhao Hai understood Tess’ mood. This was their tribe’s obsession for 5000 years. If Tess doesn’t see it, then he might carry this regret for the rest of his life.

Sure enough, just as Tess had thought, the Diamond Apes took two days before they finished packing. After all of them had prepared, Zhao Hai immediately went out of the city and opened a huge spatial rift that allowed the people to get through it.

The people couldn’t help but get surprised upon seeing the spatial rift. But they still obediently walked through it. What made them surprised was the fact that Tess was not present. But fortunately, the other elders were there to guide them.

It didn’t take a long time for the people to pass through the spatial rift. And when they emerged, they immediately saw Tess. As it turns out, Tess was the first one that passed through the rift.

Along with Tess, there were also some slaves as well as Giant Horned Bulls on the other side. These people would help the Diamond Apes get settled in.

The Diamond Apes looked curiously at the Giant Horned Bulls. The Giant Horned Bulls were very enthusiastic. Almost all of the

Beastmen knew about the exiled Royal tribe, now they had finally seen what they looked like.

However, the Giant Horned Bulls also knew the importance of the current matter. Therefore, they didn't say a lot of words to the Diamond Apes. They just led the Diamond Apes to the place that was prepared for them. The place where they'll go to was very close to the Giant Horned Bulls. This was because the Bulls would be the people who would teach the Diamond Apes about the life in the Black Wasteland.

The Diamond Apes received their tents according to their families. It was great that Beastman tents were very tall and spacious, which allowed the Diamond Apes to stay in it.

The Diamond Apes looked curiously at their new home. They had discovered that everything that they would need was already provided. There were even some ironware that they hadn't seen before, this made them feel very excited.

Soon, the 100 thousand people had arrived at the camp. Tess and the elders also helped them settle in quickly. Green and Merine came as well along with a lot of slaves. The most important thing for these Diamond Apes was to get used to meeting new people. These were people that they would have to come in contact frequently in the future.

Zhao Hai had also started to improve the Wasteland this year. And now that Cai'er has levelled up, she had extended her branches slowly. In the end, she had surrounded the Iron Mountain as well as the middle part of the Black Wasteland. In this way, it won't be very cold here even in the winter. This also allowed plants to grow normally, increasing the yearly yield of the land.

Cai'er didn't have anything to say about this. She was a plant type magic beast. And all of the plant types can do this when they reach a high enough level. And now that she has been upgraded

further, this matter was not even a problem for her. Now, one could see a beautiful ring of flowers around the Iron Mountains. These branches belong to Cai'er. She can use this to absorb energy from the land. Not only would it affect her cultivation, it would also provide more nutrition for her, which was one of her most important ability in order to survive as a magic beast.

This was also Zhao Hai's consideration for Tess' tribe. Although they can survive in the current Black Wasteland, one shouldn't forget that they had been living in a volcano for 5000 years. They weren't used to having seasons. If winter suddenly arrives, then it would be troublesome for the Diamond Apes.

Regarding the arrival of the Diamond Apes, Robert and Evan couldn't help but get surprised. There were once Great Patriarchs who governed land with a border with the Beastmen. Because of that, they also collected a lot of materials regarding the history of the Prairie. The matter of the Diamond Apes wasn't a huge secret among the Beastmen. They were basically a royal tribe that was exiled to the Northern Icefield. When they went to the Icefield, nobody was expecting them to survive. But who would've thought that Zhao Hai would bring them here.

Evan and Robert didn't know about the true reason why the Diamond Apes were sent to exile. In fact, most Beastmen didn't know either. However, they were now more surprised about Zhao Hai's abilities.

Settling 100 thousand people was no small matter. But since Green and the others had already done it for more than one time, they knew what to do. Because of their experience, there weren't any mistakes in the process. And adding on to the fact that they had prepared, the Diamond Apes were settled quickly.

100 thousand people might sound many, but when one divides them into households, the unit number would be reduced to 30 thousand. Settling them up was much easier than they thought.

Zhao Hai also lended a hand in settling the Diamond Apes. Whatever the Diamond Apes needed, Zhao Hai would fulfill it immediately. He already had a lot of things in his Space, common necessities wouldn't be a problem.

When the curtain of night fell down, the Diamond Apes were finally settled in nicely. Zhao Hai and the others also relaxed. However, Zhao Hai knew that settling down was not this easy. These Diamond Apes might be unable to adapt to their new life and would take a long time before they get familiar with the place. It was just like when the Giant Horned Bulls had come here for the first time.

However, this time was also not the same. Now, there were Giant Horned Bulls present in order to teach the Diamond Apes. Compared to when the Giant Horned Bulls' arrival, the current situation was much better.

It took three days before the Diamond Apes had finally reached their new home. Zhao Hai also sent some argali and bulls. With the help of the Giant Horned Bulls, the Diamond Apes would slowly learn how to herd them.

At this time, Zhao Hai returned to the Northern Icefield. It was time to unearth the place's secrets!

Chapter 602 – Ice Pillar

Going back to the volcano and seeing the already deserted city, Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile a little. Maybe the volcano would be just like the Northern Icefield. Once it's secret is discovered, maybe it would be like this mountain city, just a piece of history.

Zhao Hai's figure slowly flew up the mountain and went to the place beyond it. He then looked at the white icefield as well as the thirteen peaks. He couldn't help but feel a sense of excitement welling up in his chest. He wanted to conquer this area, he must unearth the secrets that nobody had found out before!

After thinking up to this point, Zhao Hai cannot help but face the skies and issued a long and loud cry. Then his figure moved and quickly flew towards the northern part of the icefield!

While Zhao Hai helped Tess and the others settle down, he also wasn't idling about. He also made Cai'er control the Blood Ghost Staff and map the entire Northern Icefield.

The Northern Icefield was indeed very big, comparing it to the Beastman Prairie would not be an understatement. It might even be bigger. Actually, Zhao Hai didn't know that the Northern Icefield wasn't like this big before. The Icefield was just expanding at a very slow speed. It was because of this discovery that the Patriarch of the Diamond Apes decided to do an expedition to see what caused the expansion. They wanted to know why it continued to expand all this time, but who would've thought that they wouldn't be able to survive their trip.

The White Tigers, Polar Bears, and the Ice Hawks decided to guard the Icefield for the same reason. They wanted to prevent the Icefield's expansion as much as possible.

Since Zhao Hai didn't know about this, so he only knew that the place was very big. Since the time Tess had decided to move, Cai'er was already controlling the Blood Ghost Staff to fly and map the

Icefield. But even if the Space had already mapped a huge chunk and its speed of mapping was not slow, they still hadn't found a single clue regarding the Beast God's Spear.

But Zhao Hai also didn't worry about it. He was aware that in such a place, wanting to find ten thousand people was not an easy matter.

In other places, ten thousand people might be a considerable number of people. But in this icy wilderness, that number had become insignificant. Moreover, there were countless roads that one can make in a place like this. So it was useless to find a direction. When one goes forward, it was difficult to know where one was heading. In such a place, who knows which direction the ten thousand Diamond Apes went.

Because of this, Zhao Hai moved slowly forward and scanned the place carefully. He was afraid of missing a single thing.

This kind of search was very boring. Zhao Hai couldn't understand what the Patriarch of the Diamond Ape tribe was thinking. Did he think that looking for the core of the Northern Icefield was very easy?

Zhao Hai didn't think about it too much since he still needed to constantly go forward day by day. As long as he discovered an anomaly, he would immediately stop and see even if it was just a half buried stone. Zhao Hai didn't want to miss a single thing.

For ten days, Zhao Hai discovered practically nothing. This made him feel more pressure, the feeling in his heart had gone worse and worse.

Laura and the others also discovered Zhao Hai's bad mood. They kept using methods to make him happy every day. Although their methods were useful, they knew that unless Zhao Hai finds the Beast God's Spear, these methods would just be temporary.

As time and days pass by, Zhao Hai was also getting more and

more agitated. But he had very good control of himself, so it was only his words that got fewer and fewer as well as the wrinkle in his brows getting tighter and tighter. When Laura and the others looked at this, their hearts couldn't help but ache. Even if they want to help, there wasn't anything that they can do.

Zhao Hai wasn't in the Space most of the time anymore. He was currently on a small ship that he had made. His eyes were virtually stuck to the monitor.

It has been 13 days since Tess and the others had settled down. But even after that time, no clue has been spotted. Zhao Hai slightly shut his eye, he was feeling very tired.

He opened his eyes after some time, then he turned the monitor off. He knew that even if he didn't look at it, Cai'er would inform him if something special had come up.

Zhao Hai looked outside through the pale red color of the airship. The outside world was pure white, but who would've thought that behind this white facade was actually endless murder. It won't kill you from the beginning, but it will slowly suck you in and dissolve you into this white landscape, making you part of it forever.

While Zhao Hai was thinking about this, a white light suddenly flashed from a distance. Although he has the Staff's wall protecting him, Zhao Hai still couldn't help but shut his eyes.

Zhao Hai cannot help but get surprised, he was not familiar with the Icefield. And one could hardly see any other colors inside. There was no change, everything is white, even the sunshine was white. Zhao Hai wanted to know where this glare that blinded him came from.

After some time, Zhao Hai opened his eyes and proceeded to inspect the place carefully. It didn't take a long time for him to discover that there was a sparkling thing in the distance. Not only was it dazzling, it also emitted seven types of color, it was very beautiful.

Zhao Hai looked at the object and couldn't help but think about the toy prism that he had in his childhood life. The prism would take in light and disperse seven colors just like a rainbow.

Zhao Hai then saw that the object at the distance was a huge ice pillar, no wonder it can disperse seven colors. Zhao Hai stopped his thinking as he immediately urged the staff to fly towards it. He didn't care about any other place at this point. He now wants to see what was going on in front of him.

Before long, Zhao Hai was already getting closer and closer to the bright light to the point that the monitor can now pick it up. He immediately inspected the thing on the monitor and couldn't help but get shocked. This was because what he just saw was an incredibly huge ice pillar!

The thick ice pillar was just like Sun Wukong's enlarged staff that was stabbed into the earth. It stood there as though it was connecting the sky and the ground.

Zhao Hai stared at this ice pillar, it looks like this pillar just appeared out of nowhere. There was nothing else all around it. It was as peculiar as seeing a huge tree in the Prairie.

After some time, Zhao Hai recovered. Then he called over Laura and the others and had them look at this marvelous sight.

After Laura and the others had come out, they were immediately attracted to the seven colored light in the distance. It took quite some time before they expressed their surprise. Then they shifted their gazes to the monitor to be shocked once more. This was the first time that they had seen such a thing.

Laura looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, what is that strange thing?"

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "I don't know, I just discovered it right now." Then he enlarged the image on the monitor. He wanted to have a closer look to see if the ice pillar had anything.

Then he noticed that there were several mounds below the ice pillar. These mounds were quite big, they were 10 meters tall and had about 30 meters in diameter.

Below the pillar were about 12 mounds. Zhao Hai looked at the mounds carefully, he didn't know the purpose of these things.

At this time, brilliant rays suddenly went out of one of the mounds. An ice beast then appeared to be digging itself out. Right, it was an ice beast. The same ice beasts that attacked the Diamond Ape tribe.

Zhao Hai had also been looking for clues about the ice beasts in the past few days, but he had not succeeded. He didn't expect to find traces of them in this place.

Zhao Hai's expression couldn't help but change since he had always felt that the ice beasts may have something to do with the Beast God's Spear. If this was the case, then does the ice pillar have any clues about it?'

After thinking about this, Zhao Hai immediately quickened his speed, he wanted to inspect the ice pillar as soon as possible. It didn't take too long for the monitor to be able to penetrate inside the ice pillar. Zhao Hai stared intently at the screen, his heart was already beating loudly.

The layers of ice looked just as hard as a copper wall. But Zhao Hai didn't worry about it, he just calmly watched the monitor. He now noticed that the monitor's distance to the ice was now closer compared to the ground.

At this time, the ice suddenly vanished from his sight. Zhao Hai couldn't help but get surprised at this development. He immediately stopped and looked around. Unexpectedly there was a space inside the ice pillar.

Zhao Hai stared blankly before he immediately had the Blood Ghost Staff move forward. He didn't expect the pillar to have a

hollow space inside.

Zhao Hai then discovered that the ice pillar was very thick, and the space inside it was also very enormous. Although the pillar can only be hardly seen in the icefield, one would discover how grand it was the closer one approaches it.

The entire ice pillar was about 10 thousand meters in diameter, but its altitude would reach about 100 thousand. Such height was incredibly astonishing.

The pillar's wall was about several hundred meters thick and the space inside was very huge. This was the grandest place that Zhao Hai has ever been in.

The more the staff advanced the more shocked Zhao Hai was at this incomparably huge ice pillar. Just as he was shocked, he suddenly found some black spots that had appeared on the monitor.

Zhao Hai's eyes couldn't help but turn sharp as he saw these black spots. With a pure environment such as this, these black spots were peculiarities that attracted his attention.

One of these black spots was a Diamond Ape that was carrying a spear. Moreover, he also had his beast relative towering right behind him!

Chapter 603 – Perverted Bubble

This ape has been frozen in ice that has not been melted in about thousands of years. The Beastman and the beast now looked like an ice sculpture.

Zhao Hai stopped in mid air and stared at the frozen ape, Laura and the others did so as well. The Diamond Ape looked very peculiar. He wore a very simple sleeveless leather armor, there was no way to keep his arm from getting cold. Apart from the leather armor, the ape also wore a beastkin cloak. And on his hand was an iron spear.

At the same time, the ape that was behind the Diamond Ape was much larger than the giant apes of the Diamond Ape tribe. It also appeared much sturdier. The ape has the eyes and expression of someone that was anticipating an attack. The two of them were like soldiers that were preparing for battle.

Zhao Hai looked blankly at this scene, he took a good long time in silence. Although the beast and person was already sealed for thousands of years, their imposing aura still remained. It was for certain that they were formidable soldiers when they were alive. Only elite warriors had this kind of fire in their expressions. They had an aura of someone who had gone through a mountain of corpses and a sea of blood. Their single step was enough to frighten a child.

Laura and the others looked at the frozen person and beast with not so good expressions. Their faces had paled, noticeable frightened by the Diamond Ape and his beast.

Before long, Zhao Hai recovered, he couldn't help but laugh and said, "I guessed correctly! These ice beasts did indeed have something to do with the Beast God's Spear! Hahaha. It seems like the Divine Artifact is in this ice pillar."

"Brother Hai, I'm a little scared." While Zhao Hai was drowning

in happiness, Laura's shivering voice sounded out. Zhao Hai turned to Laura and saw that their faces were a bit pale, they were indeed quite frightened.

Zhao Hai immediately understood the matter and then said, "Alright, you go back to the Space first. I'll go to the ice pillar myself and look for the Beast God's Spear."

Laura and the others complied as Zhao Hai transferred them back to the Space. Zhao Hai didn't expect that Laura and the others would be frightened by this.

However, his thought changed as he understood the feelings of Laura and the others. Although they had experienced a lot of matters, they weren't very familiar with a genuine battlefield. Most of the time, they were looking at the scene from the monitor, just like how someone looks at a movie in a television. But now, they were looking at an enlarged version of an image which was almost the same as the actual person. The aura of the beast and beastman was too overwhelming that it was not a mystery why Laura and the others were frightened.

Zhao Hai gently shook his head, he didn't care about this matter. After all, he didn't want Laura and the others to go through this path in the future. They weren't necessary in the battlefield, Zhao Hai was already enough.

After Laura and the others entered the Space, Zhao Hai immediately flew forward. The more he went forward, the more Diamond Apes he had managed to come across. All of these Diamond Apes were the same as the first one. All of them had the same expression, leather armor, cloak, as well as iron spear. With their companion beast at their back, and their mouth roaring, they looked like an army that had declared their presence in the battlefield.

Zhao Hai slowly went forward. Although he couldn't wait to get the Beast God's Spear, he wasn't worried much about that

anymore. He knew that the pillar certainly had clues regarding the Beast God's Spear. With the expressions of these people as well as the ice beasts, Zhao Hai knew that he had reached the core part of the icefield. Therefore, the more he proceeded forward, the more calm he became.

After flying for quite some time, Zhao Hai found out that there were no more Diamond Apes in front of him, so he stopped again. He immediately narrowed the monitor to see that there was a neat square formation in front of him, composed of frozen Diamond Apes. And in front of the square stands one Diamond Ape.

Zhao Hai immediately focused the monitor on this man. He was very tall for a Diamond Ape, towering at about 3 meters. The ape that stood behind him was much more astonishing at a height of 15 meters. He was holding a spear in his hand, but it wasn't pulled back. The iron spear was stabbed at something in the front.

Zhao Hai quickly discovered that the spear that was stabbed was quite unique. Zhao Hai reckoned that the Diamond Ape that wielded it must have been the Patriarch of the Diamond Ape tribe.

But when Zhao Hai saw what was being stabbed, his eyes couldn't help but narrow. It was not an animal, nor was it an ice beasts, it was actually a small pool!

A small pool! Not a big pool. It's diameter was about five meters, and seemed to be as deep as it was wide. The water in the pool was dark blue, much bluer than the sky. It's color seems like it could penetrate into a person's soul.

Zhao Hai looked at the pool in a daze. Suddenly, the water in the pool started shaking, and Zhao Hai also noticed that the Beast God's Spear was similarly shaking. Following that, an ice beast suddenly jumped out of the pool. The ice beast seemed to be afraid of the Beast God's Spear. When it saw the spear, it immediately ran away.

Zhao Hai stared at all of it as it happened. Until now, he was still

unsure of the spear, but now he was certain that it was the Beast God's Spear. It was because inside this place, except for the ice beasts as well as the pool, everything was frozen. Only the spear was not frozen in ice.

Zhao Hai understood that the pool must have been the true core of the entire Northern Icefield, and that the Beast God's Spear has been suppressing it. But in fact, it didn't manage to fully seal it, which explains the appearance of the ice beasts. The ice beasts didn't know what to do, so they decided to just attack Tess and the others.

Zhao Hai saw it as a very interesting turn of events. The Patriarch of the Diamond Ape tribe suppressed the pool with the Beast God's Spear which in turn causing it to spawn the ice beasts that were attacking the Diamond Ape tribe.

Zhao Hai let out a long breath as he smiled faintly. Then his figure moved as his actual body appeared inside the ice pullar.

Zhao Hai was now standing right by the Diamond Apes and its Patriarch. He calmly looked at the spear that the Diamond Ape Patriarch was holding. It looked just like any ordinary spear, black, and had a ribbon wrapped around its shaft. Its tip was as red as blood.

Then Zhao Hai felt the intense fighting intent of the spear, it was very frightening as it caused Zhao Hai to take deep breaths. Just as he was about to deal with the pool, he suddenly noticed the ice walls around him started to move.

Zhao Hai thought that it was just an ice beast. But when he looked at it, he suddenly froze. This wasn't an ice beast, it was a person!

No, it wasn't exactly like a person, but an ice person, someone made entirely out of ice. These ice people were all in the forms of women. They wore court lady dresses and had fluttering dark blue belts. They looked like dancers with their attire and belt, it was

very beautiful.

The faces of these ice people were beautiful as well, but it didn't show any expression. Their hairs were fashioned into an attractive swirl, something Zhao Hai had not seen before, but was still very beautiful.

From what Zhao Hai can see, there were 12 women who appeared on the ice wall. All of their appearances were the same. Zhao Hai thought that they looked like the beautiful ancient ladies on television back on Earth. Their clothes and their expressions were very pure.

At this time, the hands of the 12 women started to move towards Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai stared for a moment before his figure moved and disappeared from his location. Then he appeared right next to an ice man as he opened a spatial rift and absorbed her into the Space.

When the iceman entered the Space, the Space immediately issued a prompt, "An Ice Fairy has been detected, detected to be hostile to the Space. Changing its internal programming. Change completed."

When Zhao Hai heard the prompt, he immediately understood. This ice people were actually just like the stone golems. They can technically be called ice golems, but they weren't as big.

Zhao Hai became serious and before long, he had absorbed the 12 ice people into the Space. After absorbing the icemen, Zhao Hai looked around in order to see if there are any other danger. When he didn't discover anything else, he then went to the pool.

The water in the pool fiercely moved, but the Beast God's Spear kept stopping it completely.

Zhao Hai looked at this scene and didn't dare to be careless. He opened a spatial rift and then absorbed the entire violent pool into the Space. In a blink of an eye, the pool became completely empty.

When the pool entered the Space, a prompt was then heard, “Massive amounts of water element energy detected. The energy is very hostile to the Space. Changing its program, change completed.”

When the prompt finished, Zhao Hai’s body immediately flashed into the Space. Then he discovered that the Profound Ice pool that was already in the Space has become the pool in the ice pillar. Just as Zhao Hai had become curious, a bubble suddenly separated itself from the pool and then floated towards Zhao Hai. Then the bubble suddenly said, “This one has seen the Lord!”

Zhao Hai stared, he didn’t think that a bubble would be able to speak. At this time Cai’er arrived and said, “Young Master, I feel like this bubble is just the same as me.”

Zhao Hai looked at Cai’er, he knew that Cai’er was a spirit that was born from the seven-colored flower. Was this bubble also a spirit that was born from the pool?

Zhao Hai turned to the bubble and then said, “Don’t call me Lord, just call me Young Master. Are you the spirit of this pool?”

The bubble replied, “I am indeed, Young Master. I’m the spirit of this pool. If the Young Master doesn’t want to call me spirit, I’m also called the Myriad Water.”

Zhao Hai affirmed his speculation, then he referred to the 12 iceman and said, “Are these 12 icemen your creations?”

The bubble replied, “Yes, Young Master. I don’t know when I appeared here, but when I awoke, I was already in that place. Then some people came and suppressed me. I couldn’t do anything and struggled. I was afraid and thought that those things might help. So I made those 12 people.”

Zhao Hai knew that the people that the bubble was referring to was the Beastmen. But he felt strange. The bubble didn’t know about the Beastmen, but yet he was able to make ice beasts. This

was a bit too weird, so Zhao Hai immediately asked, “So you made those ice people? And what about those ice beasts?”

Bubble replied, “I also don’t know. In any case, when I awoke, the figures of those ice people and ice beasts were already inside my mind. So I chose to make them. Young Master, don’t you think that those ice people are very beautiful?”

Zhao Hai stared, then his head felt very dizzy. Was this really the spirit of the Myriad Water? Why does it sound like a wretched old man? The words of bubble completely destroyed the image that Zhao Hai had of him in his mind.

Zhao Hai couldn’t help but shake his head as he asked once more, “So you really don’t know anything? Where you come from? Then how did you know that you are the spirit of the Myriad Water?”

The bubble replied, “I just knew that I am the spirit of the Myriad Water just as I woke up. That, and the images of the ice beasts and the ice people.”

Zhao Hai went silent, he didn’t know how to proceed. This fellow does seem to have severe amnesia. He waved his hand and then said, “These ice men, can you receive them?”

The bubble nodded and then said, “Naturally. After all, these things are made by me.” Then the 12 ice fairies turned into blue waters and then flowed into the pool, completely vanishing from sight.

Zhao Hai then turned his head to the bubble and said, “Starting today, you are called Bubble. Come with me, we’ll be heading out.” Then Zhao Hai took Bubble along with him out of the Space.

When Bubble disappeared, the Beast God’s Spear seemed to look back to normal, Its intense fighting aura had disappeared, it had returned to its base state.

Then with an intention, Zhao Hai received the Beast God’s Spear along with the Diamond Ape Patriarch and his giant ape. At this

moment, a prompt was heard from the Space, “Item with weak spirit detected, strengthening the item’s spirit. Updating it’s program, update complete.”

Zhao Hai looked at the spear and knew that it indeed had an Artifact Spirit. This was because the prompt that was just heard was the same as when Iron Hammer was sent to the Space. Zhao Hai was now thinking about what kind of Artifact Spirit this Beastman Divine Artifact had.

Chapter 604 – Bloody War

A group of blood suddenly flowed out of the Beast God's Spear and slowly formed into a large drop. This drop had a huge stench of blood. Then the drop wobbled as it reshaped itself into something like person's figure that was as tall as someone's arm. The figure slowly changed before it grew an ape head, four arms, and two feet.

The head of this ape looks like the Diamond Ape tribe, but Zhao Hai hasn't seen a race with four arms before. The figure wore full body armor while each of its four arms held something, a shield, a spear, a blade, and a morningstar. The belt on its waist had the head of a fierce tiger.

Before long, the Artifact Spirit had finished forming itself.

Zhao Hai was somewhat surprised at this Artifact Spirit. He had seen Artifact Spirits before like Mu'er and Iron Hammer. But Mu'er looked like a child, one which didn't look like a threat. Iron Hammer looked just like a proper Dwarf. On the other hand, this Artifact Spirit looked like someone born for slaughter. His body was filled with the smell of blood, one that only an experienced War General would have.

A Wargod, this was the first word that came into Zhao Hai's mind after seeing this Artifact Spirit. And extremely aggressive Wargod, one that lived of for blood and battle.

While Zhao Hai was surprised at the Artifact Spirit, the Spirit turned to look at Zhao Hai as it gave salute with its four arms and said, "Bloody War has seen the Master."

"Bloody War!" Zhao Hai repeated the two words in a low tone. This name might sound careless, but Zhao Hai had an idea of the implications of this name. This was because from the ancient times to the present, the actions of the Beastmen had always been in line of these two words. Bloody War.

Beastmen wouldn't flinch in front of adversity. As long as they were issued an order, they would immediately execute it. Bloody War, fight to the last person, nobody was allowed to retreat. This was the meaning of these two words.

Zhao Hai recovered and looked at Bloody War and said, "Just call me Young Master. Bloody War, Iron Hammer already told me about the matters in the Ark Continent. Do you have anything to add to it?"

Bloody War shook his head and said, "I don't. Young Master, Iron Hammer and me descended from the Divine Realm at the same time. The experiences that we had are similar as well. What Iron Hammer knew was also what I knew."

Zhao Hai nodded and then said, "Alright, then that's that. I'll go hand you over to the Beastmen. Do your best to protect them, understood?"

Bloody War immediately replied, "I shall, Young Master!" Zhao Hai nodded, but when he was about to exit, Bloody War said, "Young Master, please help this Diamond Ape."

Zhao Hai gawked, then he turned to look at the frozen Diamond Ape Patriarch. He was confused as he looked at Bloody War and said, "They're already dead, how can I help him? Moreover, their bodies have been petrified, my Dark Magic is useless."

Bloody War shook his head, "No, no, Young Master. They are indeed dead, but their bodies are not petrified. You can use Dark Magic in order to turn them into undead. The Patriarch of the Diamond Apes has a very special talent called War Flag. This ability acts just like a War Flag on the battlefield. Every single soldier under his command would get improved, increasing the combat effectiveness of his army. That year, he relied on this ability to take his expedition deep into the Northern Icefield."

Zhao Hai was surprised, this was the first time that he heard of such an ability. But this was indeed something great. If he had

these Diamond Apes and turned them into undead, their fighting strength would certainly be formidable.

Zhao Hai nodded as he had a black fog appear and penetrate into the bodies of the Diamond Ape Patriarch and his giant ape partner.

The black gas permeated into their bodies very quickly, Zhao Hai also felt a connection to the two. But at this time, the corpses still remained unmoved.

Zhao Hai stared, the Space had already transformed them into undead, 9th rank undead. How could these 9th ranks still get stuck in ice? Is this a joke?

Zhao Hai face suddenly changed as he said, "Bubble, come over here, what's wrong with them?"

Bubbles appeared in front of Zhao Hai and looked at the Diamond Ape Patriarch as well as the giant ape. Then he turned to Zhao Hai and said, "Young Master, they've been frozen in Myriad Ice. This ice is frighteningly cold, one would be frozen into almost indestructible solid. Anything frozen by Myriad Water would find it near impossible to recover."

Zhao Hai stared, then he asked, "Can you melt this ice?"

Bubbles seemed to look strangely at Zhao hai, "Young Master, this ice is essentially me, so I can definitely control it. If Young Master wanted to take the ice away, you can already do so anytime. You've gained the same ability as me."

When Zhao Hai heard Bubble, he immediately tried to melt the ice with his mind. The ice surrounding the Diamond Ape Patriarch and the giant ape immediately became water and flowed into the pool.

When Zhao Hai saw this happen, he couldn't help but feel relief. Then he looked at Bubble and then turned his hand before a red crystal appeared. He held the crystal in front of bubble and said, "Bubble, in the place that you've stayed, were there things that are

like this?”

Bubble looked at the crystal and then nodded and said, “There’s plenty, but they are colored white, some of its energy also came from me.”

Zhao Hai became happy, the myriad ice and the red crystals were very good things. Zhao Hai turned his head to Bubble and said, “Is the entire Icefield really covered in myriad ice? Are there any special things inside?”

Bubble shook his head and said, “Young Master, those are just ice that were there for thousands of years. Only those infused with my energy can be said to be real myriad ice. The ice pillars as well as the ice in a radius around it can be considered to be myriad ice. At the same time, the snow on a certain radius around me has also been infused by my energy. I named them myriad snow. Although they aren’t as good as the myriad ice, they can still prove very useful.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then his body flashed as he went outside, Bubble was also right beside him. Then Zhao Hai said, “Take the snow and the ice away. Then we’ll find that white stones that you said and bring them to the Space.

Bubble complied as he started to rotate. And along with his rotation, all of the ice in the surroundings started to change into water as it slowly got absorbed into his body. Before long, the giant ice pillar as well as the surrounding ice had returned to Bubbles’ body. At the same time, the snow all around had also started to get absorbed by Bubble. When everything stopped, what was left was a giant pit. The giant pit originally contained the myriad ice. Also, there were no more snow present on a radius outside the pit.

Zhao Hai turned his head to Bubble and then saw that there were no changes to its size. Zhao Hai looked confused at Bubble as he asked, “You just absorbed a lot, why haven’t you grown up?”

Bubbles looked at Zhao Hai’s eyes as if he was confused at Zhao

Hai's question, "Young Master, I am an origin of water. Even if you load my body with all of the water in this world, I still won't get big. Actually, after these things enter my body, they just exist in a much smaller form. If Young Master doesn't believe it, you can see it for yourself." Then Bubble came closer to Zhao Hai's eyes.

Zhao Hai looked into Bubbles' body. Bubble wasn't big, he was only the size of a football. He looked dark blue but he was still quite transparent. When Zhao Hai looked carefully inside Bubble, he can faintly see some very small bubbles. In one of the bubbles, Zhao Hai can see the ice pillar, there were also a lot of ice inside as well as the snow. The bubbles were so small that if Bubble hadn't informed Zhao Hai, he couldn't even see these things.

Zhao Hai became shocked, he didn't expect this. He looked at Bubble and said, "Can you store anything in your body?"

Bubble shook its head and said, "No, I can only store things that are related to my nature, like water, ice, snow, fog, and so on."

Zhao Hai nodded, he also wasn't disappointed. His Space's Warehouse was very big and was able to store all kinds of things. So there was no need for Bubble to have the ability to do the same.

Zhao Hai then turned to Bubble and said, "What if I want to use those things? Do I still need you to get them?"

Bubble nodded, "Right, they're in my body. If Young Master wants them, you'll have to ask me for permission."

Zhao Hai's face seemed to turn black, he looked at Bubble and then said, "After going back to the Space, go give those things to Cai'er. Have her store it to the Warehouse. Then go back to the pool and don't come out if I don't call you."

Bubble snorted, but Zhao Hai still looked at the Icefield and said, "Are there any other good things here?"

Bubbles nodded and said, "There is. If you walk towards the north, you would see a ball of wind. Because of that ball of wind,

my life in the icefield has become miserable. Every single year, it blows air towards me, it's very annoying."

When Zhao Hai heard Bubble, his eyes couldn't help but shine. This ball of wind might actually be another good thing.

Chapter 605 – Wind Bead

Although he knew that the wind ball that Bubble just told him about was a good thing, Zhao Hai didn't immediately go out and get it. He calmed his emotions as he started to look at the white crystals that Bubble described.

The white crystals weren't hard to find, there were 12 lodes on the previous mounds that Bubble just hollowed out. Zhao Hai didn't think that those 12 lodes would be on the 12 mounds around the ice pillar. It seems like these lodes did have a big relationship with Bubble.

After he thought about it, Zhao Hai couldn't help but feel happy. He understood that as long as he has Bubble, he would have a lot of crystals to use. This was really fantastic.

Although he was pondering about these, Zhao Hai's movement didn't slow down. He quickly received the white crystals into the Space to see what properties they had.

When the crystal was absorbed into the Space, a prompt was heard, "Item that contained cold energy has been detected. Contains stable cold energy equivalent to 100 thousand watts. The crystal can be charged after it has been used up."

Zhao Hai couldn't help but feel relieved after hearing this. But he also discovered the difference between this white crystal and the red one. The white crystal contained cold energy while the red crystal contained hot energy.

Zhao Hai thought about it and decided to appropriately name the red one Fire Crystal and the white one Ice Crystal. This was because the red crystal was found in a volcano while the white crystal was grown in the Icefield.

Zhao Hai quickly received the 12 mineral lodes. The amount of white crystal that Zhao Hai just got wasn't as small as the red

crystals. After all, the red crystals were only sourced by an incomplete mother ore while the white crystals had 12 complete ones.

From what Zhao Hai can count, he had collected 500 thousand ice crystals altogether. This wasn't a small number. One must know that the quality of these white crystals are vastly better than the fire crystals.

After receiving the crystals, Zhao Hai then returned to the Space. Laura and the others were currently gathering around a spinning Bubble. Bubble looked very comfortable; he was blue, he was soft to hold and wasn't cold at all.

However, when Zhao Hai saw Laura and the others gathering before Bubble, looking like they were enjoying themselves, he couldn't help but feel irritated. For such a perverted Bubble to get this much attention was very unreasonable.

Zhao Hai grabbed Bubble who was held by Laura, he stretched the blue ball out before asking, "Bubble, where did you say that wind ball was again?"

Although Bubble was stretched out by Zhao Hai many times, he seemed to not care at all. So when Zhao Hai asked him, he immediately replied, "When Young Master heads to the north, you would be able to see it for yourself."

Zhao Hai nodded, he returned Bubble to Laura's arms before he immediately had the staff fly straight to the North. He wanted to see what this wind ball actually was.

Zhao Hai didn't explore around this time, he didn't slow down as he headed in a completely straight line heading north. Because of this, the staff's speed was extremely quick.

In the evening, Zhao Hai had found out that the wind has gotten much stronger. Zhao Hai immediately took Bubble out of the Space and went inside the staff.

Zhao Hai looked outside and said, “Bubble, is it this place?”

Bubble turned and circled before saying, “Yes, Young Master. We’ll arrive there soon.”

Then Zhao Hai turned to Bubble and said, “Bubble, how did you know that there is a wind ball here? And what is that wind ball?”

Bubble replied, “Young Master, I’ve been here for a long time, even before the Beastmen started exploring the area. At that time, I had the ice beasts explore the entire iceland and saw that ball of wind. That ball of wind is just like me, it is the origin of myriad wind. But it probably hasn’t reached the same level as me. When I found it, it still hasn’t awakened.”

Zhao Hai was shocked, he didn’t think that the ball of wind would actually be like Bubble. So in other words, the ball of wind might have its own spirit as well?

Zhao Hai was now much more careful, he personally controlled the Blood Ghost Staff. At the same time he asked, “Bubble, this isn’t the wrong direction, right?”

Bubble shook its head and said, “It shouldn’t be. Don’t worry, Young Master. Compared to the past, my present ability is much better. As long as there is water element in the area, I would be able to monitor it. The place should not be far away from here.”

Hearing Bubble’s words, Zhao Hai couldn’t help but get startled. He looked at Bubble and said, “So you’re saying that you can monitor things through water?”

Bubble’s round body shook up and down, as if nodding, then said, “Young Master, I am the source of myriad water. As long as it has something to do with water, it will submit to my will.”

Zhao Hai looked at this small bubble, he didn’t think that this little thing would have such an ability. It seems like he shouldn’t look down on it.

At this time, Bubble suddenly said, “Young Master, we’ve

arrived.” Zhao Hai immediately turned his head and looked out only to see a small whirlwind in front of him that was constantly turning around. This whirlwind seem to be supporting a small green bead. This bead was at the very least at the size of a walnut. It couldn’t be called a ball at all.

Zhao Hai looked at the green bead and said, “Is this the ball of wind that you said? Can it really control the wind? Why does it look so underwhelming?”

Bubble replied, “Young Master, this ball might seem to be behaved, but if it gets angry, it’s very terrifying.”

Zhao Hai looked at the green bead, he really couldn’t imagine how this bead could be so frightening. But to be sure, Zhao Hai and Bubble returned to the Space. Laura and the others were already inside the Space, looking at the situation through the monitor.

When the group saw Zhao Hai came in, Laura immediately ran over and hugged Bubble. Then she turned to Zhao Hai and said, “Brother Hai, would you really take that thing? Can it really control the wind?”

Zhao Hai looked at the snuggled Bubble in Laura’s bosom and couldn’t help but get irritated, he poked Bubble repeatedly before Laura swept his hand away while staring at him with fierce eyes.

Zhao Hai couldn’t help but smile bitterly and said, “Perhaps. In any case, it was what Bubble said so I don’t really know. I’ll go try and capture it.” Then Zhao Hai sat on the sofa and gave an order to the staff.

The halted Blood Ghost Staff immediately flew towards the bead while Zhao Hai and the others looked at it through the screen. Zhao Hai wanted to see how the bead would react.

Sensing that the staff was about to hit it, the bead immediately acted like a hedgehog. It spun quickly and as it turned it collected more and more wind. Before long the wind had gotten bigger that

it had turned into a tornado. The ice below couldn't handle the strong winds and got dug up, causing a pit to form on the ground.

The Blood Ghost Staff was actually affected by the wind, making it unable to go any further. Zhao Hai was shocked before he took the staff back to the Space. Laura and the others couldn't help but be surprised at the small bead. They didn't think that it would be this powerful.

After some time, the wind stopped as the tornado became small. Then it seemed to rock back and forth as if it was looking for something.

Zhao Hai cannot help but wipe away his sweat. This little thing was really a trickster. Zhao Hai didn't become polite, with an intention, a spatial crack suddenly appeared right beside the bead. Then a big hand stretched out from the Space and pulled the bead inside.

When the bead entered the Space, a prompt was then issued, "Wind Spirit has been detected. Lifeform is hostile to the Space. Suppressing the lifeform. Lifeform suppressed."

Then Zhao Hai had the bead appear inside the room. The bead still looked green and was somewhat transparent. However, this bead was still spinning since one could see a faint tornado appearing around it.

Zhao Hai looked at the bead and said, "Can you speak?"

A faint infantile voice sounded out, "I've seen the Master, I can speak."

Upon hearing the voice, Zhao Hai nodded and then said, "Good, from now on, you shall be called Breeze. Bubble, Breeze, remember, you must always listen to Cai'er's words. Cai'er, look after these two children."

The young lady Cai'er smiled tenderly and said, "Young Master, rest assured, I will certainly take care of them." Zhao Hai nodded,

he knew that although Cai'er is very strange, she also knew that Zhao Hai didn't like to joke, so she appeared quite proper. But still, Zhao Hai couldn't help but recall the time when Cai'er was riding on the back of Zhao Wen. She really looked childish back then.

Laura and the others didn't oppose to Zhao Hai's decision. Although Laura liked Bubble very much, she also had a lot of matters to attend to. It would be impossible for her to accompany Bubble daily. Making Cai'er play with Bubble was also a good idea.

In fact, Laura and the others had always regarded Mu'er and Cai'er as children. Although their abilities were formidable, Laura couldn't help but treat them as kids because of their image. When there was nothing to do in the Space, they would often play with Mu'er and Cai'er. That was one of their happy times.

Zhao Hai also likes to accompany Cai'er and play around for a while. To be honest, Zhao Hai's feeling towards the Space was bigger than Laura and the others. This was because the Space represented Zhao Hai's only connection to Earth.

Since arriving at the Ark Continent, Zhao Hai has found himself to be more and more like a native. But he doesn't want to be like this, but there was no other way. If he wanted to survive, then he would have to adapt. His only escape is the time where he was inside the Space where he always felt like he was back on Earth, playing his farm simulation games. He would feel just like his ordinary self back on Earth, and that all of this was just a dream.

Chapter 606 – Fighting Intent

However, Zhao Hai also didn't want to return to Earth. If he returned, he would just go back to being an ordinary nerd. In here, he was Zhao Hai Buda of the Buda Clan. He also had several wives that loved him. His situation here was leagues better than back on Earth.

The reason why he thought of Earth was because he didn't want to forget where he came from. In the universe, there is a planet called earth, of which there was a country called China. There, people with yellow skin and dark eyes were present, they were his true people.

Although Zhao Hai was now the Buda Clan's Patriarch, had gotten married, and also had his own life in the Ark Continent, his Chinese heart was still burning inside him. He always thought of himself as Chinese, a descendant of dragons. To him, being married and getting a career in the Ark Continent was just like how someone was living and working abroad and also had gotten married.

The only thing different in his situation was that people who worked overseas can just return to their homeland while Zhao Hai cannot.

Now that the matters in the Northern Icefield had been taken care of, Zhao Hai finally relax. Then he immediately returned to the volcano in order to fulfill his promise to Tess. He must bring the Beast God's Spear to this place so that the Diamond Apes can do a ceremony.

Zhao Hai took Bloody War to the Space and then to the volcano. The moment Zhao Hai came out, Bloody War also materialized. He looked at the direction of the volcano and said, "Young Master, what is this place? Why do I feel a strong Beastman fighting intent from here?"

Then Zhao Hai narrated to Bloody War about the matters of the Diamond Apes. For the entirety of the story, Bloody War was carefully listening to Zhao Hai. After Zhao Hai had finished, Bloody War took a deep breath before he said, “Good, good, worthy to be called the children of the Beast God. They did great!”

Then just as Bloody War’s voice fell, a red light suddenly erupted from the volcano as it pierced the heavens. Zhao Hai thought that the volcano had exploded but it didn’t look like it. Although the red light was from the crater, it didn’t have any degree of heat to it. Instead, the light held a cold killing intent, one that dared to fight the skies.

Fighting Intent! This should be the fighting intent that Bloody War had described! Zhao Hai felt the pressure from it and confirmed his thoughts. But he didn’t understand why he hadn’t felt it before. Instead, only after Bloody War said a few words did the fighting intent explode.

At this time, the red light from the crater slowly solidified and turned into a blood red spear that shot up to the sky. The spear was very huge, it was about a dozen feet high and about a meter thick. It looked extraordinary and imposing.

When the spear started to form, Bloody War immediately said, “Young Master, let me loose. This fighting intent would be good for me.” Zhao Hai immediately let go of Bloody War.

Just as Zhao Hai’s hands let go, Bloody War immediately flew towards the crater and penetrated the giant red spear. Then Zhao Hai saw that the giant spear had started to shrink as it integrated itself with Bloody War. After that, Bloody War flew back.

But now, Zhao Hai discovered that the originally black shaft of the spear already had a shade of red in it. Moreover, Bloody War’s imposing aura had been strengthened.

At this time, Bloody War materialized again, but this time, he was much bigger than before. Zhao Hai looked at Bloody War and

said, “What happened? That thing is useful to you? How did you absorb it?”

Bloody War shook his head and said, “Young Master, that fighting intent is a unique Beastman’s Blood Oath fighting intent. This thing has huge benefits to me. This fighting intent is only produced by those who underwent a Blood Oath and is formed through generations. One couldn’t see this kind of thing during normal times. Since I am a weapon, I always feel it in battlefields, it also causes me to get stronger and stronger. Young Master doesn’t need to worry about me. I’ve already reached the same state as my peak.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Good. I’ll go let you see the current Patriarch of the Diamond Apes. They badly wanted to see you. At the same time, tell them that you had me turn their previous Patriarch into an Undead. I don’t want them to misunderstand me.”

Bloody War nodded then said, “Young Master, rest assured, Bloody War understands.” Zhao Hai nodded, then he brought Bloody War to the Space and then to Iron Mountain Fort.

The lives of Tess and the others had been blissful these past few days. Beastmen were inherently good at herding. So although they hadn’t herded in 5000 years, they quickly learned it with the help of the Giant Horned Bulls. Moreover, their living conditions have improved by tenfold. Normally, they would need the help of their giant apes in order to go anywhere, but now they didn’t need to. This made Tess and the others unusually happy.

However, Tess still couldn’t help but worry about the Northern Icefield. Zhao Hai had already been there for many days but there seems to be no information.

He was afraid that Zhao Hai had suffered an accident, or that Zhao Hai couldn’t find the Beast God’s Spear. Because of this, Tess has been losing sleep for the past few days. One could even see him

visibly getting skinnier. Compared to the other Diamond Apes, his appearance looked very exhausted.

Today, Tess was herding some argali. Then suddenly, a person appeared in front of him. Tess was initially startled, but then he thought that the only person who can appear in his vicinity without alerting his beast partner was Zhao Hai.

Tess turned to look at Zhao Hai and saw that the other party was smiling while holding a spear in his hand. This spear was obviously not something that was used by Humans. Its shaft was very thick and it was very long. It was evident that this spear can only be used by Beastmen.

Tess looked at the spear in Zhao Hai's hand and couldn't help but recall the records of their tribe. There, a spear with a specific length and thickness was carefully drawn. It was impossible for Tess to not recognize that the spear in Zhao Hai's hand was indeed the Beast God's Spear.

Tess took slow steps towards Zhao Hai before he knelt and extended both of his shivering hands in order to receive the spear in Zhao Hai's hand. Tears were constantly flowing out of his eyes.

Zhao Hai placed the spear on Tess's hands as Tess inspected the spear. Before long, Tess gave a loud howl as he wept, alarming the other Diamond Apes. The others immediately went to see what was going on. When they saw the Beast God's spear on Tess' hands, they gawked before they all knelt to the ground and cried non stop.

The Diamond Apes entered the Northern Icefield in order to retrieve the Beast God's Spear. They were educated by their elders about their mission from their younger years. Therefore, they immediately recognized the spear at first glance.

Adding Tess' reaction, they didn't doubt it at all. 5000 years, their 5000-year obsession had finally been solved!

Zhao Hai stood silently at the side. He can somewhat understand

Tess' emotion. 5000 years, how long was that? In those 5000 years, how much have they suffered, how many did they lose? A tribe of nearly 800 thousand has been reduced to 100 thousand. Who can understand such bitterness.

After some time, Tess started to calm down. Zhao Hai then turned to Tess and said, "Patriarch Tess, I've also cured the Beast God's Spear's Artifact Spirit. He can come out and tell you a few words. I won't be listening to your conversations. I'll come back here after a minute."

Tess nodded, then Zhao Hai returned to Iron Mountain Fort's living room. Seeing Zhao Hai come back, Green immediately asked, "Young Master, did you manage to retrieve the Beast God's Spear?"

Zhao Hai nodded, then he smiled and said, "I did, it's currently in Tess' hand. Rest assured, everything is fine. After Tess and the others do their ritual, I'll immediately head to the Beastman Prairie and hand it over to the Beast King. After that, I'll be a Foreign Prince of the Beastmen, hehe."

Green laughed, "Beastman Race's Foreign Prince, Dwarf Race's Foreign Elder, the Rosen Empire's son-in-law. Hahaha. Our Buda Clan hadn't seen this much status since its beginning. Fantastic!"

Zhao Hai chuckled as well before saying, "After taking care of the matters in the Prairie, I'll go and return to see the Dwarves. I want to meet Patriarch Billy and see if he had any communication with the Elves. I want to go visit the Elves. Once we unite, only then can we resist the Divine Realm."

Green retracted his smiling expression as he turned serious and said, "Indeed. Young Master, I have thought that since we cannot just simply sell the grain that we had grown in the Wasteland, it would be better for it to be stored in the Space in preparation for the war. After all, during battles, food is one thing that must never run out."

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “Grandpa Green, you don’t need to worry about that. The Space already has ten backgrounds. Those backgrounds are still not used. If we plant some crops there, then we would certainly have a lot.”

Green tapped his head and said, “Ah, I forgot about those. Alright, there’s no need to save. But Young Master, how would we know the time of the Divine Race’s attack?”

Zhao Hai smiled bitterly and said, “We won’t. But as long as we prepare, we’re fine. But even if they don’t begin, I will still make a move. I don’t want to be too passive.”

Green stared, then he looked at Zhao Hai with bright eyes as he said, “Alright, good. It’s just as Young Master says, being too defensive is no good. Our Buda Clan had always been known for our Wild Dragon Flag. Attack has always been our forte. Offense is always good.”

Green was now very confident in Zhao Hai. One must know that the Buda Clan not only had the God ranked Cai’er, they also had more than 1 million 9th ranks. Green believed that such strength can, at the very least, contend with the Divine Race.

Zhao Hai didn’t know about Green’s thoughts, but he knew that he wasn’t the type of person that waits to be beaten. He knew that the other party wanted to deal with him. But they would only begin after they had made the proper preparations, explaining why they still haven’t begun.

After he heard Green, Zhao Hai showed a faint smile and said, “After so many years of development, I don’t know what the Divine Race has right now. And there are still the Demons on the sidelines. The future of the Ark Continent wouldn’t be very good. Unfortunately, not many people knew about this. Forget it, let’s stop talking about this. Grandpa Green, no need to welcome me back. I’ll be going to Tess and see if they wanted to return to the Northern Icefield in order to do a ceremony. I’ll be leaving this

place to you once again. By the way, how are Tess and the others doing? Have they become familiar with the place?”

Green smiled and said, “They have become familiar with the customs here. At this point, they basically didn’t need the guidance of the Giant Horned Bulls. Young Master can rest assured.”

Zhao Hai nodded, “That’s good. Then I’ll take my leave.” He said as his body flashed and vanished. Green looked at where Zhao Hai vanished and couldn’t help but mutter, “Old Master, have you ever thought that the Buda Clan would have such a day? The Young Master had grown up, he will certainly be a pride of the Buda Clan!”

This was Green’s dream, and it had been completely realized. Green knew more than Zhao Hai. At this point, everybody in the continent was aware of the Buda Clan’s strength. Green knew that even if the Buda Clan revealed the current state of the Black Wasteland, nobody would still dare to make a move on them.

Adding on to the fact that Zhao Hai would become the Beastman’s Foreign Prince, and was also a Foreign Elder of the Dwarves, his status was something that no country would dare to offend. One could even consider the current strength of the Buda Clan to be like a calamity.

Zhao Hai was unaware of Green’s thoughts. He just followed his own plan and went forward step by step. He wouldn’t care about any other things.

When Zhao Hai reappeared in front of Tess, Bloody War had already returned to the spear. After seeing Zhao Hai appear, Tess and the others immediately knelt in front of him.

Upon seeing them, Zhao Hai quickly said, “Patriarch Tess, please get up. I’m unable to receive a big ceremony like this.”

But Tess still kowtowed to Zhao Hai and said, “Patriarch, you are a huge benefactor to my Diamond Ape tribe. Not only did you take

us out of the Northern icefield, you also arranged a good place for us to live as well as some cattle and argali to keep. Most importantly, you have retrieved the Beast God's Spear for us. You're not only a benefactor to the Diamond Ape tribe, you are a benefactor to the entire Beastman Race. So please accept our gratitude." Then Tess knocked his head to the ground.

The other Diamond Apes also kowtowed simultaneously with Tess. This time, Zhao Hai didn't dare to stop them. After receiving their kowtow, he said, "Alright, all of you, get up. You're now people of the Buda Clan. You won't need to do such a thing in the future. Just remember, no matter what you do, always consider the Buda Clan in your hearts."

Tess and the others roared in one voice before they stood up. Zhao Hai then looked at Tess and said, "I can take you and the Beast God's Spear back to the volcano. Do you still want to do your ceremony?"

Tess shook his head and said, "There's no need, Patriarch. Sir Artifact Spirit told us that he had already received the sentiment of our ancestors. So there's no need to go back there anymore."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Alright, then I'll be delivering the Beast God's Spear back to the Prairie. You go continue on with your matters." Then he took the Beast God's Spear before vanishing in front of the group.

Chapter 607 – Excitement

These past few days, the Beast King has been paying close attention to news about the Northern Icefield. From the moment Zhao Hai entered the Icefield, two months had already passed by. But until now, no new information had arrived.

He had ordered the White Tigers, Polar Bears, and the Ice Hawks to have open ears towards the Icefield. As long as something happened, they must give action. They must support Zhao Hai at all costs.

Because of this, the Ice Hawk tribe had been doing constant rounds every day. As long as they discover a trace of Zhao Hai, they would immediately go and offer him aid.

But unfortunately for them, they didn't know that Zhao Hai had the Space. Because of this, their efforts had been in vain.

But one couldn't blame the Beast King for being so careful, being careless would have been a much worse offense. As the matter stands, the Beast God's Spear has apparently become very important. The Beast King had nothing else to do but be alert.

These past days, the Beast Kind didn't have any good sleep. Nearly two months had passed, and there wasn't any information about Zhao Hai. The Beast Kind was near to believing that Zhao Hai had failed.

While sitting in his office, the Beast King couldn't help but give a deep sigh. He felt pity for Zhao Hai since he knew the reason why Zhao Hai wanted to look for the Divine Artifact. The Beast King always believed Zhao Hai to be a very great person that could unite the entire continent, and he wasn't afraid of taking risks. The Beast King really hoped that Zhao Hai would succeed. But it seems like the chances had grown smaller and smaller.

But it was good that the business with the Buda Clan had

remained stable. The business still stayed the same, and for the Beastmen, this was a very good thing.

Although there was that, the Beast King still couldn't help but sigh. He was also worried about the entire Ark Continent. If Zhao Hai cannot find the Beast God's Spear, then they would definitely be in good danger. If Zhao Hai didn't come back in one month, then he can only task several 9th rank experts to explore the Icefield. Retrieving the Beast God's Spear was not only a must for the Beastmen, it was important for the entire Ark Continent as well.

At this time, the Beast King's guard suddenly walked in. With an excited face he gave his report to the Beast King, "Your Majesty, Mister Zhao Hai seeks an audience. He is outside!"

The Beast King gawked, for a while he was frozen as he stared at his guard. It took some time before he recovered, then he immediately said, "Invite him in quickly! No. I'll go personally greet him." Then he didn't delay in going out.

Before long, he arrived at the tent for reception. It was obvious that the people there didn't expect the Beast King to come personally, but they still immediately said, "We've seen His Majesty!"

The Beast King waved his hand and said, "Where's Mister Zhao Hai?"

A Tiger Beastman immediately replied, "Your Majesty, he's at the registration tent outside the palace." The Beast King didn't wait for him to finish before he dashed out of the palace.

Zhao Hai was currently sitting inside the registration tent while chatting with the Beastmen inside. The fact that he went to the Northern Icefield was a secret, there were only few Beastmen who knew about it. However, although the people in the tent were clueless, they were already familiar with Zhao Hai's status. They knew that seeking audience with the Beast King at any time can

only be done by people of revered status. Those kinds of people weren't someone they can afford to offend.

Additionally, these Beastmen were also very grateful to Zhao Hai. As long as one was a Beastman, it was inevitable that they would make milk wine. And because of Zhao Hai's business, their families were able to make good profit. At the same time, Zhao Hai's Magic Lily shop was very honest in doing business. Whenever they do business, the Beastmen would never feel that they were cheated. At this point, even if Zhao Hai didn't display his friendship flags, his name alone would gain respect from the other Beastmen.

The war had long been finished, so Human merchants had also started to come and do business. But after those people arrived, they had discovered that their business had shrunk. Even if they had traded with a tribe before, they still weren't the tribe's first choice. Instead, the Beastmen seem to first look to Magic Lily shop for business.

However, these Merchants can't do anything to the shop. They simply cannot offend Magic Lily shop. First, because it was backed by the powerful Buda Clan, and second, because the Beastmen would deal with anyone that dared to take action against the shop.

At the same moment, Zhao Hai's business alliance had also been organized. Now, the biggest business in the Prairie was Zhao Hai's alliance. If other people wanted to do business in the Prairie, then they would have to do their best to not offend the alliance.

Naturally, Zhao Hai won't provoke others on his own initiative. Zhao Hai knew that the Beastman Prairie was very big, it was impossible for them to swallow it's entire market. So as long as people play fairly, Zhao Hai would not make a move. After all, Zhao Hai was never afraid of competition.

At this time, sounds of footsteps can be heard outside the tent. Zhao Hai knew that it must be the Tiger beastman that he had sent to notify the Beast King. What made him feel strange was the fact

that there was one more set of footsteps that can be heard.

While Zhao Hai was thinking, the tent's curtain was suddenly opened as a person walked from outside. Zhao Hai looked at the person and couldn't help but stare, it was because it was the Beast King. Zhao Hai hastily got up and gave a bow, "I've seen His Majesty."

The Beast King excitedly walked forward and helped Zhao Hai up. He looked at Zhao Hai and was at a loss for words because of his excitement. Zhao Hai saw the Beast King's expression and immediately knew what he came here for. So Zhao Hai gave a gentle nod.

The Beast King's face exploded with even more excitement, he immediately pulled Zhao Hai's hand and said, "Mister, come with me immediately. Let's talk somewhere else." After that, regardless of the expressions of the other people present, Zhao Hai went with the Beast King to head towards the palace. After they were gone, the other people couldn't help but look at each other. They didn't expect Zhao Hai to have this big of a position inside the Beast King's heart. He could actually make the Beast King meet him personally.

The Beast King brought Zhao Hai to his office and had the guard protect the door. After that, the Beast King immediately said, "Mister, did you really retrieve the Beast God's Spear?"

Zhao Hai smiled faintly as the Beast God Spear appeared in his hand. Zhao Hai held the spear in both hands as he carefully handed it over to the Beast King.

The Beast King's hand couldn't help but shake upon receiving the spear. Tears went down uncontrollably out of his eyes. He held the Beast God's Spear gently and after a short while let out a long breath. His tears vanished as he respectfully placed the spear at an appropriate place and turned to Zhao Hai, "My deepest gratitude goes to Mister. Let me offer our gratitude in behalf of the entire

Beastman race for retrieving our Divine Artifact.”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “Your Majesty doesn’t need to be too polite. The Beast God’s Spear’s Artifact Spirit has also been restored to its original state. He can now materialize. If Your Majesty has any questions, you can just ask Sir Artifact Spirit.”

The Beast King gawked, then his two eyes turned to the Beast God’s Spear as he bowed and said, “I ask to see Sir Artifact Spirit.”

As soon as his voice ended, Bloody War immediately appeared on the spear’s shaft. He looked at Beast King and said, “You’re the current Beast King?”

When the Beast King saw Bloody War, he enthusiastically gave a bow and said, “Wei Jian has seen Sir Artifact Spirit. I am indeed the current Beast King.”

Bloody War nodded and then said, “Good, Mister Zhao Hai has already asked me to look after the Beastmen. He also asked me to confirm what the Dwarves have said. I want to tell you that everything is true. The Gods, the Divine Realm, everything. I have no other thing to say that you don’t already know.” Then his figure went back to the spear.

The Beast King gave another bow to the Beast God’s Spear. Then he turned to Zhao Hai and said, “Mister, thank you.”

Zhao Hai waved his hand and said, “Your Majesty is too polite. Sir Artifact Spirits restoration is also beneficial to the Human race. When I told him about the situation of the Beastmen and the Gods, i didn’t expect him to know about it. His words also coincided with the Dwarves’ Artifact Spirit.”

The Beast King nodded and then sighed, “It looks like mister’s speculations are real. It’s possible for the Radiant Church to be connected to the Divine Realm. But no matter what, we cannot let them off. Mister can rest assured, tomorrow, I shall announce your appointment as the Beastman Race’s Foreign Prince.”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “There’s no need to rush. What His Majesty needs to do now is to prepare the Beastman race. I shall head back to the Dwarves as soon as possible. I want to see if Patriarch Billy was able to get into contact with the Elves. I don’t know about their current situation, so I wanted to take a look.”

The Beast King nodded, “Then I’ll to trouble mister with this matter. Mister can rest assured, your appointment as our Foreign Prince has already been discussed and approved by the major tribes in the Prairie. They agreed that as long as mister comes back then you would immediately receive your position. So there’s no need for a lengthy process, mister can just do his own matters immediately.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Alright, then I’ll have to thank his Majesty. Also, the Beastmen needs to save their strength at this time. In the past, the Beastmen lacked ironware, but now, with the Dwarves’ support, I think your development would be much more quicker. I also think that since the Beastmen needed to preserve their strength, wars should be minimized as much as possible. Otherwise, with the newly acquired ironware, the casualties would be too big.”

The Beast King agreed, “Mister can feel relieved. I would certainly act on it. However, the Prairie still needed grain, we’ll have to depend on mister on this matter.”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “Your Majesty doesn’t need to worry about this. Whether it be bamboo rice or bread fruit, I have tons of them. I can provide you with as many as you want at a fair price.”

The Beast King nodded, then he looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Alright. Also, I’ll need to ask mister to stay here for a meal. Otherwise, i would feel uneasy.”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “Then I would be polite. But I think it would be better if the retrieval of the Beast God’s Spear would be held in secrecy. This could become one of our ace against the

Divine Race. I'm sure that the Radiant Church is aware of the Divine Artifacts' disappearance. Let's have them continue that thought."

Chapter 608 – Cooperation

“Zhao Hai Buda has become a Foreign Prince of the Beastman Race!”

These words had rippled through every street and alley in the continent. Everyone knew about it, and there was no doubt that this was bomb. Everyone was stunned.

It had been less than a year after the war between the Beastmen and the Humans. But at this time, this news had suddenly spread out. A Human becoming a Foreign Prince of the Beastmen was something that was extremely startling.

Zhao Hai, who had gone quiet for two months, suddenly had his name mentioned in the continent once again. People started to discover the talent of this Patriarch of the Buda Clan. It was known that he had helped the Beastmen greatly, but nobody knew the specifics, even most Beastmen. Because of this, people started to make all kinds of speculation.

At this time, Zhao Hai was actually looking for Randolph in Dark Solder Fort. Zhao Hai told Randolph about the Divine Realm as well as what happened in the Northern Icefield. Compared to the Emperor, Zhao Hai was much more trusting towards Randolph. Zhao Hai believed that Randolph wouldn't tell this matter to anyone else.

After listening to Zhao Hai, Randolph's expression couldn't help but go heavy. And after Zhao Hai left, he immediately adjusted the future plans of the Calci Family. This made people confused about what just happened.

Then Zhao Hai went to the Crook Family, however, he didn't tell Jesse about the matters of the Divine Realm, as well as the Beast God's Spear. He just told Jesse to adjust the future strategy of the Crook Family.

Although Jesse didn't understand Zhao Hai's motive, he believed that their eternal ally wouldn't harm them. Therefore, the Crook Family started to make adjustments as well.

Naturally, these adjustments weren't obvious. Even if it were known to outsiders, they would only think that this was just an ordinary shift, nothing else.

And although Zhao Hai visited the Imperial Palace to see the Emperor, he didn't say anything to him. He just chatted with the Emperor for a while. And seeing that the Dead Minister didn't leave, Zhao Hai affirmed his stance of not telling the Emperor.

After handling his matters at the Rosen Empire, Zhao Hai then went to the Buddha Empire. The bulls that was sent to the Buddha Empire had already arrived some time ago and was given to the Buddha Emperor. This made the Emperor very satisfied with Zhao Hai.

The beasts that Zhao Hai sent over were special beasts of the Herculean Bulls, therefore, their levels weren't very low. For the Buddha Empire, this was a very crucial shipment.

Zhao Hai travelled by ship towards the Buddha Empire's Iron Knight City. Zhao Hai went to the capital in order to discuss to the Emperor about the horse magic beasts.

Wales had sent information to Zhao Hai about the horse magic beasts. The Horse Beastmen were also willing to trade some ironware for some 4th or 5th rank horse magic beasts with Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai came this time to discuss this matter with the Emperor.

Just as Zhao Hai entered the harbor, he had discovered the Ironwood was already there. But Ironwood wasn't wearing this full armor this time but instead just an ordinary warrior's clothes. However, his stance still remained imposing.

When Zhao Hai disembarked from his ship, Ironwood

immediately went to welcome him. Ironwood smiled and said, “Mister Zhao Hai, His Majesty is already waiting for you.”

Zhao Hai gave a bow and said, “I’ve made Vice Admiral Ironwood wait, I hope you’ll forgive me.”

Ironwood laughed and said, “Mister is always polite, that’s no good. Mister, come with me to see His Majesty.”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “Alright” Then they sat down at a carriage and rode towards the city. And since this carriage was of the Royal Palace, it was given the highest priority of way.

After they got in, Ironwood boiled a pot of tea and offered it to Zhao Hai before saying, “The bull magic beasts that mister had sent last time made His Majesty very satisfied. Ever since then, His Majesty had always wanted to express his gratitude to mister. Because of that, when His Majesty came to know that you would be arriving today, he immediately sent me over to welcome you.”

Zhao Hai immediately replied, “His Majesty is too polite. I’m only a Merchant, doing business is our great pleasure. Since I accepted his Majesty’s request, then it was natural that I would need to deliver on that promise.”

Ironwood laughed and said, “Mister is certainly not an ordinary merchant. To be honest, this one admires mister. I didn’t expect you to become a Beastman Race’s Foreign Prince. That’s too great of an achievement. In the past millenium, you are the first person to become a Foreign Prince of the Beastmen.”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “It’s really not that special. I just helped the Beastmen slightly. And because of his gratitude, the Beast King decided to confer me with this title. Actually, I don’t have any authority on the Beastmen.”

Ironwood smiled and said, “Mister doesn’t need to be so modest. I heard that to be a Foreign Prince of the Beastmen, it would more than their gratitude for them to agree. Mister must have helped

them a great deal.”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “I did. But to be honest, they can also do what I just did. It’s just that I’m much more suitable for the job. Hehe.”

When Ironwood heard Zhao Hai, he knew that there was no chance of him knowing what that thing was. So he didn’t ask any questions about it. He just smiled and said, “Since Mister has become the Beastman Race’s Foreign Prince, then wouldn’t it be much easier for you to acquire magic beasts?”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “It’s not that easy. Beastmen’s temperament is not quite good, even the Beast King cannot fully command them, much less a Foreign Prince. The Prairie has a lot of unique magic beasts, but I can only send some bull magic beasts at this time. However, I had recently been in contact with the Horse Beastmen in order to trade for their magic beasts hopefully.”

Ironwood’s eyes turned bright, horse type magic beasts were the most compatible types for being a mount. If they could have a lot of horse magical beasts, the Buddha Empire’s cavalry would be elevated to another level.

It didn’t take long before the carriage arrived at the Imperial Palace. Then they were welcomed to a small hall where the Buddha Emperor was already waiting for them.

After exchanging greetings with the Emperor and being bestowed a seat, the Buddha Emperor smiled and said, “Mister Zhao Hai, we’ve troubled you a lot. My Buddha Empire is very thankful for mister’s efforts.”

Zhao Hai quickly replied, “This one doesn’t dare. Your Majesty is too polite, I was just doing what I needed to do.”

The Emperor looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Although there weren’t a lot of beasts last time, it still gave me hope for our future cooperation with mister.”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “A long-term cooperation with Your Majesty would be good. It would give a lot of profits to me. Your Majesty, I came this time to tell you that I had managed to come in contact with the Horse tribe through the Cows. They also want to trade their horse magic beasts but on the condition that they would also be traded with ironware. What does Your Majesty think about this?”

When the Emperor heard Zhao Hai, he couldn't help but knit his brows. The ironware of the Buddha Empire were of very high quality, this was because the Buddha Empire's ironware were mostly made by the Dwarves. It wasn't a problem if the Buddha Empire were to sell them off, but the Buddha Emperor was afraid that the Beastmen would use the iron to attack the Human lands. When that time comes, he would be a criminal among the humans. Moreover, other nations would also seize that opportunity to deal with his Empire.

After thinking about it, the Emperor couldn't help but turn to Zhao Hai and asked, “Mister, you're a Foreign Prince of the Beastmen, can you tell me what the Beastmen intend to do with these ironware?”

When Zhao Hai heard this, he smiled and said, “I can understand your worries, Young Majesty. Although I don't have much authority in the Prairie, I am still privy to inside information. Is Your Majesty worried that the Beastmen would invade the humans? I can tell Your Majesty that you can rest assured. I got information that the Beast King would soon be issuing a Sealed Blade Command!”

The Buddha Emperor couldn't help but be shocked. He knew that the Beastman Race's Sealed Black Command was an order for the Beastmen to rest and build up strength. As long as the Beast King announces this command, no Beastman Race would resort to any violence, whether it be exterior or interior. Only when their survival was threatened would the Beastmen be allowed to attack.

In other words, as long as there is the Sealed Blade Command, wars between Beastmen and with Humans would not occur. Unless the Humans make the first move.

The Buddha Emperor couldn't help but looked straight into Zhao Hai's eyes and say, "Is mister telling the truth?"

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "I won't dare to deceive Your Majesty. Rest assured, I'm quite sure that the Beastmen would issue a Sealed Blade Command."

The Buddha Emperor nodded, he thought for a moment before saying, "If it is like this, then that would be good news. As soon as the Beast King announces the Sealed Blade Command, I would immediately agree to the Horse Tribe's business."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Rest assured, it would only take a few days before it'll get announced. Just give word and leave the rest to me."

The reason that Zhao Hai mentioned the Sealed Blade Command to the Buddha Emperor was to let the Buddha Emperor agree to his business with the Dwarves. Although he can get to the Dwarves without seeing the Emperor, he didn't want any conflict between the Dwarf Race and the Buddha Empire. The Dwarves needed to rest and build up strength as well in order to prepare for the Divine Race and the future war. If any conflict occurs with the Buddha Empire, then the Dwarves wouldn't have time to rest.

Zhao Hai believed that the Buddha Emperor would agree to his cooperation with the Dwarves. The reason why the Buddha Empire held tightly on to the Dwarf ironware was because the Empire didn't want the others to use it to attack their country. Zhao Hai reckoned that selling to the Beastmen who were several nations away from them would be just fine.

The Buddha Empire's agreement was also because of Zhao Hai's performance. The last time that Zhao Hai went to the Dwarves, he told the Buddha Emperor that he wouldn't sell the ironware to the

Rosen Empire. Sure enough, Zhao Hai didn't take the Dwarf Ironware to the Rosen Empire. This made the Buddha Emperor trust him more.

Chapter 609 – Sea Race Incident

After a few days, the Beastmen did indeed issue an order announcing the Prairie's Sealed Blade Command. But at this time, Zhao Hai had already arrived at Dwarf Iron Mountain.

Now that Zhao Hai was their Foreign Elder, Zhao Hai was immediately welcomed to Billy's village after arriving at the mountain.

Billy personally welcomed Zhao Hai to his house. And after they had sat down, Billy looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Little Hai, what happened? You suddenly became the Foreign Prince of the Beastmen, was that because you helped them restore their Artifact Spirit?"

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, "Not only that. The Beastmen had lost the Beast God's Spear in the Northern Icefield 5000 years ago. Although they had been seeking for it the whole time, nobody was able to succeed. This time, I went to the Northern Icefield to help them retrieve their Beast God's Spear. Because of that they gave me the position of Foreign Prince."

Billy immediately replied, "Lost? How come? That's their Divine Artifact."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and then told Billy about the matter with the Diamond Apes. Billy nodded and said, "So it was like that. No wonder the Diamond Apes were sent into exile. When I read from our records that the Diamond Apes were sent to exile, I immediately became confused. After all, they were the Royal Tribe. So it was actually because of the Beast God's Spear."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "The Beast God's Spear has now been returned to the Beastmen. Moreover, its artifact spirit has been restored. The Beastmen will also issue a Sealed Blade Command, having themselves rest and buildup their strength. The Dwarves should do it as well. My ironware business with the Dwarves has

already been approved by the Buddha Emperor since he wanted me to buy some magic beasts from the Beastmen. As the matter stands, he would not say a word about our business in the future. I just had to ask him since I want to maintain the good relationship between the Dwarves and the Buddha Empire. Peace is very important to your race at this time.”

Billy nodded and then said, “You really do think far into the future. Then what do we do next?”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “Not much really, as long as our current plans go through, everything should be fine. I’ve also started to stockpile some grain and daily necessities to act as strategic resources in the future.”

Billy nodded, “You can rest assured about the situation with the Dwarves. Although we had sold a lot of weapons outside, we still have very ample amount of stock still left. Moreover, these are our best products, much better quality than those we sell outside. So you don’t need to worry about weapons.”

Zhao Hai nodded, “Our transactions in the future would still continue, just keep storing the warehouse. Right, you told me that you’ll find some people who will settle on the Black Wasteland. Did you manage to find them?”

Billy nodded, “I’ve picked some. At this point, there are more than 100 Dwarves that are willing to settle down in Iron Mountain fort. So when do you plan on getting them there?”

Zhao Hai thought for a moment before he said, “Let them wait here first, I still need to prepare their place. But when they arrive there, they might not be working on metals the whole time. I might need them for something else.”

Billy smiled, “Don’t worry, I’ve already told them about that.”

Zhao Hai nodded, “Alright. Also, if you dig up any special things, please leave some of them for me. I’m quite curious about those

types of stuff.”

Billy couldn't help but laugh, “That's not a problem, rest assured.”

Then Zhao Hai said, “So how about the Elves? Did they send a reply?”

Billy smiled bitterly and said, “The matter with the Elves are doing just fine. Those guys are just slow. They said that they must observe first before sending proper word to us. So you don't need to worry about it.”

Zhao Hai nodded, he didn't know anything about the Elves. Since Billy said that there's no need to worry, then he would just wait. In any case, the Radiant Church wouldn't start their plan in a short time. However, it seems like Zhao Hai's plan to level up in the Elven Forest would have to be moved to a later time.”

Zhao Hai stayed for a day with the Dwarves before he returned to Golden Island using the Space. He wanted to know the current status of the island.

Zhao Hai already received word that the Hurricane Family's Kristen had already arrived at the island and had started to do business there. The business that they had was very simple and was similar to the Buda Clan, grain and other basic necessities. Zhao Hai had also heard that their business was doing good.

Zhao Hai has not gone to see Kristen because his attention was taken by another piece of news. Kun just told Zhao Hai that the business with the Sea Race has been very unstable. The Rock Shrimps had also been recently reducing their business.

This news was very important for Zhao Hai. His business with the Sea Race was one of his more important businesses. If this business were to be broken, then it would have a huge influence to the Buda Clan. Because of this, Zhao Hai decided to check the Marine Races personally.

But before that, Zhao Hai had Green empty out some land in the Black Wasteland so that the Dwarves can have their own place. Zhao Hai invited the Dwarves not only because he wanted them to work on his metals, but also to teach the slaves their craftsmanship.

Although the Space was also producing some iron ore, it wasn't a lot. On the other hand, among the slaves that Zhao Hai had bought, there were also several blacksmiths among them. However, the craftsmanship of these slaves weren't very good. Because of that Zhao Hai decided to invite some Dwarves to settle in the wasteland.

Green was already used to these kinds of things. But this time, Green had no idea of Dwarf customs. After all, he hadn't contacted any Dwarves in the past.

Zhao Hai also asked Billy and was told that there were no special requirements at all. So Zhao Hai can only ask Green to continue while he returned to Golden Island and rode a ship towards the reef where the Rock Shrimps were living in.

The route was already visited by Zhao Hai many times, so naturally he wouldn't get lost. Moreover, the pirates at the sea were already aware of the Buda Clan ships that would head towards the deep seas to get some marine products.

The influence to the Buda Clan in the sea was very strong that the pirates would just go around their ships, so the route was very safe.

Five days later, Zhao Hai had officially entered the deep seas. But he felt strange since there weren't any Sea people that came to see him. In the past, people would've already been alerted to his presence and were already meeting him.

Because of this, Zhao Hai opened his monitor and looked at the surroundings. Aside from small magic beasts, there was nothing in the vicinity, even Sea people.

Along with Zhao Hai were Laura and the others who were basking in the sun. They also felt strange so Laura said, “Brother Hai, wasn’t this the Sea Race’s domain? Where’s everybody? Did they go lazy?”

Zhao Hai shook his head, “Not necessarily. For them to reduce their business only meant that there was an internal problem going on. This situation proved this point.”

Laura knit her eyebrows and said, “Problems? What problems would sea people have?”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “Who knows? Only after meeting them would this matter be clarified.” Then suddenly a Rock Shrimp tribesman appeared on the monitor.

Zhao Hai turned the monitor off as the Rock Shrimp appeared near Zhao Hai’s ship. The Rock Shrimp looked at the emblem on the ship and decided to not attack. Then he asked, “Is this the Buda Clan’s ship?”

Zhao Hai went to the ship’s bow and gave bow to the Rock Shrimp in the water and said, “Buda Clan’s Patriarch Zhao Hai has seen Brother Rock Shrimp.”

As soon as the Rock Shrimp heard Zhao Hai’s title, he couldn’t help but stare. But he almost immediately replied, “So it is Patriarch Zhao Hai. This one has been very disrespectful. Can I ask why Patriarch Zhao Hai has come?”

Then Zhao Hai replied, “I have a matter to discuss with the Rock Shrimp Tribe Patriarch. Can I go and see him?”

The Rock Shrimp looked at Zhao Hai and awkwardly said, “I’ll be unfair to Patriarch Zhao Hai, but our Rock Shrimp Tribe has gotten into some serious matter. I’m afraid that the Patriarch wouldn’t be able to have the time to see you.”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “I’ll just ask brother to send word out for me. I really do have something to talk to the Patriarch.”

The Rock Shrimp couldn't help but feel awkward at Zhao Hai's answer. But he also knew that they couldn't offend the Buda Clan. Their Rock Shrimp Tribe was just a very small tribe. Without Zhao Hai, they would have huge problems with their yearly tribute.

After thinking for a moment, the Rock Shrimp gave a bow and said, "Then I'll go send word. I'll have to ask Patriarch Zhao Hai to wait for a moment." Then the Rock Shrimp dove back down into the sea and headed back to his tribe.

At the same time, Zhao Hai also had the undead lower the ship's anchor as he waited for the Rock Shrimp to come back. However, Zhao Hai had confirmed that there was indeed some issues that happened within the Sea Race.

Zhao Hai's original plan was to take care of the Elves first before he takes a look at the Sea Race. No matter what, the Sea Race also held a large population in this world. If the Gods did indeed want to rule this plane, then they certainly won't ignore the people of the Sea. Therefore, Zhao Hai also wanted to make an alliance with them.

Now that the matter with the Elves was pushed back, the Sea Race unexpectedly developed an incident. This was good for Zhao Hai since he can take care of this matter instead.

Zhao Hai didn't wait for a long time before the Rock Shrimp Patriarch appeared near the Haven. Then Zhao Hai gave a bow to the Rock Shrimp Patriarch before he said, "I've taken the liberty to disturb the Patriarch. I hope that you forgive me."

The Rock Shrimp Patriarch smiled faintly and said, "I didn't expect Patriarch Zhao Hai to come here personally. May I know Patriarch Zhao Hai's reason for the visit?" Although he was smiling, Zhao Hai can notice a subtle worry in the old Rock Shrimp's face. It seems like his people had encountered something big this time.

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "The reason I came to Patriarch

this time was to ask your help. I just want to have an audience with the Leader of the Sea Race.”

Upon hearing Zhao Hai, the old Rock Shrimp couldn't help but stare. When he recovered, he clarified Zhao Hai's words, “Patriarch, you mean that you want to meet with the Sea King?”

Only at this moment did Zhao Hai know that the Sea Race's Patriarch was called the Sea King. But nobody can blame him for this, contact between the Sea Race and the Humans was too few. Humans didn't even know the races in the sea. They were only collectively known as the Sea Race, and that they had a ruler.

Upon hearing that the ruler of the Sea Race was named Sea King, Zhao Hai immediately responded, “I have an important matter to discuss with the Honorable Sea King. I'm asking Patriarch to help me send word. Can I ask you to do this?”

The Rock Shrimp Patriarch looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Why would Patriarch want to see the Sea King? To be honest, my tribe doesn't have the influence to even see the Sea King.”

Zhao Hai's expression sank as he said, “Patriarch, this matter is extremely important. Tell the Sea King that aside from being the Patriarch of the Buda Clan and the son-in-law of the Rosen Emperor, I'm also a Foreign Prince of the Beastmen as well as a Foreign Elder of the Dwarves. Tell the Sea King that my visit involves a major event of the world. I ask the Patriarch to relay these words.”

Zhao Hai's long string of titles made the Rock Shrimp Patriarch's expression change. He didn't expect Zhao Hai to be so influential. The Sea Race might not have any idea about the relationship between the Humans and the Dwarves, but they were extremely familiar with the Beastmen.

Races from the Ark Continent and the Sea Race didn't have much contact, with the only exception being the Beastmen. This was because the Beastmen also had tribes that lived on water. These

Beastmen might not be fully living in water, but their lifestyles were closely tied to it. Some of these Beastmen lived on beaches while some lived on islands. Because of this, when Zhao Hai revealed that he was a Foreign Prince of the Beastman Race, the Rock Shrimp Patriarch's heart couldn't help but jump.

The Rock Shrimp Patriarch immediately gave Zhao Hai a bow before saying, "I didn't expect Patriarch to be a Foreign Prince of the Beastmen. This one has been disrespectful. However, this one didn't lie. Our Rock Shrimp tribe is indeed too small to have an audience with the Honored Sea King. I'm afraid I won't be able to help you much in this regard."

Zhao Hai knit his brows and said, "I'll ask the Patriarch to please find a way. I came this time not because of business. This matter shall affect all of the races in this world. I sincerely ask for Patriarch's help."

The Rock Shrimp Patriarch looked at Zhao Hai's face and couldn't help but be moved. They had been doing business with the Buda Clan for quite some time. The Buda Clan's business conduct is extremely good and they give very fair prices. This gave the Rock Shrimp Patriarch a very good impression towards the Buda Clan. And now that he saw how sincere Zhao Hai was, he couldn't help but believe in Zhao Hai's words. It seems like there really was something big going on.

Chapter 610 – Swordfish Tribe

If it was like what Zhao Hai thought that the Fishman was having an internal problem, then the previously unqualified Rock Shrimp tribe would become qualified to see the Sea King, given the special situation.

The reason why this was possible was the enormity of the population among the Fishman. There were some people who would want to challenge the authorities, and those people were no doubt strong, and they might even have strong allies as well. At this time, the Sea King would want to pull even the smallest power he can find. And the weak Rock Shrimp Tribe was one of those.

It was precisely because of this that the Rock Shrimp Patriarch was allowed an audience with the Sea King. And the reason why Zhao Hai approached the Rock Shrimp Patriarch and not going directly to the Sea King was because he wanted to make an impression on the old Rock Shrimp.

Since they did good business with them before, the Rock Shrimp Patriarch believed in Zhao Hai's words.

However, it would still take some time before the Rock Shrimp Patriarch can prepare. So he turned to Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, I can try and seek help from a larger tribe with regards to this matter. But before that, can mister show me proof of your status as the Foreign Prince of the Beastman Race?"

When Zhao Hai heard the old Rock Shrimp, he knew that he had succeeded. So he immediately said, "Of course, there's no problem." Then he took out the Beatman Command token and threw it over to the Rock Shrimp Patriarch.

The Rock Shrimp Patriarch received the token and looked at it. The Fishman also had their own records, and among their writings were magnificent stories about the outside world. Among them was the Prince's Command Token of the Beastmen. This token was

made with a kind of beast bone that was strong as steel and was as heavy as black iron. There was no way for this token to be replicated by other people.

When the Rock Shrimp Patriarch received the Prince's Token, he immediately knew that it was the real thing. One must know that one of the heaviest metals in the Ark Continent was black iron. And it was impossible for other people to mistake it for something else. However, the Beastmen actually managed to replicate the weight of black iron with a beast bone. There was no records of what bone was able to do this.

The Rock Shrimp Patriarch looked at the Prince Command Token and then looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, please give me time, about a few days or so. I'll do my best to find a way. Is that alright?"

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "There's still time, so it won't be a big deal. But this matter is also important and must be told to the honorable Sea King. I'll have to trouble Patriarch for this."

The Rock Shrimp Patriarch looked at Zhao Hai and then nodded, "Alright. Mister can rest assured. This one would certainly do everything that is possible." Then he gave Zhao Hai a small bow before diving back down into the sea.

Shortly after the Rock Shrimps had gone down, Laura turned to Zhao Hai and said, "It seems like the Fishman did have an incident. Otherwise the Rock Shrimps would be certain that they wouldn't see the Sea King. The Patriarch wouldn't have thought that there was indeed a way."

Zhao Hai nodded, he also carefully used his words in order to probe for answers. If the Rock Shrimp Patriarch really didn't have a way, then he wouldn't even dare to promise him. After all, the Rock Shrimps really needed human commodities, so he wouldn't risk himself offending Zhao Hai. But since the old Rock Shrimp agreed, then there might really be a possibility. This basically

meant that some instability has happened within the Fishman.

Although Zhao Hai had no understanding about the matters of the Fishman, he can still speculate from the business between the Buda Clan and the Rock Shrimp Tribe. Since the Rock Shrimp tribe can't buy up all of the Buda Clan's supplies, then the Buda Clan already had a metric about the Rock Shrimp tribes' size.

From what Zhao Hai can see, the Rock Shrimp Tribe had similar standing with the Giant Horned Bulls as well as the Black Bellied Pig Tribe that Zhao Hai had met when the first entered the Prairie. They were people placed at the bottom of the power pyramid. Therefore, how could such a tribe be able to have an audience with the Sea King?

The Rock Shrimp Tribe being able to promise an audience was indeed a very strange thing. It was due to this that Zhao Hai knew that the Fishman had a giant accident. Otherwise the Rock Shrimp Patriarch wouldn't have been so sure.

Lizzy turned his head to Zhao Hai and said, "Big Brother Hai, what do you think happened in the Fishman?"

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, "I can't possibly know. But from how the Rock Shrimp Patriarch has been acting, I'm afraid that the structure of the Fishman has become unstable. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been able to see the Sea King. The Sea King might have been scrounging up people in order to gain enough strength to hold into power."

Megan nodded and said, "That's extremely possible. If this is really the case, then I'm afraid that it's not the time for us to come here. I think that the Sea King wouldn't have time to get to see us."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Not really. Perhaps we came just in time. If we can help the Sea King solve this crisis, then we might have more leverage in discussing with the Fishman."

Meg knit her brows as he said, "Young Master, but this is the sea.

Compared to the Ark Continent, this place is much larger. It's possible that there are innumerable experts here. Do we really need to take part in this conflict?"

Among his wives, only Meg kept calling him Young Master, even if they had already been married for so long. This made Zhao Hai feel strange, he had already told Meg about this many times, but Meg seems to not be willing to change it.

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, "Even if there are a lot of experts in the sea, don't we have much more? This time, I want to talk about the Divine Realm with the Sea King. The Fishman has the most population in this world. If they can help us deal with the Divine Race and the Demons, then we would have a much easier time doing so.

Laura nodded, "If that's true, then that would be good. But Brother Hai, I'm afraid this would be more difficult than we imagine. After all, the war in the seas among the Fishman is much different compared to other places.

Zhao Hai showed a faint smile and said, "I've already had Cai'er prepare for this. There are now 9th rank undeads in the Space, and some of them are creatures of the sea. They should be stronger in terms of undersea battles. With the help of those guys, I think we won't have much of a problem."

When she heard Zhao Hai, she couldn't help but smile and said, "So Brother Hai had already thought of it. Then we might only have small troubles undersea. But unfortunately, we can't go underwater."

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "Why couldn't we? I've already asked Cai'er to transform a Blade Scale Whale into an undead like Alien. When the time comes, we can just ride the whale and then go underwater."

Megan became happy after she heard Zhao Hai, "Fantastic. I really wanted to see what the bottom of the sea looks like. I didn't

expect Big Brother Hai to be already prepared. So when do we go?"

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "Don't worry. If we go now, the Rock Shrimps might get offended. It's much better to wait for the Rock Shrimp Patriarch to come back with news. I don't think it would take him long to come back. Let's just wait for him for a few days."

Megan pouted her mouth before she nodded. Zhao Hai smiled, he also wanted to go underwater but it was not yet the time. He still hasn't gained the approval of the Sea King. If he were to enter the seas right now, he would get attacked by them.

Although he was on his ship, Zhao Hai's contact with the continent remained unbroken. Neither his business with the Beastmen nor Dwarves were getting affected.

Seven days later, Zhao Hai, who had been paying attention for the Rock Shrimps, suddenly spotted the Rock Shrimps along with their Patriarch. Zhao Hai immediately went to the ship's deck. And sure enough, as soon as he arrived on top of the deck, he heard a Rock Shrimp say, "We request to see Mister Zhao Hai."

Then Zhao Hai led Laura and the others to the bow of the ship to see the Rock Shrimp Patriarch. Seeing the old Shrimp's tired face, Zhao hai immediately gave a bow and said, "I've seen the Patriarch."

The Rock Shrimp Patriarch returned the bow as he said, "The Sea King agreed to have an audience with mister. Please follow me."

Zhao Hai quickly responded, "Thanks, Patriarch." Then the Rock Shrimp Patriarch nodded and then rode the bow of the ship. Zhao Hai knew that this was for him to guide the ship. So Zhao Hai immediately had the undead raise the anchor while hoisting the sails as he followed the Rock Shrimps towards the deeper parts of the sea.

A lot of Rock Shrimps were swimming alongside Zhao Hai's ship. Seeing the Rock Shrimp Patriarch and the others, Zhao Hai was

not sure if this was an escort or surveillance.

Zhao Hai and the others sat in the ship while looking at the monitor to see the situation. The ocean was indeed very big that it seemed limitless. The Haven was considered to be quick for a merchant ship. But compared to the Rock Shrimps, it was having a hard time catching up.

Moreover, Zhao Hai discovered that the route that they were taking was very safe. They were completely safe along the way. They didn't encounter any attacks, nor did they encounter any reefs or unpredictable undercurrents.

At night, the Rock Shrimp Patriarch would lead his people to rest in the sea. Zhao Hai also stopped his ship and waited for the next day. This cycle was repeated for ten days.

In these ten days, Zhao Hai already saw a lot of Sea Tribes. There were Turtles as well as numerous Fishes. Because of their numbers, it was impossible for Zhao Hai to correctly identify each one of them.

And these tribes always came to the Rock Shrimp patriarch since they were encroaching on their domain, there were even some who were intending to rob them. However, when the Rock Shrimp Patriarch showed a token, the opposite party allowed them to pass. But although they were allowed passage, the Fishmen still looked at Zhao Hai with curiosity.

Zhao Hai also knew that this was because of the long time where there was no contact between Humans and the Fishmen. So when they saw him, it was natural that they would feel interested.

In these ten days, Zhao Hai was expecting that he would be led to the Sea King. But he didn't expect the Rock Shrimp Patriarch to bring him to the Swordfish Tribe's Domain.

The reason why Zhao Hai identified the other party was because of their very special mounts. Their mounts had a very long bone

spike that can be used as a spear, it looked very hard. Moreover, the fish was very big, about ten meters in length. On its back were big fins, which seemed to express power and prestige.

Riding atop these swordfishes were people who had the same kind of fins on their heads, looking like a well combed hair. The person was holding a long bone spear and was about two meters in height. It's black skin looked slippery with mucus while he wore armor made of shells and seaweeds. He looked like a very powerful warrior.

Chapter 611 – Stone Column Island

Zhao Hai saw on the monitor that the Rock Shrimp Patriarch gave the Swordfish man a salute. Then after a bit of talking, he presented a token to the Swordfish tribesman.

The Swordfish tribesman received the token and after taking a look at it, he nodded. Then the Rock Shrimp Patriarch and the others returned to the sea's surface.

Zhao Hai looked at the situation and understood that he wasn't here to see the Sea King. The Rock Shrimp Patriarch can only escort him up to here.

After that, just as Zhao Hai closed the monitor, the Rock Shrimp Patriarch's was heard outside, "I ask Mister Zhao Hai to please come out." Then Zhao Hai and the others went on to the ship's bow to see the Rock Shrimp Patriarch as well as the Swordfish tribesman. The Swordfish was still sitting on his mount, he came along with his men. All them looked at Zhao Hai with a hint of curiosity.

Zhao Hai gave a bow and said, "I've seen the Rock Shrimp Patriarch and brother Fishman. Why did Patriarch call for me?"

The Rock Shrimp Patriarch returned the bow and then said, "Mister, we can only take you up to here. This is the Junior Patriarch of the Swordfish tribe. The next step would be up to him."

Zhao Hai quickly replied, "I thank the Patriarch for his efforts. The Patriarch doesn't need to worry, I have already sent a letter back to the family, they will be sending you two shipments worth of supplies. That would be my gratitude for Patriarch's help. The Patriarch would just need to wait in your place and the ships would arrive in a few days. Please don't refuse this gift."

The Rock Shrimp Patriarch's face couldn't help but burst in glee,

“Then mister Zhao Hai has my deepest gratitude. Junior Patriarch, Mister Zhao Hai is a very good person. Please take care of him.”

The Junior Patriarch of the Swordfish tribe looked at Zhao Hai and nodded, “I will. Patriarch Libben can rest assured.” The Rock Shrimp Patriarch then nodded and gave a bow to Zhao Hai before he submerged back to the sea.

Zhao Hai turned to the Junior Patriarch of the Swordfish tribe, he gave a bow and said, “Zhao Hai has seen Junior Patriarch, I apologize for the trouble.”

The Junior Patriarch of the Swordfish tribe was polite to Zhao Hai as well. He returned Zhao Hai’s bow and said, “Mister is too polite. The Sea King had issued summons for mister, so naturally we wouldn’t dare to ignore it. Mister, please come with us.” Then the Junior Patriarch went to the front of the Haven. The other Knights looked at Zhao Hai before they went to the sides of the ship and escorted it.

Zhao Hai discovered that the Junior Patriarch of the Swordfish tribe seemed to dislike having in contact with him. However, this Junior Patriarch also seemed to be very strong. Zhao Hai estimated this Junior Patriarch to be equivalent to an 8th rank human expert.

Zhao Hai has no way to calculate a Fishman’s age, so he didn’t know how old this Junior Patriarch was. But what he definitely knew was that this Junior Patriarch was not old for his race. For him to be 8th rank was a proof of his extraordinary talent.

Moreover, Zhao Hai also discovered that this Junior Patriarch’s army was very unified. These Swordfish Knights under his command, although only about 500, were comprised of 6th to 7th rank experts. These people were very unified that even in motion they still kept their proper formation.

Zhao Hai also paid close attention to the Swordfish knights’ reaction towards the Junior Patriarch. They seem to have no hint

of resistance to his command, some of them even carried expressions of worship. This showed that the commanding power of this Junior Patriarch was very great.

An army this sharp usually held great pride. Even if one's status was high, if they don't believe your strength, then they would find it hard to follow you and would only look down on you. However, this Junior Patriarch seemed to have completely conquered these people. There was no need to doubt his strength and skill in handling his army.

Zhao Hai wanted to talk to this Junior Patriarch, but it seems like this Junior Patriarch was unwilling to talk to him. Zhao Hai tried to open up a conversation only to be turned down with short answers. In the end, Zhao Hai chose to give up.

Following Laura and the others in returning to the Space, Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile bitterly. Laura looked at Zhao Hai and couldn't help but chuckle, "Brother Hai, they actually chose to ignore you. I haven't seen that before."

Zhao Hai forced a smile and said, "It's just his arrogance. Hehe, this is the first time I've seen someone do that to me."

Meg suddenly got fired up, "His arrogance is useless. Compared to the Young Master, his strength is just nothing. He actually acted disrespectfully to Young Master, you should go and teach him a lesson."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Calm down, we're still in their domain. In addition, this Junior Patriarch is still young. Being this young and already strong is commendable. After all, he didn't have the help of the Space."

Although Meg nodded, her face still couldn't hide her indignation. In her heart, Zhao Hai was the best, he was the strongest of them all. She would get angry if anyone were to dare to be impolite to Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai thought that he would be seeing the Sea King after only a few days. But he didn't expect the ship to travel for 20 days. On the 20th day, Zhao Hai discovered that there was a rainbow like radiance in the distance.

Zhao Hai opened the monitor and immediately became shocked. The rainbow lights was not too far. But after seeing what it was, Zhao Hai couldn't help but stare at the scenery, surprised.

What Zhao Hai saw was an island. But this island was peculiar, it wasn't connected to the sea but was instead held up by 13 huge pillars on the water.

He didn't know how these stone pillars were produced, but there were many holes on each pillar of which water kept flowing out. The water produced mist that would in turn make the rainbows.

Zhao Hai also saw that in those holes, Merpeople can be seen. These merpeople had the upper bodies of humans but had a lower body of a fish. They all had long golden hair and dark blue eyes. Their chests were covered by shells while the others parts were left exposed. They looked pure with a tint of temptation. Their appearance made people unable to look away.

Laura and the others were also dumbfounded upon seeing these people. They also didn't think that there would be such a place. The mists kept coming as an endless amount of water kept pouring down the pillars. There were also the attractive mermaids. This made them feel like they were in a fairytale.

After some time, Laura and the others recovered. Their mouths couldn't help but release a sound of wonder. Zhao Hai was also the same, this scenery was indeed too beautiful.

At this time, the Haven was already slowly approaching the place. After heading to the island for some time, they were immediately blocked by a gigantic Fishman. This man's stature was very tall and big. He was even taller than the biggest Beastman. It had blue skin and was as tall as Zhao Hai's stone

golem and looked just as strong. He held a huge trident on one hand that was about 20 meters long, it looked quite heavy.

The bodies of these people don't seem to be different from humans. The sole difference were some parts of their body as well as their enormous tail. The tail was very robust, Zhao Hai seemed to identify it as something that belonged to a whale.

These people had their mounts as well. Each one of them had huge blue whales that carried them on their backs. They looked extraordinarily formidable. After they blocked the Junior Patriarch of the Swordfish tribe, the Junior Patriarch immediately took the token that was handed over by the Rock Shrimp Patriarch and gave it to the opposite party. The huge fishman nodded before he waved his hand, sending the Junior Patriarch away.

Although the Junior Patriarch was arrogant, he still wouldn't dare to pull rank against these Whale Fishmen. The Junior Patriarch bowed to the Whale fishman before he retreated. The Whales then started to slowly float towards the surface.

When the Whale fishman started to appear on the surface, Zhao Hai can immediately feel the pressure coming out of them. These Whale fishmen on top of the whale mounts looked just like the ancient giants from the legends. Their heights had surpassed the deck of the ship.

Before Zhao Hai could speak, one Whale fishman said, "You are Zhao Hai?" His voice rumbling, it was as deep as thunder.

Zhao Hai didn't get frightened, he immediately gave a bow and said, "Brother Fishman, I am indeed Zhao Hai."

The Whale fishman looked at Zhao Hai and said, "The Sea King has summoned you. Go retrieve your sails." Zhao Hai complied as he had the undead take down the sails of the ship.

Just as the sails were taken down, two Whale fishmen arrived by his ship and extended their hands towards the Haven's bow before

pushing it towards the small island.

Zhao Hai looked at these Whale fishermen, he didn't think that these soldiers would have this strength. They seem to push an Ironclad Five masted ship with absolutely no effort.

It didn't take a long time for them to arrive at the vicinity of the small island. However, Zhao Hai cannot walk at this time. This was because surrounding the small island were all kinds of reefs. There was simply no way for the ship to continue.

Zhao Hai also saw some Mermaids on the reefs. These mermaids looked curiously at Zhao Hai. Once in a while they would whisper some words to their companions before bell-like laughs echoed out.

About one kilometer away from a column, the Haven stopped. The Whale fishman then looked at Zhao Hai and said, "You come to my mount's back. I'll take you further."

Zhao Hai expressed his gratitude before leading Laura and the others to the back of the whale. When they arrived on top of the whale, they discovered that they were only as tall as the Whale fishman's feet. It seems like if the Whale fishman wants to, he could step on them.

The Whale fishman turned his head to Zhao Hai as he cracked a smile. Then he led his whale mount to swim towards the island. Before long, they had passed by the stone columns and reached the middle column of the island. Zhao Hai noted that the stone column seem to be several hundred meters high. The waters from the holes above also kept flowing down. On top of this stone column was a palace, something that Zhao Hai has not seen before.

Chapter 612 – Queen

The Whales took Zhao Hai to the stone pillar. The holes on this pillar weren't small, however, the Whales were still unable to go up.

The Whale fishman shouted towards the stone pillar, "Old Turtle, please come out." Just as his voice fell, a person suddenly appeared from the bottom of the stone pillar. After seeing him come out, Zhao Hai found out that this man was a Turtle fishman. He wore trousers made of seaweed with an upper body of a turtle, with a carapace protecting his front and back.

The Turtle fishman looked at the Whale fishman and said, "You called me?"

The Whale looked at the Turtle and said, "This is mister Zhao Hai. He's someone that the Sea King had summoned. I ask the old Turtle Fishman to help me bring him up."

The Turtle fishman looked at Zhao Hai and then said, "You are Zhao Hai?"

Zhao Hai nodded, "I am Zhao Hai." Then the Turtle nodded. He waved as several turtles appeared from the stone pillar. These turtles weren't large, their shells were only about two meters in diameter.

The Turtle fishman turned his head to Zhao Hai and the others and said, "Stand on them, I'll go take you to the top." Zhao Hai nodded, and then stood on the back of a turtle before they were taken up the stone pillar.

Upon entering this pillar, Zhao Hai had found out that it actually was a maze. There were plenty of interconnected channels inside and each of them had their own water currents. In the end, the Turtle fishman had brought Zhao Hai to a steadily flowing part of the pillar.

This pillar was unexpectedly a water slide. Each pillar had rushing water cascading down. One could clearly see that the water was very deep.

Zhao Hai felt strange, he was surprised as to how the Fishmen were able to do this. How did they manage to place a large amount of water in such a place? It was really amazing.

However, the turtles seem to not care about it as they swam against the stream. All of them were steadily going upward with speed that couldn't be described as slow.

Zhao Hai counted probably about half an hour before they reached the top of the pillar. The position that they were in now was actually a big pool. In the middle of this pool was a palace.

The palace was constructed beautifully. It was made out of white stone with its top being a blue tent. On the walls were endless pearls and crystals. These pearls and crystals made for an attractive sight. They sparkled under the sunlight, and they seem to be intricately arranged that their reflections had illuminated the big pool. The illuminations on the pool showed different Fishman tribes, it was very beautiful.

Zhao Hai and the others couldn't help but be in awe with such a scene. They didn't expect that they would be able to see such a beautiful place. At this time, the Turtle fishman stopped at the pull. Then the old Turtle Fishman turned to Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, please come ashore. Some people would be meeting you there."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he gave a bow to the old Turtle Fishman and said, "I thank Brother Fishman." Then he took a step towards the shore along with Laura and the others.

After seeing that the group had come to shore, the old Turtle Fishman then turned around to leave along with the turtles. But at this time, a person walked out of the palace. This person was a blonde haired woman with blue eyes. In her hand was a crystal

staff. She wore a green robe on her body. It was evident that her robe was made out of seaweed.

The woman went towards ZHao Hai and bowed. Then she smiled and said, “Are you the Buda Clan’s Patriarch, Beastman Race’s Foreign Prince, and the Dwarves’ Foreign Elder, Zhao Hai?”

Zhao Hai recovered, then he bowed hastily and said, “I am indeed Zhao Hai. May I know who the young lady is?”

The woman smiled faintly and said, “I’m a person of the Sea King’s palace. My name is Lola, please come with me.”

Zhao Hai quickly said, “This one has seen officer Lola. If I may ask, what clan does officer Lola belong? Are you a Human?”

Lola smiled faintly and said, “There’s no need for mister to be too polite. I am not a Human, I’m a mermaid. We mermaids can change between tail and legs all year round. So it isn’t strange to see us walking like this.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “So that’s how it is. I didn’t think that the Royal Tribe of the Fishmen were actually the Mermaids. This is the first time that I’ve heard of this.”

Lola curiously looked at Zhao Hai, “This is the first time? How is that possible? In the past, there were several occasions where the Fishmen and Humans came in contact. The nearest one should be about several thousand years ago. Did the Humans not have this in their records?”

Zhao Hai stared, then he turned to look at Laura and the others and said, “Did you know about this?”

Laura and the others shook their heads. Then Laura replied, “I didn’t. I’ve read all of the history books that we have collected. And in the past ten thousand years, there has been no contact between the Fishmen and the Humans.”

Lola looked at Zhao Hai and then shook her head, “There’s nothing strange about that. Our initial relationship with the

Humans was very good. But later on, the Radiant Church had started to pressure us, causing our contact with the humans to be cut off. Later on we heard that the people of the Radiant Church had taken charge in making the history books of the humans. So it was natural that they wouldn't include us in."

Zhao Hai stared, he wasn't aware of any of these matters. No wonder there wasn't even a word about the Fishmen in the ten thousand year history of the Humans. Moreover, these history books were unfairly aggressive towards the Beastmen. In the history books, the Beastmen were described as wild and aggressive while the Dwarves were violent and irritating. The Elves had it better, since they were written to have unparalleled beauty. But this was not a good thing. This made the humans covet the Elves. For a period of time, there were humans who were capturing Elves and made them into slaves. In the end, the Elves retreated from the Human lands and went to the Elven Forest, completely cutting their contact with the outside world.

After putting all of this together, Zhao Hai was able to understand what was going on. This must be one of the plans of the Radiant Church. They wanted the Fishmen to be forgotten, and the Beastmen and Dwarves to be hated. But since the Elves were too perfect, the Radiant Church were unable to find dirt on them. The Church can only use one method, and it was to make the Elves cut their ties with the Humans. In the end, their plan succeeded, making it very difficult for the races to come in contact with the humans.

At this time, Lola had already brought Zhao Hai and the others to the Great Hall. This Great Hall was very spacious. From what Zhao Hai can see, the Great Hall must have been about 20 meters high. The ceiling of the hall was made out of crystal, making it possible to see the outside directly. These crystals were also adjusted in order to be a beautiful piece of art.

The stone pillars of the Great Hall were also inlaid with pearls

and crystals. There were mermaids standing on each pillar, but each of them had already turned into their Human form.

In the innermost part of the Great Hall was a special throne. It looked like a normal throne but with half of it underwater. A mermaid was sitting on this throne. She wore green robes along with a crystal crown on her head as well as a crystal scepter on her hand. However, she didn't change into her human form, her lower body was tail of a fish.

Lola led ZHao Hai and the others to the beautiful mermaid up to about ten paces away. Then Lola bowed to the Mermaid and said, "Your Majesty, Mister Zhao Hai and his wives has arrived."

The woman waved his hand, then Lola bowed again before going back. Then Zhao Hai and the others went forward and bowed, "Zhao Hai has see Her Majesty the Mermaid Queen."

The Queen nodded, then he looked curiously at Zhao Hai, "Mister Zhao Hai, Miss Laura, Miss Megan, Miss Meg, Miss Lizzy, Miss Ni'er. I welcome you in behalf of all the Fishmen. May I know the reason why you've been anxious to see me?"

Zhao Hai and the others stared, they didn't think that the Queen would get their names accurately.

Zhao Hai looked confused at the Queen but he still answered, "It's an honor for Her Majesty to know our names. I came this time to tell Your Majesty of an important matter."

The Queen smiled faintly and said, "Mister can tell me."

Zhao Hai looked at the Queen and suddenly said, "Before I say it, I want to ask Your Majesty something. What is your view of the Radiant Church?"

The Queen gawked, she was confused at Zhao Hai's question. Then she asked Zhao Hai, "What is the purpose of mister's question? Is mister's trip because of the Radiant Church? I heard that mister is enemies with the Radiant Church."

Zhao Hai stared, he looked at the Queen and said, “Does Your Majesty know about this?”

The Queen smiled faintly and said, “Of course. Although there weren’t much contact between the Fishmen and the Humans, that doesn’t mean that we don’t hear any news at all. Especially my mermaid race.”

When Zhao Hai heard the Queen, he couldn’t help but get surprised, but he still answered, “Then it’s good that Your Majesty knows about the matters of the continent. I just want to know about how Your Majesty views the Radiant Church.”

The Queen looked at Zhao Hai and said, “The Radiant Church is an evil organization. They probably wanted to rule the entire world and enslave all the races, including us Fishmen.”

When he heard the Queen, Zhao Hai’s confidence went up. He looked at the Queen and said, “I don’t know if the Queen knew about the war tens of thousands of years ago. Where all of the major races of the Continent united. The matter about the war against the Divine Race?”

The Queen stared, then she thought for a moment before she said, “I do remember it. Our clan has it on our records. At that time, our Fishman Race also entered that war. But since most of the fighting happened on land, we weren’t much of a help. But there were still a lot of our Mermaid tribe’s elders that had died in that war.”

Zhao Hai was now fully assured, “I’ll tell Your Majesty about all I know. I suspect that the Radiant Church is a chess piece that the Divine Race had placed here in the Ark Continent. They were here in order to prepare for the Divine Race’s invasion.”

Upon hearing Zhao Hai, the Queen’s facial expression couldn’t help but change, “Mister, tell me all the details.”

Zhao Hai nodded, and then narrated how he helped the Dwarves

to restore their artifact spirit. Then on about the time he went to the Northern Icefield in order to retrieve the Beast God's Spear. He also expressed his numerous speculations.”

While the Queen listened to Zhao Hai, her face constantly changed. After Zhao Hai finished, the Queen sighed and said, “So that's how it is. No wonder mister can become the Beastman Race's Foreign Prince. Also it seems like there's nobody in the continent that knew about you becoming the Foreign Elder of the Dwarves. So Mister has been preparing for this matter. It seems like the people of the continent had heavily underestimated mister's capabilities.”

Zhao Hai looked strangely at the Queen. From her words, it seems like she was updated on the matters of the continent. This made Zhao Hai confused, how could the Fishmen had such deep understanding about the continent?

The Queen looked at Zhao Hai and then smiled faintly, “Mister doesn't need to get confused about why our Mermaid clan is aware of the matters of the continent. Does mister know about the Sea God's Merchant Union?”

Upon hearing Sea God's Merchant Union, the faces of Zhao Hai and the others couldn't help but change. It was not because they didn't hear about it, but it was because they were too familiar with the name.

Among the big Merchant unions of the continent, the Sea God's Merchant Union was the most mysterious. The main business of this Merchant Union were their clothing and jewelry.

The Queen wouldn't mention the Sea God's Merchant Union for no reason at all. Just her mentioning this name meant that the merchant union is under the Mermaid Clan's control! This was too shocking, people had always believed that the Fishmen were always in the sea. Because of this, nobody would suspect that they would openly make their own merchant union. And it was actually

one of the most famous merchant unions in the continent.

Zhao Hai and Laura looked at each other and can see the shock in each other's eyes. The Mermaids were too formidable. They can actually hide this for a long time, it was too amazing.

The Queen looked at Zhao Hai's expression and smiled, "Mister shouldn't be too surprised. After all, we, the Fishmen, still needed Human products to live. But we cannot openly trade with the Humans. After all, most of the Fishman races didn't have good impressions towards your race."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "I understand. Since Your Majesty knows, what would your race do now? Will you help us in dealing with the Radiant Church and the Divine Race?"

The Queen thought for a moment before she nodded, "Naturally. The Radiant Church was the main culprit who drove us away from the continent. And they also wanted to enslave everyone. So why wouldn't we agree? We shall help you to deal with the Radiant Church and the Divine Race."

When he heard the Queen, Zhao Hai couldn't help but be glad, "I thank Your Majesty."

The Queen smiled faintly and said, "Mister shouldn't be too polite. Compared to what mister had done, my word is nothing. But mister, we're in quite of a trouble right now. I'm afraid we won't be able to provide help in the meantime."

"I knew it!" Zhao Hai said inside. But he smiled and said, "If Your Majesty trusts this Zhao Hai. Then I could provide you with a helping hand."

The Queen stared, then she shook her head and said, "No need. The Buda Clan might be strong on land, but this is the sea. I'm afraid Mister can't provide much of a help."

Chapter 613 – Secret

When Zhao Hai heard the Queen, he couldn't help but show a smile as he said, "Your Majesty, since you know about my Buda Clan, they you should also know about my ability. I might not have good cultivation, but my Dark Magic, especially undead magic, is unparalleled. If I say I'm second, nobody would dare claim that they are first."

The Queen stared at Zhao Hai, then after thinking for a moment, she said, "So mister wants to help us using your Undead?"

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "It depends on what troubles you have encountered."

The Queen looked at Zhao Hai, and the after some time, she let out a long sigh and said, "Patriarch Zhao Hai's undead summoning is indeed very famous in the continent. This Queen wouldn't hide anything from mister, this time, we had really met some trouble. Someone wanted to challenge the throne."

This answer was within Zhao Hai's expectations. The Mermaid Race was the ruling clan of the Fishmen. If there wasn't a revolt, they wouldn't have established ties with the Rock Shrimp tribe. After all, the Rock Shrimp tribe was just too unqualified.

Zhao Hai looked at the Queen and said, "Since Your Majesty wanted to form an alliance with us, they we are now allies. If an ally is in trouble, then it would be impossible for me to just stand by. I ask Your Majesty to tell us the problem, this Zhao Hai would do his best to help."

The Queen looked at Zhao Hai and somehow felt that he can be trusted. So she gave a sigh and said, "I'm afraid mister would laugh at us. Although we rule the sea, the waters are just too big. Our Mermaid Clan simply cannot manage every single place. Moreover, since our management is quite loose, many people held us in high regard. But we had recently discovered that some

Fishmen tribes were having trouble. It was clear that something must have happened. So we sent some people to investigate and found out that a strong subordinate of ours, the Sea Dragon tribe, has been collecting massive amounts of tax under our name. However, these taxes weren't handed over to us, but instead, they hoarded it for themselves and used it to pull other tribes over to their side. At the time of us finding out, those tribes had already established an alliance and had blatantly announced their revolt. Now, we had lost control of the east side of the seas. Moreover, the Sea Dragon Tribe has also amassed an army and are now inching towards us. Because our Mermaid Race has not fought for some time, our response had been slow. Now, we have our backs behind the wall."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Then I would have to disturb Your Majesty for a few days. In those few days, I will use the time to manufacture a batch of high level undead marine beasts and make them into an army. When the time comes, I believe they would be able to help Your Majesty. What do you think?"

The Queen gawked at what Zhao Hai said, then her face expressed her glee as she said, "Then I would trouble mister Zhao Hai. Lola, arrange a room for mister Zhao Hai to rest in."

Lola stepped forward and gave the Queen a bow, then she turned her head to Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, come with me." Zhao Hai then gave the Queen a bow before leaving with Lola.

When Zhao Hai left the Great Hall, a Mermaid entered the Great Hall from a small entrance at the side. The Mermaid then told the Queen, "Your Majesty, from what we've heard from mister Zhao Hai, it seems like the attack of the Sea Dragons are also related to the Divine Race."

The Queen nodded and said, "In our clan's records, the Dragon Race were the most faithful dogs of the Divine Race. The Sea Dragons are a branch family of the Dragons. Their sudden move this time might have some reason. Luo Luo, you go look at the

records and see what the Sea Dragons did during the previous war against the Divine Race. I'm afraid I can't remember if there are any records of it in the clan."

The Mermaid Luo Luo complied, then she looked at the Queen and said, "Your Majesty, do you think mister Zhao Hai's plan is feasible? Can the undead really deal with those Sea Dragons?"

The Queen smiled faintly and said, "The Buda Clan's Patriarch is very mysterious. There are numerous people in the continent that went to investigate him only to find out nothing. But some people suspect that he has some sort of Space Divergent Ability. Moreover, all of his undead are very high levelled, their individual fighting strength is not weak. If we have his help, then we may reduce our casualties. You transmit my orders to get the Whales to catch a lot magic beasts and bring them over. We don't know how many undead mister Zhao Hai might make. But I'm sure that when the war comes, those Sea Dragons would surely be in on a surprise."

Luo Luo nodded, then she turned around to leave. Inside the Great Hall, the Queen gave a sigh before she muttered, "The Divine Race is finally returning? Hehe, that's good. I've also waited to take revenge. Clowns of the Sea Dragon Race, do you really think that you can dethrone us? Keep dreaming."

Zhao Hai and the others were lead by Lola to a side hall. This hall wasn't very big, but it still had the beautiful aesthetics of the palace. The hall was divided into four regions. Upon entering, one would first enter the lobby, it was a living room that was floored with blue stone. Moreover, the stones underwent careful polishing, one could see reflections when one walks on them.

The second room was the dining room, inside were stone furniture This room had wooden tables and chairs in them. These tables and chairs were all made out of the finest wood. They didn't use a single coating of paint, revealing the natural wood grains. It looked very simple and natural.

The third were the bed spaces, inside were a total of four rooms and a living room. The fourth part of the hall was the bathroom. The floor of the bathroom was made out of blue shells. In the middle of the bathroom was a large pool. There were several fish head sculptures on the edges of the pool with water spraying out of it. There was also a water outlet under the pool in order to stabilize its height. The water was crystal clear and wasn't cold at all. Instead it felt warm and was very nice to take a bath in.

Lola asked Zhao Hai and the others to the living room and briefed them about the palace before she took her leave. She also told Zhao Hai that if he needs something, he can just pull on the rope inside the bedroom. The rope was linked to a metal bell, when the rope is pulled, the bell would then issue a ring which would alert nearby people.

After Lola left, Zhao Hai and the others went to the small living area in their bedroom. Then, Zhao Hai opened his monitor. Cai'er already recorded the conversation between Luo Luo and the Queen.

After Zhao Hai and the others listened to the video, the group became silent. After some time, Laura turned her head to Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, looking at the Queen's expression, is she confident?"

Zhao Hai nodded, then after sighing he said, "She certainly is. The mermaids have been ruling the fishmen for a long time. So how could they possibly not have their trump cards. If they didn't have any methods, then they would've already fallen to a revolt long time ago. And seeing from the Queen's expression, it seems like she is reluctant to use their trump card. Otherwise, she wouldn't need out help."

Laura nodded, then Lizzy frowned and said, "Do we really need to help the Queen? They have ways to deal with these people. Aren't we being used like tools this time?"

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “That doesn’t matter. In any case, if we help them deal with the Sea Dragons, our relationship would get much closer. This is good for our future plans. I just didn’t think that the Dragons would be on the side of the Divine Realm. It seems like the Radiant Church was the Divine Race’s chess piece in the light while the Dragons are their piece in the shadows.”

Megan looked like she had a heavy heart, “Big Brother Hai, Dragons haven’t appeared on the continent for many years. It seems like they have been living in the Accra mountains. If the Dragons were indeed on the side of the Divine Race, then its likely that they have been controlling the magic beasts of the mountain. No wonder the Accra mountains had become one of the Five Forbidden Areas. The Dragons controlling the magic beasts for the Divine Race must be kept secret from the others. So they naturally would kill people who ventured deep into the Accra Mountain.”

The smile on Zhao Hai’s face disappeared, then he nodded and said, “That’s very possible. If there is really a Divine Race’s force in the Accra Mountains, then the Demonic Abyss would definitely be a den for the Demons. People already had some suspicions that the Demonic Abyss is related to the Demon Race, but nobody had any proof of it. I think the Demons used this deliberately in order to focus everyone’s attention to the Demonic Abyss while the Engraved Ark continues to accumulate power. The methods of the Demons and the Divine Race were actually similar, but are reversed.

Laura became serious as she said, “It seems like the Demons and the Divine Realm still hasn’t lost heart for the Ark Continent. Brother Hai, we’re quite lucky that we haven’t gone to the Accra Mountains yet and found out about the relationship between the Dragons and the Divine Race. If we went there and found out, then the Divine Race would surely be alerted that their secret was revealed. It might spur them into action.”

Zhao Hai nodded, “Fortunately, we went to the Fishman Race first. Otherwise, we would’ve gone to Accra Mountains since the Elves were still unprepared. I’m planning on getting some magic beasts and plants to upgrade the Space. I’ve also been thinking of subduing the Dragons, after all, their fighting strength were incredibly known to the continent.”

Megan knit her brows as she said, “It’s really strange that nobody knew about the relationship between the Dragons and the Divine Race. It seems like this was also because of the Radiant Church’s machinations.”

Zhao Hai coldly snorted and said, “It seems so. The Radiant Church had probably obtained the Divine Race’s decree earlier than we have imagined. “The Divine race is good, they were actually very patient.”

Chapter 614 – Arrogant? I Have Strength!

Although they were in a hostile relationship, Zhao Hai couldn't help but admire the Divine Race. For them to hide everything for such a long time was a testament to how patient they were.

However, this also made Zhao Hai pay much more attention to them. The Divine Race can completely turn the entire Ark Continent over along with the Radiant Church. Such a race was notable, and Zhao Hai couldn't help but refrain from being careless.

Laura coldly snorted and said, "Brother Hai, then what do we do? When we extinguish the Sea Dragons, then would we be looking for trouble with the Dragons in Accra Mountains?" She was afraid that the continent would find out that Zhao Hai had the guts to offend the Dragons. In the continent, Dragons were the symbols of invincibility. Nobody dared to go and purposefully offend them.

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Don't worry. First, we deal with the Sea Dragons, and then we go to Flame Island and see what's going on there. Maybe we can get some benefits along the way. After that, we'll go deal with the dragons. But since there are quite strong, we need to get ready. Right Laura, you and the others are now 9th rank experts. But you don't have your own mounts. Maybe we can get you some dragons to ride in Accra Mountains."

Laura snorted, "I don't want them. What do those stupid dragons do that a 9th rank Blood Hawk can't? I'd rather use the Blood Hawks as a mount."

Zhao Hai and the others laughed. If other people in the continent were to hear Laura, they would certainly laugh. She actually denied the chance to have a dragon as a mount. That's an absurd idea.

After some time, the group gradually calmed down. Then Megan turned her head towards Zhao Hai and said, "Big Brother Hai, will you start making undead tomorrow? Your undeads are now 9th

rank, what form do you want them to look like?”

Zhao Hai nodded, “This is truly tricky to deal with. We can just let those undead retain their forms when they fight, but we’ll have them deliberately get injured or play dead. Naturally, those are just make believe. Once they reach a certain amount of damage, we can receive them into the Space. We can use this method as a cover up. Also, the Queen was also aware of the strength of my undead, so she wouldn’t suspect too much upon seeing them fight.”

Lizzy nodded and said, “From what I can hear from the Queen, she seems to be sincere in her move to ally with us. In this case, it would be more advantageous for her if Brother Hai is stronger than she expected. I think she wouldn’t just betray you.”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “in fact, there’s really no need to be careful about the Fishmen. Although they had the Sea God’s Merchant Union and can contact with the continent, they have always been mysterious and can only be rarely be spotted. Their contact with the other powers can only be said to be miniscule. So I believe that they won’t say anything. The other Fishman tribes are also less likely to talk, after all, they don’t get in contact with the humans. Because of that I believe that what we do here won’t be revealed to the Humans back in the continent.”

Lizzy shook her head and said, “But we still need to be careful. Even if the Fishmen wouldn’t talk, what about the Sea Dragons? They might use the other Dragons to expose us.”

Laura also nodded and said, “Brother Hai, we do need to be much more careful.” Zhao Hai nodded and didn’t say anything more. Laura and the others didn’t say anything as well as they went back to the Space and started to prepare.

Although the Queen didn’t invite Zhao Hai over for a meal, she still had people send him a beautiful array of dishes. The variety seafoods present were more than what Zhao Hai had eaten before. This made Zhao Hai and the others satisfied with their meal.

The next morning, after Zhao Hai and the others ate the Breakfast that Lola had given them, Lola gave them word that the Queen was inviting them over. Then Zhao Hai and the others went with Lola to the Great Hall in order to meet with the Queen.

The Queen was sat in the same position as when Zhao Hai had met her yesterday. Upon seeing Zhao Hai, the Queen couldn't help but smile faintly and said, "Mister, come and take a seat." Zhao Hai then noticed that there were several chairs in the Great Hall today. It seems like these were specially prepared for them.

After Zhao Hai and the others expressed their gratitude and sat on the chairs, the Queen said, "How many undead can mister summon? How many beasts do we need to acquire?"

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "As many beasts as you can find, the more the better. Right, Your Majesty, how many people had followed the Sea Dragons' rebellion? How much people do they have?"

The Queen forced a smile and said, "There are a lot of tribes that decided to join the Sea Dragons, I don't know how many they are. But there were a lot of small races that were absorbed into their army. I'm afraid that the current army of the Sea Dragons numbers at about more than ten million."

Although he knew that the seas was big and there were a lot of beings in here, Zhao Hai still couldn't help but breath some cold air upon hearing the number of the opposite party. Now he understood why the Sea Dragons decided to act against the Mermaids. If the Mermaids were dealt with, the Sea Dragons would have full hegemony of the seas. When the time comes, they can amass their army and coordinate with the Radiant Church. At that time, it wouldn't be impossible to conquer the entire continent.

Moreover, the Fishmen also had an advantage. Although they can't stay on land for too long, one shouldn't forget that they can

just retreat to the seas whenever they get defeated. The sea is their domain and no army of the continent was able to contend with them there. That would be equivalent to the Fishmen having bases right beside Human territories.

If this was really the case, then the Divine Race can definitely depend on them and fight a battle of attrition with the major races in the continent. At that time, even if they don't send a God-ranked expert and just sent down an army of 9th ranks, they can still defeat the races of the continent. After all, the population of the continent was greatly fewer than the people of the sea. Moreover, they still had the Dragons in Accra Mountains as well as the Radiant Church.

Thinking about this made Zhao Hai coldly sweat. If he didn't come to see the Fishmen at this time, then he would really be in trouble. It was good that he came just in time to deal with the Sea Dragons, solving the issue with the Fishmen.

The Queen saw that Zhao Hai's face turned ugly and didn't speak for quite a while. She thought that he was frightened by the army so she quickly said, "Mister doesn't need to worry about our ability to resist them. We were just caught off guard this time, so we couldn't respond appropriately. Mister can just summon as many as you can, that's already enough of a help."

When Zhao Hai heard that the Queen seemed to misunderstand him, he immediately smiled faintly and said, "Your Majesty misunderstands, I can summon as much undead as the number of corpses that you can provide. I can only ask Your Majesty to grab as much corpses as possible, it would be great to get corpses from the enemies."

The Queen nodded, "Alright, the mister doesn't need to worry about the magic beasts. I already had my people prepare them. I just want to know how much mister can take."

Zhao Hai knew what the Queen meant. After all, her clan had a

lot of contact with the Humans, so it was natural that she was aware about Dark Mages. She knew that Dark Mages have their limit. If the Fishmen were to provide more than what Zhao Hai can summon, then he would be losing face.

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “Your majesty doesn’t need to worry. Make them get as many as possible, the more the better. If Your Majesty can prepare 10 million magic ebasts, then Your Majesty would acquire a 10 million undead army. This one will have to excuse myself to rest. Once the corpses are ready, Your Majesty can just send some people over to get me.” Then he gave a bow before he left along with Laura and the others.

When Zhao Hai left, Luo Luo arrived at the Great Hall, completely fuming, “Your Majesty, this Zhao Hai is extremely arrogant. Your Majesty is only thinking about his well being, but instead he was being impolite.”

The Queen smiled faintly and then shook her head, “Silly thing, he’s not being extremely arrogant. He is just very strong. You might not know but he has a very terrifying reputation among the Humans. In just one night, he had turned an entire several hundred thousand Aksu Empire navy into his undead. If he can really turn 10 million corpses into undead, then that would be good for us. Go give the orders to get as much magic beasts as possible. As long as they are wild, then get them. Right, go bring corpses of Sea Dragons and their allies as well. I want to see what an undead Sea Dragon looks like.” While she spoke this, a killing aura appeared around the Queen.

The Mermaid Queen was very angry. The Mermaid Race had ruled the seas for many years, but they hadn’t encountered a rebellion of this scale. The Sea Dragons actually made the Mermaids lose control of the eastern seas. For the Mermaid Race, this was not a small attack.

The fighting strength of the eastern sea was much stronger than the west. This was because in the eastern waters, aside from the

Sea Dragons, there were also the Sharks, Electric Eels, and various poisonous races. These collection of people were very strong. It was because of this that when the Sea Dragon announced their rebellion, the Mermaid Race was caught off guard.

However, the Mermaids weren't people who could be trifled with as well. Not only do they have the loyal Whale tribe and Swordfish tribe, their own fighting strength was formidable as well. The Queen believed that as long as they have time, they would be able to amass an army that can extinguish the Sea Dragons in one swoop.

Luo Luo looked at the Queen and didn't talk about Zhao Hai anymore. She then looked at the Queen and said, "Your Majesty, I also checked the records about the Sea Dragons yesterday and found out that the Sea Dragons didn't exist during the fight with the Divine Race."

When the Queen heard Luo Luo, she couldn't help but reply, "There are no Sea Dragons? What does that mean?"

Luo Luo replied, "Your Majesty, during the major war against the Divine Race where our Mermaid Race had participated, the Dragons were there as well, but they were on the side of the Divine Race. When the God was defeated, the Dragons didn't have anywhere else to go but retreat to the Accra Mountains. However, part of them decided to ran to the sea and requested refuge from us. The Sea King pitied them and allowed them to thrive here. Afterwards, those Dragons married some Fishmen and eventually spawned the Sea Dragon Race."

Chapter 615 – Curious Fishman Race

When the Queen heard Luo Luo, her expression couldn't help but change, "So you're saying that only after the war did the Sea Dragons came to existence? Did the Divine Race intended that in order to deal with us?"

Luo Luo shook her head and said, "You really can't say that, after all, that was a long time ago. My speculations is that the Divine Race only got contact with the Sea Dragons recently, which prompted them to deal with us. Otherwise, they wouldn't have waited for tens of thousands of years in order to revolt."

The Queen nodded, "It would be impossible for the Sea Dragons to hold off on attacking us. However, we can still affirm that the Sea Dragons are a bunch of ungrateful bastards!"

Luo Luo also held anger in her expression. When she checked the records, she couldn't help but get irritated the more she read on. These Sea Dragons were too shameless. The Mermaids had given them shelter but they still ended up rebelling.

Then the Queen coldly snorted and said, "Sea Dragon race, you just wait. Luo Luo, make sure that everything mister Zhao Hai needs gets fulfilled. Maybe he can change the flow of this war."

Luo Luo nodded before turning around to leave. The Queen coldly snorted and then mumbled, "Sea Dragon Race, good, good. You actually think that you can rule the entire Ark Continent?"

When Zhao Hai and the others returned to their room, Laura looked at Zhao Hai in confusion and said, "Brother Hai, what just happened? Why did you suddenly became arrogant?"

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "In any business, expressing your power is the one of the most important things. Don't forget that we had formed an alliance with the Mermaid clan. And since we are now allies, we need to see ourselves as equals. If we show our

weakness, then they would lose confidence in us.” Then Zhao Hai opened the monitor and played the video of Luo Luo and the Queen’s meeting.

After listening to the Queen and Luo Luo, the face of Zhao Hai and the others couldn’t help but turn ugly. They didn’t think that the Sea Dragons would actually have such a history with the Fishmen. If they were indeed a chess piece of the Divine Race, then the Divine Race was too terrifying.

Laura looked at the monitor before turning to Zhao Hai, “Brother Hai, do you think that the Sea Dragons were intentionally placed there by the Divine Race?”

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “I don’t think so. If they were, then they wouldn’t have waited for so long. Then when the Radiant Church was its most formidable, they would’ve already cooperated and conquered the entire continent.”

Laura and the others nodded, then Zhao Hai sighed and said, “But no matter what, we must deal with the Sea Dragons. When the time comes, we can just interrogate the Sea Dragons, then we can uncover the truth.”

Laura and the others nodded again. Then Zhao Hai change the scene of the monitor, showing the preparations of the Fishmen.

At this time, the places nearby the small island had become very busy. People of the Whale tribe and the Swordfish tribe have been sent out to grab all of the wild magic beasts on the surrounding waters. Moreover, the Queen had also sent another command making all of the other Fishmen to go full scale in their capture of beasts and had all of them sent to the island.

Zhao Hai was very calm when he saw the strength of the Fishmen. In just one day, they had actually managed to have 100 thousand beasts sent to the island.

For them to only take one day to collect 100 thousand beasts and

had them sent to the island was terrifying. There were already a lot of magic beasts that were captured. However, Zhao Hai didn't appear, the Queen didn't send word to him either.

The next morning, after having their breakfast, Lola arrived and invited Zhao Hao over to the Great Hall. Besides the Queen, Luo Luo was present as well. But Luo Luo looked just like an ordinary servant right now, with her head lowered in obedience. Besides Luo Luo, there were also a Turtle Fishman and Whale Fishman present.

Zhao Hai felt strange, how could this Whale Fishman able to appear in the Great Hall. With their bodies, it was impossible for them to go up using the stone pillars. They may have other ways to come in. Zhao Hao decided to ask Cai'er about this later.

Upon seeing Zhao Hai arrive, the Queen nodded and said, "Mister Zhao Hai, come. Let me introduce you to the captain of the island guards, the Whale Fishman Dashan and the guard commander, the Turtle Fishman Jintai."

Zhao Hai looked at these two and identified them. The Whale was the one who escorted him to the island while the Turtle was the one who brought them up to the palace.

Zhao Hai bowed to the two and then said, "Nice to meet you. This Zhao Hai thanks the two of you for delivering me here."

They also returned Zhao Hai's courtesy, but didn't dare to utter a word. Then they returned to stand by the Queen's side. The Queen then turned to Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, we've already collected 100 thousand magic beasts. Please have a look at them."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Alright, I'll be heading there now. Your Majesty, please allow this one to excuse himself first."

The Queen nodded as she waved her hand and said, "Then I'll have to trouble mister. Dashan, Jintai, make sure to take care of mister Zhao Hai's every single need." Then the two issued their

agreement before giving the Queen a bow and then leaving the Hall along with Zhao Hai.

When they got out, the turtles were already prepared for them. Zhao Hai and the others then stepped on top of the turtles before they jumped down from the pool and then disappeared.

Zhao Hai didn't have time to pay attention to anything right now. When the turtles entered the mounds, Zhao Hai felt that he was riding on a roller coaster. And the speed was much much more than back on Earth.

This was the first time that Laura and the others had experience this, so they couldn't help but scream. But since they were already 9th rank experts, it only took them a while before they calmed down.

Back when they were heading up, Zhao Hai reckoned that they had taken about an hour. But now that they were going down, it only took them a few minutes to do so. In a blink of an eye, they were already on the sea's surface.

Zhao Hai turned his head to look at Laura and the others. He wanted to see if they were frightened. But when he saw their expressions, Zhao Hai felt relief. Although Laura and the others had been scared, their current expressions revealed their enjoyment.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile bitterly. He actually felt that women were strange beings, they were too full of contradictions. They liked delicious food, but they were also afraid to get fat. They think that roller coasters were scary, but only to end up enjoying the ride.

Zhao Hai shook his head as he forced a smile before he turned to Jintai and said, "Commander Jintai, please take me to see those magic beasts."

Jintai turned his head and smiled faintly, "I'll have to be unfair

to mister Zhao Hai. I cannot stay in this place for too long because of my duties. However, Dashan will come here and lead you to the place.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he looked at Jintai and said, “Thank you commander. But Commander Jintai, how would be be able to enter and exit this place?”

Jintai smiled and said, “Mister doesn’t need to worry. The Queen herself sent word that Mister and your wives are free to move in the Mermaid territory. Nobody will restrict your freedom.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Alright. Then I’ll have to thank Her Majesty. My wives are very curious about this place. Even I am compelled to look around.”

Jintai smiled, “Then Mister is very welcome here. The Mermaid domain is very beautiful. Moreover, the Royal tribe is very hospitable. I believe that they would quickly become friends with your wives.” Then after he said this, a huge bulge suddenly appeared on the sea’s surface. Then Dashan’s mountainous figure suddenly appeared.

After Dashan appeared, he immediately gave Zhao Hai a bow and said, “Mister, please come with me. I’ll go lead you to see the magic beasts.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he rode on Dashan’s whale mount. When Laura and the others were about to board, Zhao Hai smiled to them and said, “You go play in the meantime. I won’t be long.”

When they heard Zhao Hai, the women couldn’t help but stare before their eyes suddenly lit up. “Can we really play? Good, Fantastic!”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and then turned to Jintai and said, “Commander Jintai I will have to trouble you, I will certainly come back soon.”

Jintai smiled faintly and said, “Mister can rest assured” Then

Zhao Hai gave Jintai a bow before he turned to Dashan and said, "Captain Dashan, let's go." Dashan nodded, then he commanded his mount to move towards an island.

Soon after Zhao Hai left the Mermaid island, he had arrived at a nearby island where a large number of Fishmen were present. These Fishmen had brought a lot of magic beasts. These beasts were all alive, some of them were wild while some were struggling.

When Zhao Hai saw this scene, he couldn't help but stare. He turned his head to Dashan and said, "Captain Dashan, dead beasts are fine. Even if they are alive, they would still end up dead in my hands. I need them to be dead before I can turn them to undead."

When Dashan heard Zhao Hai, he nodded and then said, "Alright, mister, please wait a bit." Then Dashan turned his head to the Fishmen and said, "Kill those magic beasts, and then you can leave."

The Fishmen gawked, but they still obeyed. They pulled out all kinds of weapons and killed all of the magic beasts that they've brought.[1]

However, after killing these magic beasts, the Fishmen didn't leave. Every one of them looked curiously at Zhao Hai. Seeing their appearances, Zhao Hai couldn't help but stare. Then he changed his thinking and understood what was going on. These Fishmen might be aware of what he was about to do. They haven't seen a Dark Mage make undead before, therefore, they were curious to see what it looked like.

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and didn't say anything. He looked at the 100 thousand magic beasts piled in front of him. Moreover, since some of these magic beasts were quite big, the pile looked just like a hill. Zhao Hai pulled out his Blood Ghost Staff before he muttered some fake incantations. Then he waved his staff as a black gas appeared and surrounded the pile of Magic Beasts. The Fishmen looked at the mass of black gas as it enveloped the pile of

beasts.

Before long, the black gas had vanished. But what the Fishmen saw after was something that made them scream out in alarm!

Chapter 616 – Dangerous Character

The pile of dead magic beasts had now turned into a pile of bones. There was no blood nor flesh found, only bones were present.

This gave a very strong impact to those who were present. The Fishmen couldn't help but feel a chill. And at this time, more shocking things happened, the pile of bones had started moving!

Under the gazes of the Fishmen, each bone of that pile started to move. The bones then started rolling into the sea before slowly forming up and lining themselves. The big ones were at the bottom while the small beasts were at the top.

Before long, a hundred thousand magic beasts had arranged themselves in a cube formation, filling the space of the surrounding sea. The Fishmen couldn't help but retreat as their expression changed. They wanted to be as far from these undead as possible.

Seeing the Fishmen retreat, Zhao Hai moved slightly and with an intention, the Undead beasts suddenly vanished. The only ones left behind were two turtle type beasts.

Zhao Hai jumped on top of the undead turtle and then bowed to Dashan, "I thank captain Dashan. I shall be leaving first, I want to take a look at what my wives are doing. The captain doesn't need to accompany me any longer." The turtle under Zhao Hai moved its four limbs as it slowly swam towards Mermaid island. But at this time, Dashan still hasn't recovered.

Only when Zhao Hai was close to Mermaid Island did Dashan recover. His face couldn't help but change as he turned his head to look at Zhao Hai. His eyes were full of dread, in his mind, Zhao Hai had become a very dangerous person. This fellow can actually carry hundreds of undead beasts with him. Such a person being in Mermaid Island was a very unsafe factor.

After thinking about this, Dashan immediately urged his mount as he followed along Zhao Hai towards Mermaid Island. While Zhao Hai was looking for his wives, Dashan went to look for Jintai. He thinks that monitoring Zhao Hai's every move was imperative to their own safety.

Zhao Hai was not aware of what Dashan was thinking. He just stood on top of his undead turtle as he looked around Mermaid Island. Mermaid Island was very large and was surrounded by numerous reefs. Some Mermaids playing on the reefs could also be seen from time to time.

While Zhao Hai was intrigued, the Mermaids were curious about Zhao Hai as well. Sensing their gazes, Zhao Hai did his best to not meet their sight. He didn't know the customs here, so he might get into trouble if he did look them in the eye.

But what made Zhao Hai feel strange was the fact that he hasn't seen an old Mermaid. All he had seen looked like young beautiful women. Even inside the palace, Zhao Hai couldn't spot an old Mermaid while using the monitor.

Before long, Zhao Hai had finally found Laura and the others. They were currently sitting in a reef while chatting with some Mermaids. The group looked very jolly.

Meg had sharp eyes, so when she saw Zhao Hai, she immediately waved towards him. Zhao Hai directed the turtle to go forward before he looked at them and said, "You go and play some more. I'll go and discuss some matters with Her Majesty. Right, I'll also be leaving some turtles here to save Commander Jintai the trouble." Then he withdrew some turtle type undead magic beasts. Then he nodded towards Laura and the others before heading back to the middle stone pillar.

When he reached the stone pillar, Zhao Hai had found that Dashan and Jintai were already there. When he went close, he discovered that their expression had changed.

Zhao Hao carefully looked into their eyes and found that there was a hint of fear on Dashan's eyes. However, although there was still fear in Jintai's eyes, there was also a hint of excitement mixed in as well.

Zhao Hai didn't think too much about it. He came here to cooperate with the Mermaids and not to make enemies out of them. So as long as the Mermaids treat him as an ally, then Zhao Hai believed that they won't attack him.

When Zhao Hai came forward, Jintai and Dashan immediately gave him a salute. Zhao Hai can feel that the greeting this time was more sincere than before..

Zhao Hai immediately returned the gesture before he turned to Jintai and said, "Commander, I've already given Laura and the others some turtles. You don't need to send people to fetch them. Right, can I go see the Queen right now?"

Jintai nodded and said, "Come with me." Then he used his mount as they swam against the stone pillar's current. Zhao Hai gave Dashan a nod before following Jintai up.

When Dashan looked at Zhao Hai's departing back, he couldn't help but let out a long sigh. Ever since he saw Zhao Hai turn those magic beasts into undead, he had started to feel immense pressure when seeing Zhao Hai. But now that he had left, Dashan felt relief.

Dashan looked at the pillar and then said, "It seems like the Sea Dragons have terrifying bad luck." Then he shook his head as he submerged into the water.

Zhao Hai, along with Jintai, had returned to the big pool. After reaching the shore, Zhao Hai immediately stored his undead magic beast into the Space. Then he gave Jintai a salute before heading towards the Great Hall.

But before Zhao Hai reached the Great Hall, Lola came to greet him. When Lola saw Zhao Hai, she couldn't help but gawk slightly.

Then she immediately said, “Mister Zhao Hai, Her Majesty is already waiting for you inside.”

Zhao Hai nodded. Then Lola turned around and led Zhao Hai to walk towards the Great Hall. Upon arriving inside, Zhao Hai saw that Luo Luo was sitting right beside the Queen as if telling her something. The Queen was also listening as she nodded from time to time.

After Zhao Hai and Lola greeted the Queen, the Queen nodded and said, “I didn’t expect mister to come back so soon. Did mister’s summoning go smoothly?”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “Very smooth. Your Majesty doesn’t need to worry about it. I can go to the battlefield anytime you want. You should know that a Dark Mage’s power is at its peak on the battlefield.”

The Queen nodded and said, “I ask mister to wait for two days. In two days, the Whales, Swordfishes, and Turtles would send an army towards the frontlines. Mister can then go along with them.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Then I’ll go with Your Majesty’s arrangement. If it’s possible, I’d like to ask Your Majesty to give me some information about the Sea Dragons and their army. Is that alright?”

The Queen nodded, “That’s not a problem. Mister can rest assured, those materials would get to you as soon as possible.”

Zhao Hai nodded and then bowed to the Queen, “Then this Zhao Hai would like to be excused. If there are more magic beasts, please send someone to inform me.”

The Queen nodded, “Alright, if Mister has something he wants, then don’t hesitate to send word.” Zhao Hai nodded, and then expressed his gratitude before bowing to the Queen and then leaving.

When Zhao Hai left, Luo Luo immediately turned to the Queen

and said, “Your Majesty, this Zhao Hai is too dangerous. He just waved and turned a hundred thousand magic beasts into undead. Moreover, he can actually store them somewhere. Such a person living in this place is very dangerous.”

The Queen smiled faintly and said, “No need to be worried about Zhao Hai. He is our ally, the stronger he is, the more advantages we’ll have. Rest assured, no bad thing will happen.”

Luo Luo replied, “Now that I saw what Dark Mages are, I can understand why the continent deemed them to be emissaries of evil. They are really frightening. In a blink of an eye, the hundred thousand magic beasts had turned into bone. It was too scary. I really don’t know how he got his wives. He didn’t just snatch them right?”

The Queen looked at Luo Luo and smiled, “Luo Luo, don’t judge a person by their outside appearance. The Radiant Church was incomparably sacred in the surface, but was actually the worst people. And although Mister Zhao Hai uses Dark Magic, he actually has not injured an innocent person. Luo Luo, remember this, strength doesn’t describe good or evil, it’s the person himself that decides to be good or evil. Understood?”

Luo Luo nodded, “I understand. Your Majesty, with the addition of Mister Zhao Hai, I’ve become much more confident in our chances to win this war. Also, Your Majesty, what did mister Zhao Hai mean when he said that a Dark Mage is most powerful in the battlefield?”

The Queen smiled and said, “What does the battlefield have the most? It’s dead people. A Dark Mage can turn those corpses into undead. Moreover, those undead can also lead the opposing party to lose morale. Think about it, you have comrades who you’ve shared happiness and fear together, then when those comrades dies, they suddenly stand up and start attacking you. At that time, would you have the guts to turn your weapons against your friends? Or will you turn around and flee?”

Upon hearing the Queen, Luo Luo's face couldn't help but get pale. Although she has not gone to the battlefield, she had participated in magic beast hunting groups. If what the Queen said happened to her, then she would collapse immediately! The scene described by the Queen had Luo Luo shivering in fear.

The Queen looked at Luo Luo and felt that she had scared her too much. So she patted Luo Luo's shoulder and said, "It's because of this that the Dark Mages have become the most powerful Mages before the arrival of the Radiant Church. But there were also Dark Mages that loved to slaughter civilians in order to turn them into undead. Such Dark Mages are meant to be destroyed.

Luo Luo nodded, then the Queen looked at Luo Luo and continued, "You don't have to doubt Mister Zhao Hai's morals as well. The status of each of his wives aren't low.. Since you haven't gone to the continent, they you didn't know that the story of Mister Zhao Hai and his wives has spread to all Human nations. Mister Zhao Hai is a person who many people envy."

Luo Luo looked at the Queen and said, "Your Majesty, is Mister Zhao Hai really famous in the continent? But he is a Dark Mage, does nobody fear him?"

The Queen shook her head and said, "Mister Zhao Hai's reputation on the continent can only be considered to be normal. But when commoners mention his name, they couldn't help but call him vicious and merciless. He had turned hundreds of thousands of Aksu Empire troops into undead in a single night. Hearing that, wouldn't you also think that he was vicious and merciless?"

Chapter 617 – The Army Departs

When Luo Luo heard the Queen, her face couldn't help but change, "Your Majesty, is that true? Did Mister Zhao Hai really turn hundreds of thousands of Aksu Empire soldiers into undead in one night? Then isn't he a bad person? Why would the people on the continent only call him vicious and merciless?"

The Queen forced a smile and said, "People in the continent don't differ too much with the Fishmen, they also respect strength. Mister Zhao Hai is strong, so nobody dared to offend him. Besides, mister Zhao Hai didn't kill the Aksu Empire soldiers with no reason at all. The Aksu Empire had sent those soldiers to Mister Zhao Hai's territory, claiming that they owned the land. Because of that, Mister Zhao Hai had no choice but be impolite."

Luo Luo frowned and said, "Even so, mister Zhao Hai is too cold hearted. Why does he have to kill those hundreds of thousands of people?"

The Queen smiled bitterly and said, "If mister Zhao Hai didn't kill them, then he wouldn't have reached his current height. You should have heard mister Zhao Hai's purpose in coming here. The entire Ark Continent's future is at risk, he even went to the Northern Icefields personally in order to retrieve the Beastmen's Beast God's Spear. Such a person cannot be said to be cold hearted. He's someone who would not forgive his enemies while also be the one who would shelter his allies. His ideals are that simple."

When she heard the Queen, Luo Luo couldn't help but nod. It was not only the others, their Mermaid clan respects strength as well. Protecting allies and suppressing enemies was a very simple ideology in this world. Even in the Fishmen this idea is found every day. It wasn't anything strange.

The Queen gave a sigh and said, "In fact, the Sea Dragons were doing this as well. The Sharks and Electric Eels had become their

close allies while they suppressed those who wouldn't side with them. It was just unfortunate that we were too loose with our surveillance. We weren't able to discover their ambitions in time."

Luo Luo also sighed, because their business dealings with the continent was short, their commodities had become scarce. Because of this, the Mermaids had decided to establish the Sea God's Merchant Union and bought what they need from the Humans. Because the Mermaids were too focused on this matter, they were unable to see the moves done by the Sea Dragons. By the time they had found out, it was already too late."

Because the Mermaids had concentrated on business, the Sea Dragons had used the opportunity to revolt, catching the Mermaids off guard. But it was fortunate that they now had a strong ally that was Zhao Hai. The Sea Dragons wouldn't be living greatly this time.

The Queen turned to Luo Luo and said, "Luo Luo, in two days, Mister Zhao Hai will go along with the others to head towards the frontlines. You should go with them as well. Although mister Zhao Hai is strong, he is still unfamiliar with the Fishman Race. You must help him with this aspect. It would be best if we defeat the Sea Dragons in one fell swoop. But even if we cannot, at the very least, push them into a defensive position. Understand?"

Luo Luo nodded and said, "I understand, Your Majesty."

The Queen nodded and said, "What are mister Zhao Hai's wives doing now? Are they doing fine? Remember to make ties with those women. Mister Zhao Hai's strength is formidable, and he is a famous merchant as well. It would be good for us to have a good relationship with him. Moreover, his wives also held great influence in the continent, don't offend them."

Luo Luo smiled and said, "Your Majesty, feel relieved. Mister Zhao Hai's wives have been doing very well. They are very friendly and have also been very good friends with our sisters."

The Queen smiled and then said, “Then that’s good. This matter might be our Fishman Race’s opportunity. If we can cooperate with Mister Zhao Hai, then perhaps we can openly do business with the Humans later on. After all, the Radiant Church’s influence had waned in the continent. Alright, go prepare yourself, Luo Luo. You still have to follow mister Zhao Hai in two days.” Luo Luo nodded and then bowed before turning around to leave.

Zhao Hai was currently inside the Space, looking at the monitor. The monitor had shown the conversation between the Queen and Luo Luo. The Queen’s words made Zhao Hai very surprised. He didn’t expect the Queen to have this much faith in him. But this was a good thing for Zhao Hai. Dealing with the Sea Dragons wasn’t a difficult matter. In fact, those hundred thousand marine beast undead were already enough to do it. After all, these undead are very high leveled.

After Luo Luo retreated, Zhao Hai changed the monitor to another place. Then, Zhao Hai sat quietly inside. This time, his trip to the Fishmen had brought him great profits. For the Mermaid Clan to be willing to be his allies was a good thing for Zhao Hai. At the same time, Zhao Hai had found out his assessment in the continent, Vicious and Ruthless!

“Vicious and Ruthless! Hehe, it seems like I embody those two words now.” Zhao Hai muttered in the living room.

Nothing happened for the rest of the day. However, there were still people who kept bringing all kinds of Magic Beasts to mermaid island. But this time, they had brought dead ones, not alive.

However, Zhao Hai was not very anxious in turning these into undead, at the same time, the Mermaids didn’t look for him. On the next day, Zhao Hai went down to turn those magic beasts into undead. Although there were still some Fishmen in the surroundings, their expressions weren’t curiosity anymore, but it was fear.

After staying for two days, the Fishman Army had finally been gathered. Although the Sea Dragons had 10 million troops, Zhao Hai was still shocked to see the reinforcements that was gathered by the Mermaid Clan. This was an army of no less than 2 million people!

Seeing these numbers made Zhao Hai numb. He became speechless about the population of the Fishmen. They had just casually recruited 2 million people. While a rebel can come up with hundreds upon thousands of troops.

Zhao Hai was somewhat happy. Fortunately, the Fishmen wouldn't be able to survive on land for too long. Otherwise, the entire Continent might have already been seized by them.

This time, the Queen personally delivered Zhao Hai outside Mermaid Island. This made the other Fishmen shocked, they didn't expect the Queen to have this high respect for Zhao Hai.

In fact those people had misunderstood the Queen this time. In addition to sending Zhao Hai out, she also wanted to gave an address to the troops. The one who would lead the troops this time was Dashan.

Dashan was Mermaid Island's Guard Captain. But since the situation of the frontlines had become urgent, and in addition to Dashan having prior contact with Zhao Hai, the Queen decided to just send Dashan along with this army in order to cooperate with Zhao Hai much smoother.

The vowing ceremony of the Fishmen was the same as the Humans. The Queen told a few encouraging words before assigning Dashan as the commander of the army. But at this time, Zhao Hai was now inside the body of a Blade Scale Whale.

This whale was the one from Zhao Hai's Space. He had turned this Blade Scale Whale into an undead that was the same as Alien. It's build had given them the opportunity to make it into rooms. And since the Blade Scale Whale was bigger than Alien, its room

inside was very big as well. Zhao Hai had a living room, bedroom, as well as a bath installed inside.

Naturally, these things were only there as decoration. Zhao Hai would spend most of his time inside the Space.

The Blade Scale Whale was completely preserved. The layer of skin outside has been preserved as well. However, its skin had been turned transparent. One could clearly see the outside while being inside the whale.

Most importantly, there was no water that can come into the whale, so there weren't any seawater inside. At the same time, Zhao Hai can also use magic in order to ensure that they have ample amounts of air to breathe inside.

At this time, Zhao Hai was inside the whale along with Laura and the others. There was only one outsider inside, and it was the person who the Queen had sent in order to help Zhao Hai, the little mermaid Luo Luo.

The mermaids didn't have their own unique mounts. However, they had a peculiar ability that nobody had. They can turn any marine beast into their own mount. Naturally, there were also some Mermaids who decided to raise their own beasts as their mounts, but those instances were rare.

The Queen told Zhao Hai that Luo Luo would be there to help him be familiar with the various Fishman races. But she wouldn't interfere with Zhao Hai's fight.

Actually, there was no need for the Queen to tell him since he already knew about Luo Luo. But he didn't say anything and just politely invited Luo Luo inside the blade scale whale. He also prepared a room filled with sea water inside.

The reinforcement army slowly went towards the frontline. Although they had passed through some small tribes, these people were all under the rule of the Mermaids. Some small tribes even

dispatched their members to aid the reinforcement army.

At the same time, there were also some Fishman tribes who would bring over some marine beast corpses. Naturally, Zhao Hai didn't become polite as he made them into undead on the spot. There were also some beasts that the army had taken along the way, so they were also handed over to Zhao Hai.

Dashan had calculated that the amount of undead that Zhao Hai had made these days had now reached over five hundred thousand. Such quantity was astonishing, it was now a fourth the amount of the reinforcing army.

At this point, the shock and fear that Dashan held towards Zhao Hai had gradually turned numb. Even if Zhao Hai managed to turn all of the beasts in the ocean into undead, he wouldn't be surprised anymore.

Although their number is huge, their advancement wasn't slow. This was the sea, not the land, so the army doesn't need to worry about terrain, grass, nor food. This was the ocean where there were too many kinds of low level magic beasts. These people cannot even finish eating their food, much less worry about it.

Chapter 618 – Defensive Line

It was already dark, and they were already deep in the sea and could only barely get some sunlight. However, there were still a lot of them to the point where many smaller Fishmen have been pushed near the surface, which made them the target for some aerial magic beasts. During their day trip they didn't rest even for a bit, therefore, they needed to get some sleep in the evening.

Zhao Hai and the others were now inside the Blade Scale Whale's living room. It had been a few days since they had gone out of Mermaid Island. However, they didn't have much time for each other because Luo Luo was with them. And since Laura and the others had become close friends with her, they would oftentimes sleep with each other. Because of that, Zhao Hai had very small opportunities to talk with his wives.

Today, Luo Luo had finally rested on her own. So Zhao Hai and the others gained the opportunity to gather inside the Space. Zhao Hai looked at Laura and the others' expression, they seemed like they hadn't had a good sleep for a while. Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile and said, "What's wrong? You haven't been resting in the Space lately, didn't have a good sleep?"

Laura smiled bitterly and said, "I really don't know why, but Mermaids are very cold. It would be strange if one can sleep comfortably with them."

Lizzy nodded as well and said, "But I still envy the Mermaids. Surprisingly, they cannot look old. No matter how high their age is, they would still look like they are 20 years old."

This was the first time that Zhao Hai had heard of this matter. He couldn't help but look at Lizzy and said, "Oh, is that it? No wonder I can't see any old mermaids during our stay in Mermaid Island. Also, why aren't there any men in their clan? How do they reproduce?"

When Megan heard Zhao Hai, her face couldn't help but turn red, then she looked at Zhao Hai and said, "The Mermaids have a secret ability. After a certain age, as long as they eat a special fruit from mermaid island, they would get pregnant and bear a child. There is also another way, once a Queen reaches 40 years old, she can use a special method to make an egg of which little mermaids would hatch from. But this method would harm the Queen's vitality. Something that the fruit would not."

Zhao Hai stared, then he muttered and said, "So it's like that. No wonder I can't see any men. Haha. So what have you been doing in Mermaid Island? Did you have fun? Also, did you manage to see the fruit?"

Megan looked at Zhao Hai's expression and couldn't help but chuckle, "I already know which question you want answered. And yes, we did see it. The fruit only grows in Mermaid Island. The fruit is in the root itself, and it directly absorbs nutrients from the sea, it was very mysterious. We begged for half a day before they allowed us to get a section of the root. Cai'er has placed it in the warehouse."

Zhao Hai replied, "Oh? I didn't know about this. Cai'er, quickly show me the root." Cai'er nodded and then took the root out.

After the root was taken out, a prompt immediately came from the Space, "Discovered a root that is full of vitality. The vitality of everything in the Space has been improved. If planted in the Space, the root's vitality would get stronger and stronger. Space has levelled up to level 59. Looking forward to the Host's further efforts."

Zhao Hai stared before he became exhilarated with joy. He immediately had Cai'er pick a place to plant the root. In the end, the root was planted right beside the villa with Cai'er taking good care of it.

Megan and the others didn't expect the root to upgrade the

Space. After Zhao Hai planted the roots, he couldn't help but turn to Laura and the others before laughing happily, "My wives, you really did great this time. Let this one give you a present. We'll work hard in making the next generation!" Then he pulled Megan into the villa. Although Laura and the others were blushing, they still followed behind....

The army had travelled for 13 days by now, at this point, they were already in a place not too far away from the frontlines. They were currently preparing to take a rest so that they can reach the frontlines in one go.

Naturally, Zhao Hai didn't object to this. He also wasn't idling in these past few days. In addition to turning Magic Beasts into undead, Zhao Hai had also been learning how to lead an underwater army from Dashan.

In the war between Humans and the Beastmen, Zhao Hai had managed to learn how the Humans and the Beastmen lead their troops. However, the methods used by the Fishmen were different. First, while the Beastmen and Humans needed to worry about logistics, the Fishmen did not, so Zhao Hai didn't need to worry about that aspect anymore. And another was the fact that Fishmen Army can move in three dimensions while the Humans and Beastmen can only use the flat land. Leading and fighting in this three dimensional battlefield was a completely different world to Zhao Hai.

A Human and Beastman Race army's advance was divided into the Vanguard, the Center Army, and the Rear Guard. Those three were the most common formation for any army in the continent. But the Fishmen had a different approach, compared to the continent, the formations of the Fishmen were much more complicated. If the continent's army can be seen as three blocks, a Fishman army would be just like a Rubik's Cube. Each face of the cube would have 9 armies while the most important officials of the army would be at the core of the cube.

This way of leading an army made Zhao Hai's eyes blank. This kind of formation can not only attack, it can also defend properly while at the same time, leaving enough room for retreat. There were a lot of possibilities with such a formation, it was really an eye-opener.

This arrangement of the Fishmen was naturally much more difficult to manage compared to Human armies. It was great that they didn't need to worry about logistics. Otherwise, Zhao Hai reckoned that even those Fishman generals would have trouble in going to war.

Dashan is the captain of the Mermaid clan's guards, so his ability was certainly not average. Although this army comprised of 2 million people, Dashan still managed to easily take command. Looking at him made Zhao Hai learn a lot.

In order to learn how Dashan was leading the army, Zhao Hai stayed close to him these past few days. He even had Cai'er record his movements. Before Zhao Hai went to take a rest at night, he would repeatedly look and review Dashan's way of leading his troops.

Laura and the others had become curious as well, so they also joined Zhao Hai's research. In the end, Zhao Hai had found out that he had no talent in leading an army. If he were to be a commander, he can only be a vice or someone who managed a small division. If they really had him lead, who knows what would happen?

What surprised Zhao Hai was the fact that Lizzy and Megan seemed to have talent in leading armies. If they were to lead an army, they would surely find it quite easy.

As for Laura, she was already a mighty force in commerce, so her skills in commanding an army was only on par with Zhao Hai. The two almost had the same talent.

Seeing this situation, Zhao Hai decided to stop studying and just

had Megan and Lizzy learn it instead. In any case, they had nothing else to do. Generally, they would go and help Laura in managing the Buda Clan's matters. But in fact, Laura alone was enough to do all those things. But it was good that they now had something else to do, this made them much happier with this development than Zhao Hai.

However, they still couldn't be considered genuine commanders at this point. After all, the things that they had learned this time were only about Battle Formations. They still had very few knowledge about the battlefield itself.

Zhao Hai wasn't under anyone's command, so as soon as the battle against the Sea Dragons start, they would have a chance to lead an army. This would give the two some experience in combat.

The next morning, Zhao Hai and the others hurried on towards the frontlines. Zhao Hai also asked Luo Luo about the current situation there.

The frontline was in a very special terrain, on its left side was a trench. This trench was called the Devil Trench by the Fishmen because of the cold undercurrent present in its deeper parts. This undercurrent was invisible, and it doesn't matter if it's a beast or Fishman, once they get in contact with this undercurrent, they would immediately be frozen to death. And after getting washed away, they would immediately shatter into pieces. Most importantly, this place was also the domain of the devil octopuses.

The devil octopuses were top level magic beasts of the sea. Every grown devil octopus possessed nearly 9th rank strength. And they were the only beings that were able to survive in the trench. Fortunately, devil octopuses rarely went out of their territory. But even so, this area was still labelled as forbidden by the Fishman population.

On the right side of the frontline was also another restricted area, the Soul Sucking Reef! This reef was densely covered in corals. All

of those who went inside it had never managed to come out. The Fishmen had already sent people to examine the place. They didn't go too deep, but they understood that the situation inside was indeed very alarming.

In Soul Sucking Reef, as long as someone goes in, they would immediately lose all sense of direction. They would find themselves to be walking around in circles. This kind of trap works in all directions, not just in two dimensions. Additionally, there were also poisonous magic beasts inside. The threat that those magic beasts posed weren't something to be scoffed at either. Once you are poisoned, you won't be spared.

Because of these two places, the Mermaid Clan had decided to place their defensive line here. This place was the most appropriate place to establish their defense. The ocean was just too big, and since the Fishmen didn't build any cities, it would be nearly impossible just to find a place to bunker up.

While depending on the terrain, the Mermaid Clan managed to establish a defensive line of about a thousand li(500km). Although the present army only comprised of 6 million troops, they were still able to block the attacks of the Sea Dragons for more than a month.

Zhao Hai's army was only the first batch of reinforcements. There would still be a second and third batch that would be coming in the next few days. After those armies arrive, the true battle would start.

However, since Zhao Hai had joined, everything had suddenly changed. In the past few days, Zhao Hai had already amassed over 1 million marine undead beasts. Additionally, he can also turn any corpse into undead at any time.

Chapter 619 – Azure Dragon Battle Snail

When Zhao Hai arrived at the frontline, he was stunned. He wasn't expecting the frontline to be like this.

The way the Fishmen set-up their defensive line was completely different from the Humans. A Human's defensive line would have to be a castle or some kind of wall or so on. But the Fishmen's defensive line was a completely different thing. There were no structures present whatsoever. The place can only be described as extremely clean. It was a place that was unusually clean for a place where slaughter would happen constantly.

Zhao Hai looked around and sure enough, he couldn't see an army on the left and right sides of the defensive line. Only in the middle, about a thousand miles away, was an army of Fishmen. They didn't have any camps and were just arranged in a square matrix pattern. These squares would comprise of people of the same tribe. There were nearly a thousand squares in this area.

These squares were all three dimensional. Some were close to the surface while some were close to the bottom of the sea. There were cubes all around, it would make someone stare for a long time.

After Zhao Hai and the others arrived, they didn't immediately join the defense army. Instead, they stopped at a distance before the defensive line. Zhao Hai knew that this was due to Dashan. If they joined the defense army, they might disrupt their present formation. And breaking a defensive formation was not something to joke about.

After the reinforcing army stopped, Dashan went towards Zhao Hai's Blade Scale Whale. Zhao Hai was now aware of the benefits of being a Dark Mage. It was the fact that nobody dared to bother you. The more than 2 million troops, from the beginning until now, had stayed far away from Zhao Hai's Blade Scale Whale. One could even clearly see that they would take an effort to circumvent

the Blade Scale Whale whenever the fishermen passed by it.

Regarding this situation, Zhao Hai can only bitterly smile. There was no other way around this. The ways of a Dark Mage were really strange, too strange that it would inflict fear on those around them.

Seeing Dashan approaching him, Zhao Hai immediately went towards the mouth of the whale. When he reached the mouth, Zhao Hai used water magic to keep the water from coming in before he had the whale open its mouth.

After some time, Dashan had finally arrived and saw that Zhao Hai was already standing there. He immediately gave Zhao Hai a bow and said, "I've seen mister Zhao Hai. I ask mister Zhao Hai to join me in meeting General Luo Ying."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Alright, please take the lead, Captain." Dashan nodded and then turned his mount towards a large fishman formation.

Zhao Hai commanded the Blade Scale Whale to follow Dashan. There were nobody else beside Dashan, he was completely alone. Zhao Hai did the same as well, he only had the Blade Scale Whale appear while collecting all other undead. He didn't want a large group of undead to unnecessarily swim all around the place.

Before long, the two of them entered the large formation. Upon entering, Zhao Hai had come across some Fishmen that he hasn't seen before. And all of them had eyes curiously looking at Zhao Hai while Zhao Hai also looked at them curiously.

It didn't take a long time before they reached the core of the entire formation. Most importantly, the core of the formation was also the place where the commander of the army was. While Zhao Hai was still far away, his gaze couldn't help but freeze. In the middle of this large formation was something that made him gawk, it was very enormous conch!

The conch was very enormous, it was nearly 100 meters high, even city walls can only be 30 meters high. This conch was azure, And the patterns on its body looked just like a coiling dragon.

Upon seeing this conch, Zhao Hai couldn't help but gawk. This was because he knew what which being this conch belonged to. It was from the extremely famous Azure Dragon Snail!

Azure Dragon Snails weren't only famous among the Fishmen, even the Humans were in awe of such a being. This snail had two points of importance, first was its defensive capability, and the other was its very formidable support Water Magic.

This Azure Dragon Snail doesn't grow up easily either. It would grow by about 1 meter every ten years. For such an Azure Dragon Snail to reach this big, it should have been living for more than a millenium. If one places this in the continent, it would undoubtedly become an extremely priceless treasure. Even the Fishmen would see this Snail's value as immeasurable.

Laura and the others were at Zhao Hai's side, looking dumbfoundedly on this incomparably huge Azure Dragon Snail. They didn't think that there would be an Azure Dragon Snail this big. One must know that even a young Azure Dragon Snail would be able to block a 9th rank experts attack, showing how strong their defensive capabilities were. And as long as you have an Azure Dragon Snail, your Water Magics would be improved by 300%. Naturally, this support magic was something extremely terrifying in battle.

Even more so with this thousand year old Azure Dragon Snail, its abilities should be endless at this point. This snail could maybe even resist the attacks of several 9th rank experts for quite a long time.

This Azure Dragon Snail was itself a 9th rank magic beast. But for this magic beast, its courage was extremely small. Even a hundred year old 9th rank Azure Dragon Snail would still be afraid of any

8th rank magic beast.

The food of Azure Dragon Snails were also very special. They can only eat one type of seaweed and it was a type of seaweed that was very scarce. Because of this, the population of Azure Dragon Snails was extremely small. In the entire ocean, there might only be one or two more Azure Dragon Snails of this size.

Luo Luo looked at their expressions and couldn't help but feel a sense of pride, with a proud voice she said, "This is our Mermaid clan's special Battle Snail. After generations of refining, this Azure Dragon Snail can block and counter the attacks of six 9th rank experts. For our counter attack against the Sea Dragons, Her Majesty has allowed General Luo Ying to use this Azure Dragon Snail."

It was at this point that Zhao Hai and the others had recovered, the group couldn't help but inhale cold air. This Azure Dragon Snail was unexpectedly very formidable, they didn't expect it to be able to withstand the attacks of six 9th rank experts. One must know that it can't only block, it can retaliate as well. This meant that the power of this snail was more or less equivalent to six 9th rank experts. It was really astonishing.

Most importantly, Luo Luo had mentioned something peculiar. The snail was actually refined by the Mermaids for generations. Does this mean that this Azure Dragon Snail was a product of refining? This information alone is worth the shock.

Fishmen lived their whole lives underwater, this meant that they had close to zero chances of using fire. But it was general knowledge that refinement involved fire of some sort. How could the Mermaid clan use fire to refine this Azure Dragon Snail? This was inconceivable.

After seeing the reactions of Zhao Hai and the others, Luo Luo couldn't help but chuckle as she added, "Is mister surprised by the fact that our Mermaid clan was able to do refining? In fact, this

was largely due to a great Queen from 3000 years ago. This Queen was a 9th rank expert herself, but she was much more interested in crafting. After years of experimentation, she finally invented a way to refine using water. It was a way of refining that uses fire, not water, in order to process the materials. This refining process was very effective as well. Our Mermaid clan's goods might not be as good as the Dwarves, but we can claim that we aren't much worse than those made by the Human Race."

Zhao Hai and the others stared at Luo Luo, this was the first time that they had heard of such a thing. Can someone really use water to refine? That is incredible!

At the same time, Zhao Hai had developed full respect towards that great Queen. Zhao Hai knew that water refinement was completely different from using fire to refine. For that Great Queen to invent this method was a very great feat. If the continent was to learn this, the whole refining theory would be completely turned upside down.

Luo Luo looked at Zhao Hai and said, "We Fishmen can also find some metals underwater. Additionally, there are also beast bones as well as precious stones and special seaweeds. These things can all be refined into weapons of other things. The trident that Dashan uses was made from refining beast bones and precious stones. Not only is its hardness on par with metals, it is also quite tough. Most importantly, it also couldn't be corroded easily. Those kinds of weapons are the most suitable for the Fishmen."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he couldn't bear but sigh, "That Great Queen was really talented. Only a genius could come up with such a method."

Luo Luo proudly nodded, but her expression turned gloomy as she said, "However, this water refining also has a lot of limitations. It's output is quite limited since not all Fishman can use it. The ones who could use this method are only those who belong to my Mermaid Race. Because of that, the amount of people we had given

good weapons only number in the few.”

Zhao Hai nodded, he thought that it was reasonable. If this water refining method had no limitations, then the strength of the whole Fishmen Race would certainly increase explosively. The sea was a whole mass of water. If all the Fishmen were to use this Water Refining method, then wouldn't the ocean become a huge weapon processing factory?

Luo Luo then said, “Millenniums ago, our Mermaid Clan has obtained this Azure Dragon Snail. At that time, the Snail was already dead, only leaving this huge conch behind. After we brought the conch to Mermaid Island, the Queen immediately refined it along with numerous other Mermaids. And after refining this conch for several hundred years, it became like this. At this point, the strength of this Azure Dragon Snail had reached great heights.”

Zhao Hai sighed once again, he was truly amazed this time. Although the Buda Clan had become very strong, it still lacked so much history compared to thousand year old forces. This history had truly shown its might at this moment.

The Mermaid clan was able to make this powerful conch largely due to their hundreds of years of refining. This was something that the Buda Clan would never have, they didn't have such a deep history.

At this time, Zhao Hai and Dashan were not in front of the battle snail. When they were close, they could see how extraordinary this snail was. The draconic image on the snail seems to be able to fly into the skies at any time. And if one looks closely, one would find that there was some metallic sheen to it. This showed how hard it was.

When Zhao Hai's group got close to the snail, several Mermaids swam out of it and blocked them from proceeding.

Chapter 620 – Cone Attack

When Zhao Hai saw the Mermaids, he couldn't help but stare. The Mermaids that he saw before were either wearing shells or a long seaweed gown. He wasn't able to see them wearing any other clothing. Laura and the others also asked the Mermaids about the reason why they don't wear much clothing. The reason was because not wearing anything made them feel the water element much easier. For their cultivation, this was something very good.

But these Mermaids that just came out of the Azure Dragon Snail wore something that Zhao Hai had not seen before. They were all on full body armor, they also had a Magic Staff on their hands.

The armor of these Mermaids seem to be made out of shells and bones of magic beasts. It was dark blue and looked very beautiful. It also had a helmet that made the originally sweet and pretty Mermaids look very heroic.

The Magic Staff on their hands looked very special as well, it was probably made out of crystals. It was a translucent carving that glittered from time to time. At the same time, it also looked quite tough, it might be even possible to use it as a weapon.

Zhao Hai looked at these Mermaids and couldn't help but smile bitterly. These Mermaids are really unique. Not only are they born with an innate affinity for water, they are also innately Water Mages. Moreover, they can also control marine beasts while also having very strong physical strength that was enough to be a threat. They were almost perfect beings.

After the Mermaids blocked Zhao Hai's group, they inspected them first before they gave the two a bow and said, "The General is already waiting for Captain Dashan and Mister Zhao Hai. Please follow us."

Zhao Hai and Dashan nodded, and then swam towards the Azure Dragon Snail. The space inside the snail was not small, however,

Zhao Hai and Dashan's mounts weren't allowed to enter. It seems like it would be difficult for them to make a turn inside.

Zhao Hai turned to Luo Luo and the others and then said, "The space here is not so big, so I need to collect the Blade Scale Whale. Luo Luo, you can swim by yourself. You guys, come with me."

Laura and the others nodded and then gathered to Zhao Hai's side. Then Zhao Hai wielded his staff as a giant bubble surrounded them. After that, Zhao Hai collected the Blade Scale Whale.

Now that the Blade Scale Whale has been collected, the space inside the snail had gotten much bigger. Luo Luo swam towards the other Mermaids and gave them a salute before calling them sisters. The warrior Mermaids also returned Luo Luo's gesture, none of them looked down on her.

Dashan also dismounted from his whale. After that, the group went towards the Azure Dragon Snail and then entered it. After a while, they came into a hall which was made out of animal bones and aquatic plants. The floor as well as some chairs and tables were made out of either bone or wood. All of it was arranged to look like a warrior's hall.

But what made Zhao Hai surprised was the fact that there wasn't a drop of water in this hall. On the innermost part of the hall was a couch, the couch looked like a small bed. And a Mermaid warrior was lying on this couch.

When Zhao Hai's group entered the hall, Dashan and Luo Luo simultaneously bowed towards the Mermaid warrior, "This one has seen General Luo Ying."

Luo Ying looked up to Luo Luo and the others before nodding. Zhao Hai also led Laura and the others and said, "Zhao Hai has seen General Luo Ying"

Luo Ying stood up and then returned Zhao Hai's gesture, "Luo Ying has seen Mister Zhao Hai. Our Mermaid clan is deeply

grateful for Mister Zhao Hai's assistance." Her voice sounded somewhat chilly. Although she had the same attractive features as the other mermaids, she seems quite different. The Queen had an aura of elegance and maturity, Luo Luo gave out an aura of energy, like a beauty under sunlight. But this General appeared somewhat chilly, she was like a beauty that also held a martial aura.

After exchanging greetings, Luo Ying asked Zhao Hai and the others to sit down. Then Luo Ying turned to Dashan and said, "You came just in time. The Sea Dragons have been increasing the intensity of their attacks these past few days. Moreover, they seemed to have a lot of experts that were helping them, causing us heavy losses. At this moment, the defense army has been reduced to four million troops. It's fortunate that you came in order to supplement the losses."

Dashan became shocked, "The Sea Dragons had help? Who?"

Luo Ying shook her head, then her brows wrinkled as she said, "I don't know yet. But they don't seem to be Fishmen. They have been using Dragon Beads in order to repel water."

Zhao Hai looked puzzled at Luo Ying and said, "General, can you tell me what these water repelling Dragon Beads are? I'm quite curious about them."

Luo Ying wasn't planning on hiding anything from Zhao Hai. So she nodded and then pointed to two gems in front of her and said, "These are Dragon Beads. They are something made from the eyes of Sea Dragons. No matter how deep you are, once you have one of these in your body, a shield would surround you. This would repel the surrounding water while at the same time, allowing you to breathe naturally. But since Sea Dragons get buried as soon as they die, these Dragon Beads weren't very common."

Zhao Hai turned his attention towards the two blue beads. These beads don't look like eyes. They were as big as one's fist and looked just like two ordinary gems.

Luo Ying looked at Zhao Hai's expression and said, "After Sea Dragons die, their eyes would slowly contract before turning into this appearance. These Dragon Beads have been used by the Sea Dragon's helpers in order to give up huge losses. All of them were very strong moreover, there seems to be a lot of them. I suspect that after Sea Dragons die, their kinsmen would get their beads to use in times like these."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned to Luo Ying and said, "General, why haven't they attacked today?"

Luo Ying shook her head and said, "They've already attacked once but then drew back. I believe they would attack again soon." Then after she said that, a rumbling sound was then heard from outside.

Luo Ying's face changed as she said, "They're attacking!" Then she waved her hand as a water curtain appeared on the hall. The water curtain rippled before it showed the situation outside. But compared to Zhao Hai's monitor, the curtain was somewhat unclear, it was quite blurry.

However, this was still enough to surprise Zhao Hai and the others. This was the first time that they had seen someone else use a kind of magic that was similar to the monitor. If they knew about this magic before, they might already have a reason to use the monitor outside.

Although they have been surprised, Zhao Hai still kept his focus on the image that was on the curtain. They were attracted to the the fight that was about to happen.

They saw an army approaching from the opposite side. But the formation of this army was very strange. It looked like a huge cone and was constantly rotating. The tip of this cone was a big Fishman. The person had white skin and was about 5 meters tall. He had a large bone spear on his hand while having two large fins on his side and a large one behind him. He had a big bald head and

was opening his mouth, revealing a row of sharp teeth. He looked like a terrifying monster that would inflict fear on anyone.

At this time, Luo Ying opened her mouth and said, “They’re using the cone formation this time. The one top the lead is a shark, a famous warrior named Sha Meng. Although this person is only 8th rank, his innate talent in weapons is terrifying. Moreover, he has a strong resistance towards magic. He is very difficult to deal with. In the ten times that they had attacked, 6 of them has him in the lead.”

Then Zhao Hai saw that the defenders have also changed. Their formation had become similar to a swirling vortex. The center of the vortex was facing the tip of the cone. Once the cone stabbed into the vortex, the whole thing immediately released blood. The surrounding seas have been turned red.

At this moment, Dashan stood up, he bowed to Luo Ying and said, “General, let me join the fight. That Sha Meng has been quite fierce!” Dashan was also a famous warrior among the Whales. The Whales have always been stronger than the Sharks. So when he saw how that Sha Meng was being fierce, Dashan couldn’t help but get the itch to fight.

But Luo Ying shook her head and said, “Don’t worry, someone would be able to repel Sha Meng. You just arrived, so you needed rest. This time is just a probing attack, in a while, they would retreat.”

Dashan sat down, but his eyes still showed his stubbornness as he stared at the water curtain. Although the image on the water curtain was clouded by blood, Dashan still kept staring, as though Sha Meng might come out of it any second.

Sure enough, just as Luo Ying said, this was just a probing attack. Before long, the opposite party had started to draw back, with the rear guard personally led by Sha Meng. After the confrontation, Sha Meng didn’t look tired, in fact, he even had the look of

excitement.

Seeing the opposite side retreat, Luo Ying took down the water curtain before she turned to Zhao Hai and Dashan before saying, “This attack happens every day for several times. Since this time is only a probe, the next one would be more violent.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “General, can I head out first while it is still convenient to refine those corpses?”

When Luo Ying heard this, she couldn’t help but look deeply at Zhao Hai. Then she nodded and said, “Alright, let’s go.” After that, she took the lead as she stood up and went out.

Upon exiting the Azure Dragon Snail, Zhao Hai immediately summoned his Blade Scale Whale. He tried to invite Luo Ying inside the whale but she snorted before she called a huge seahorse over from the snail. When the seahorse came over, Luo Ying immediately rode it and had it slowly swim towards Zhao Hai’s whale. At the same time, Dashan also rode his mount and went to the other side of Zhao Hai’s whale.

The other Mermaid warriors also called their mounts over and followed behind Luo Ying. Their mounts were also seahorses, and they were all well trained. These seahorses were green and had occasional blue spots on their bodies, their height exceeded five meters. Contrary to what Zhao Hai expected, these seahorses didn’t hop around. They moved stably when they move forward, moreover, they were also quite fast.

Chapter 621 – Messenger Fish

Zhao Hai doesn't know that this seahorse wasn't an ordinary seahorse, nor was it just an oversized version of it. This seahorse was actually a variant beast.

Whether it be on the Ark Continent or the Sea, magic beasts were always present. And some of these beasts were likely to become different from their own race, people call them variant beasts.

Magic beasts were generally wild beasts that would be able to use magic. But variant beasts were those beasts that had their own Divergent Ability. These two things were different, and naturally, their strengths varied.

Magic beasts would discharge magic through the magic crystal inside their bodies, therefore, they were called magic beasts. But variant beasts are different, they can still use magic, but at the same time, they can also use their Divergent Ability. Divergent abilities, compared to magic was much more formidable. Because of this, one would rather provoke an advanced magic beast rather than a variant beast.

These seahorses that Luo Ying and the others rode on were variant beasts!

They might look like giant fishes and were slow. But in fact, they were experts in water magic while at the same time, being an ice-type variant beast.

Variant beasts were certainly magic beasts, but magic beasts aren't necessarily variant beasts. This was something that everyone knew. And Luo Ying's mount were these variant beasts. They were very famous in the entire sea, their name was Ice Seahorse.

Although the name ice seahorse seemed very ordinary, the 'ice' part of it held great significance. In addition to their ability to do

water magic, these seahorses also had an Ice Divergent Ability.

Whether it be offense or defense, the water element has always been inferior to the ice element. And this ice seahorse was a variant beast that can use both. Although their water magics weren't strong, once they use it, their speeds would be greatly improved to the point that most magic beasts wouldn't be able to catch up to them. And on the other hand, their Ice element ability was on of a kind, it was the Ice Cone Spell!

Their water magic would act behind their bodies and act as their propeller, making their movements much faster. In addition to that, their ice cone spell would make an ice spear appear in front of them. Not only are they fast, their attacking prowess was also very strong. This gave the ice horses the nickname fiery ice cone beasts.

The name fiery ice cone beast didn't mean that they can also use fire element magic. This just meant that whenever these seahorses use their maximum speed, it would seem like they were blazing their way through everything. These kinds of beasts would give any Fishman a headache.

Zhao Hai curiously looked at these huge ice seahorses. But he didn't say anything as the blade scale whale headed towards the battlefield along with Dashan and Luo Ying's group.

Before long, the group arrived at the battlefield. At the moment, there were a lot of floating corpses present, but these Fishmen didn't do anything about them. One must know that water always flows, and it wouldn't take a long time before these corpses would get swept away by the sea current. This was also why Zhao Hai chose to come at this time, he didn't want to miss the chance of acquiring these corpses.

The Fishmen didn't have the custom of burying their dead underground. On the contrary, their burials would most likely involve the sea itself. That meant that when a Fishman dies, their kin would use a large shell as a coffin and then just let the shell go

and have it slowly drift away. But if they couldn't find a big shell, they would just place the corpse out there and wait for it to be taken away by the current.

This didn't mean that the Fishmen were disrespectful to the dead. In fact, it was the direct opposite. The Fishmen highly respected the dead, they just think that since they lived their lives at sea, then after they die, they must return to the sea once again. It was because of this philosophy that they used this way to bury their dead.

These Fishmen also knew that once they let their kinsmen go and drift away, they would certainly become food for the magic beasts. But they still allowed it because they believed that the magic beasts of the sea were beings that were given to them by the Sea God and thus, were part of the sea.

On the battlefield, the Fishmen were doing the same thing. In their view, dying in this battle was akin to being buried at the sea. So there was no need to collect the dead corpses.

Zhao Hai gazed at the floating corpses. Although the contact between the two sides wasn't long, the casualties couldn't be described as small. In that short skirmish, there were already about a thousand dead people.

Zhao Hai turned to Luo Ying and said, "General, the bodies of your soldiers, can I use them?"

Luo Ying looked at Zhao Hai and nodded, "Mister, if those soldiers that died knew that they had given us help and had reduced further deaths, then they would certainly be able to rest in peace."

Zhao Hai looked deeply into Luo Ying. He discovered that Luo Ying was really a qualified general. She was a commander that had a soldier's heart, only such a person was qualified to be a good general. Only such a person could make soldiers and officers sacrifice their own lives for the greater purpose.

Then Zhao Hai turned his head back to the corpses and waved his hand. A black gas surrounded those corpses before vanishing along with the dead bodies.

Zhao Hai thought that these Fishmen wouldn't want to see undead at this time. He knew what expressions these Fishmen would give after seeing one. If he made these Fishmen see a pile of skeletons, then their morale would certainly suffer a huge hit. And at this point in the war, morale was extremely critical.

When Luo Ying saw that the corpses vanished, she looked at Zhao Hai, confused. Zhao Hai turned to Luo Ying and then smiled, "General, no need to worry. I have already stored the undead. I'm afraid that revealing those undead at this time will have a huge toll to the troops' morale."

When she heard Zhao Hai, Luo Ying couldn't help but nod. She was somewhat amazed at Zhao Hai. She didn't expect that he would have such a consideration at this time.

Then Zhao Hai looked at the Fishmen and said, "General, if the enemy is coming back, then I might as well stay here. What do you think?"

Luo Ying gawked, she didn't expect Zhao Hai to take the initiative and volunteer himself for combat. But she still shook her head and said, "Mister doesn't need to worry. Wars will always be like this everyday, the enemy just wants to grind our numbers down. I want mister to observe for two days while collecting more undead. After that, we can defeat the other party in one fell swoop."

Zhao Hai stared, then he nodded and said, "Alright, then I'll listen to the general's arrangement. If general has any need for me, then don't hesitate to tell me."

Luo Ying nodded, then he led Zhao Hai and the others back to the Azure Dragon Snail. After arriving inside the snail, Luo Ying immediately called her officers over as they began to disperse

Dashan's reinforcing army into different divisions.

Originally, Zhao Hai wanted to return to the blade scale whale and then go to the Space. But when he saw that Lizzy and Megan were intently looking at how Luo Ying was managing things, he decided to stay.

Before long, the army that Zhao Hai came with was already dispersed to various groups. At the same time, Luo Ying also gave a command to be in full defensive mode. She thought that since the other part already had attacked for a few times, then it was time for them to launch a huge attack. So it was better for them to be prepared.

Zhao Hai carefully observed how Luo Ying divided the troops. He had discovered that although the army was arranged in a cubic matrix, each cube was also comprised of four smaller cubes. One of these smaller cubes had Turtle Fishmen or other defensive Fishmen in them. Another small cube was comprised of long ranged offensive Fishmen, some of them had long reaching attacks while some were those who were able to use long ranged magic. Another small cube was composed of melee attackers, mostly comprised of physically gifted Fishmen. On the last square were the support troops. The role of these troops were to support the other Fishmen while at the same time be the ones to have contact with the central command.

These four small cubes comprised the bigger formations. Some bigger formations were even part of a much bigger formation. This was the composition of their unit. Moreover, this method can allow them to be flexible to whichever command that was given to them.

Another thing that surprised Zhao Hai was their handy way of communicating. In order to relay orders, the Fishmen were using these small messenger fish.

These messenger fishes were very special beings of the sea. Their

bodies weren't big, in fact, they were quite small. However, their swimming speed was very quick. Moreover, they can also be easily trained. Most importantly, these fishes were able to transmit information to each other. Even if two fishes were far away, they can still send forth a special signal towards one another.

The Fishmen uses this ability of the messenger fish to send message towards one another. Their messages were in code as well, and were made so that the message would be received at the shortest amount of time and at the safest way. If one doesn't know the secret code, then even if one has a messenger fish, then they still wouldn't know what the other party was saying.

Upon knowing this, Zhao Hai couldn't help but think about his time back on earth, when he was watching a movie on the television. Both sides of the line were using telegraphs, which was naturally a more primitive version of the mobile phone or even the telephone. But in the Ark Continent, this discovery was still a very huge thing.

Zhao Hai became very interested in this fish, so he expressed his want for one of them to Luo Ying. He immediately sent one to the Space so that they can multiply. Although it didn't upgrade the Space, its ability improved Zhao Hai's way of communicating with the Space.

Chapter 622 – Mobile Phone? Telephone?

The Space's ability to communicate had always been a problem. Only Zhao Hai had the ability to conveniently use it. If Laura and the others left the Space, then Zhao Hai can only find them before appearing in their midst. Or he could have Cai'er tell them what was going on. But Cai'er was only one entity, making multiple communications quite inconvenient.

Now that he had the messenger fish, everything became different. When the messenger entered the space, it was immediately strengthened and improved. And since the Space came from Earth, the messenger fish's communication has been upgraded, it can now talk!

Naturally, this didn't mean that the fish itself was able to converse. This meant that the fish can now convey spoken word. Zhao Hai can now speak towards the messenger fish and then had the message transmitted through the Space and then to another Space produced messenger fish on someone else's hand.

When Zhao Hai heard of this new function, he couldn't help but get stunned. So the Space would essentially function like a satellite while the messenger fishes would act as mobile phones.

Although messenger fishes cannot leave water, which was their weak point, this wasn't an issue for Zhao Hai and the others. He can have space bags that contained bottles in them. Once the fishes were placed on the bottles, then they can be stored inside the space bags.

These messenger fish weren't large, and their appearance were also beautiful, so they can pass off as ornamental fishes. Even if it wasn't placed in a space bag, it would still function like a landline when placed at someone's office.

It wasn't only Zhao Hai who was pleasantly surprised at this new discovery. Laura and the others were also extremely stunned. They

immediately had Cai'er mass produce these messenger fishes inside the Space, then had them sent over to Kun, Green, and the others. In the future, communicating with everyone would be much more convenient.

Zhao Hai and the others weren't expecting to reap huge harvests in their trip to the Fishmen this time. For them, this harvest was very important. Because of this, every single important matter of the Buda Clan would quickly reach Zhao Hai's ears at the quickest possible time.

While Zhao Hai and the others were busy with the messenger fish, Luo Ying wasn't idling as well. The enemy had finally made their move two hours after their previous attack.

This attack was different from the conical formation from before. This time, they were advancing in a straightforward manner. It seems like they want a huge fight. Zhao Hai and the others were inside the Azure Dragon Snail, looking at the scene through the water curtain.

Luo Ying's table had a messenger fish. This fish was placed on a crystal bowl and was used to send messages to different people. But compared to the Space's messenger fish, this fish naturally fell short.

Zhao Hai didn't have the interest to pay any attention to this messenger fish at this point. He just blankly stared at the enemy forces who were slowly inching forward. Their speed wasn't very quick, and their formation was very compact. The enemy's formation and Luo Ying's formation were almost similar, both formations looked like a Rubik's cube.

In front of the enemy's formation were the Electric Eels and other long-ranged attackers. It looks like the opposite party was prepared to launch a large scale attack.

Luo Ying was also paying attention to the lineup of the enemy. At the same time, she was using magic directed at the messenger

fishes as she gave one command after another.

Naturally, Luo Ying didn't use this to give command to the entire army. She sends messages to her officers through this fish and then the officers would then relay the message to the appropriate units.

Along with the advancement of the enemy, the defensive line had also started to change bit by bit. Those defensive Fishmen who weren't afraid of the Electric Eels had slowly reached the front of the formation. The offensive Fishmen were also slowly going to the back.

This was the first time that Zhao Hai would see a full collision between two Fishman armies. The two sides faced off at this small piece of the defensive line. It was like there was a rule that one would attack while one defends.

The distance between the two armies was getting shorter and shorter. At about 200 meters away, the advancing army stopped. Then suddenly, blue lightning started to appear from the enemy's formation. This lightning quickly crept towards the defending troops. Naturally, this was the Electric Eels launching their attacks.

The defensive troops quickly responded, the defensive force made a move as they and their mounts blocked the attack.

Zhao Hai paid close attention to the battle. He wasn't expecting the Electric Eels to be able to control lightning so well. When electricity is used underwater, it would generally disperse immediately. Attacking using electricity underwater was near impossible, but the Electric Eels still managed to do it. This showed how strong their attacks were, to Zhao Hai, it was really amazing.

But the defensive troops couldn't just sit still and not counter attack. Water arrows and ice spears had started to bombard the attacking army. At this time, long-ranged attacks from both sides had started to appear.

After ten rounds of long-ranged attacks, the Electric Eels had probably ran out of juice. Their lightnings were getting weaker and weaker. At this point, they were now starting to use water arrows and ice spears in attacking the defenders.

However, their attacks became weaker and weaker. This scene also happened at the side of the defenders. Then the enemy army started to change. Those responsible for long-ranged attacks had slowly drawn back. Those suited for close combat started to appear at the front.

Luo Ying immediately issued the command to change the formation. Their own army's melee troops have also started to come out front. At this time, the long-ranged attacks have started to die down. Then, the melee troops started to charge.

The attacking army's charge was similar to Sha Meng's cone formation. But this time, instead of a single giant cone, multiple smaller cones had appeared.

Seeing this, Luo Ying suddenly issued another command, "Prepare the Falling Stone formation!"

Immediately, the other Mermaids relayed the order and the defensive army moved. The whole army seemed to be spinning all the time. Before long, the Sea Dragon army had finally come into contact with the Mermaid army. Then suddenly, innumerable stones began to rain down on the Sea Dragon army. Given the speed at which the stones were flying, it was for certain that their damage wouldn't be small.

The enemy wasn't expecting this move as got hit by the stones. However, they were now very close to the other army and eventually slammed into the big defensive wall. The defenders had successfully defended against the attack as their revolution remained undisturbed. Like a killing machine, the defensive army kept killing the Sea Dragon's troops.

Upon seeing this situation, Zhao Hai couldn't help but stare.

Then he turned his head towards Luo Luo who wasn't far away. Luo Luo can be said to be well informed about the Fishman Race. There wasn't a tribe that she didn't have any knowledge of. It was because of this that the Queen had her go along with Zhao Hai.

Seeing Zhao Hai's look, Luo Luo immediately knew what he would ask, so she immediately said, "These attacks came from the Rockfish tribe. They're quite strange. Generally, we Fishmen would use our water magic as long-ranged attacks. But these Rockfishes have their stones. In their bodies was a pouch that can load a certain amount of stones. When they run into an enemy, they would spurt out these stones and wound them. Although this process wasn't very different to any offensive water magic, the damage it would cause was much greater than any water spell."

Zhao Hai nodded, to be honest, he already wasn't surprised about any of these. Compared to the Fishman Race, the amount of races that were in the Beastman's Prairie can only be considered to be miniscule.

Zhao Hai was now admiring Luo Ying even more. Knowing each race in the sea was already quite a feat, but knowing about their special abilities and bringing them out to their full potential was something only great generals can do. And Luo Ying was able to do it.

It can be said that Luo Ying's Falling Stone Formation had already defeated the enemy's offense. If they maintained this clash, then the enemy might be able to hold out for quite some time. However, their chance of having a deadlock has been lost. The only remaining fate for them if they continue on was a massacre.

Naturally, the opposite party knew about this, so they started to slowly retreat. Their retreat was not fast, but their formation was successfully doing it. Those who performed the attack were now acting as the rear guard while the larger formations turned back.

After seeing this, Zhao Hai couldn't help but nod, the commander of the opposite party surely wasn't simple. In this case, giving up a few people to preserve the larger part was a wise idea.

Then Zhao Hai turned his head to Luo Ying and said, "General, get me to send some undead to attack them. Capitalize in their retreating action and leaving them with only a few soldiers left."

Luo Ying stared, then she looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Fighting on the battlefield at this time is too dangerous for mister."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "I don't have to go out, I can just send them out from here." After saying that, he waved his hand as clumps of black mist appeared around the Sea Dragon army. After these black mists disappeared, clumps of skeletal beasts appeared right beside the Sea Dragon army. Then those magic beasts went into a cone formation as they charged towards the retreating army.

This development started suddenly and the enemy wasn't expecting an abnormal person like Zhao Hai to be on the defending army. Zhao Hai's undead was now starting to wreak havoc on the Sea Dragon army's formation.

Although this great formation was shaken, it was clear that their commander was extremely talented. He immediately made a response as the formation suddenly rotated. And this time, the rotation wasn't as a whole, but it was a layer by layer rotation. These layers of rotation and counter rotations managed to block the undead attack.

Chapter 623 – War

However, can Zhao Hai's undead be easily stopped? Although Zhao Hai had limited the strengths of these undead and didn't let them exhibit 9th rank strength, their fighting prowess was still formidable. So when they clashed, the enemy got caught off guard once again.

Although the Sea Dragon Army had already employed their formation, they were facing against undead that weren't afraid to die. The army felt how hard it was to block the undead attack. But fortunately for them, these undead would immediately turn into black gas every time they were struck at a vital point in their bodies.

Naturally, this was something that Zhao Hai deliberately did. As long as an undead was critically hit, he would immediately exchange them with a black gas before storing them back into the Space.

At this time, Zhao Hai had sent forth 500 thousand undead creatures. These undead were the magic beasts that he had acquired days before. Zhao Hai wasn't intending to have these undead withdraw. He wanted to let them smash through the Sea Dragon army until they were wiped out. Of course, their 'deaths' would have to be staged.

This was the most terrifying thing about Dark Mages in the battlefield. They were able to command their undead to commit to a suicidal attack, after all, the lives of the undead didn't matter. And when the enemy retreats, Dark Mages would gather up the corpses and turn them into a new undead army.

The Sea Dragons were currently experiencing this situation. They were facing undead beasts that had more strength than most Fishmen warriors that they had encountered before. They were able to kill one undead but at a cost of many. This wasn't

something that the Sea Dragon army can bear. So the Formation had slowly developed into a rout.

The difference between people and undead was that the undead held no fear for death while people did. Even the most disciplined army had this mentality. The Sea Dragon army was naturally the same.

But it was good for them that Zhao Hai didn't send a lot of undead, only 500 thousand. Although the undead has caused a disorderly retreat, they still couldn't budge the large formation of a 3 million troop army.

The fighting strengths of the Fishmen were strong as well, definitely stronger than average magic beasts. The 500 thousand undead that Zhao Hai had sent were eventually eradicated by the Sea Dragon army. This time, the army didn't dare to stay, they quickly retreated back, afraid of any more attacks from the other party.

The entire undead attack was seen by Luo Ying and the others. No Fishmen were able to use Dark Magic, so this was their first time seeing attacks from undead. If they were to use a word to describe it, then it would be "terrifying"!

The attack power of the undead can only be considered average by Luo Ying's standards, but the most terrifying thing about the undead was the fact that they wouldn't die as long as their vital points aren't hit. Even if their limbs were to be decapitated, they could still perform their attacks. Who wouldn't be afraid of seeing something like that attacking them?

Luo Ying was a general, so she was very clear about how an attack like this would affect a troop's morale. At this point, Luo Ying didn't dare look down on Zhao Hai anymore. The undead that Zhao Hai had sent out had killed more than what they had, this was a terrifying thought.

When the Sea Dragon army retreated, the battlefield became

peaceful. Zhao Hai turned his head to Luo Ying and said, “General, I’ll be processing those corpses.”

Luo Ying nodded and said, “Mister, do as you like. I still have some more matters to process, so I wouldn’t be able to accompany mister. Dashan, you go and be mister’s escort.” Dashan nodded and went out with Zhao Hai.

When they arrived outside the snail, they immediately rode their mounts and went to the battlefield. Zhao Hai then turned the dead unto his minions. All in all, he had added more than one million undead into his army.

In this more than a million undead, 800 thousand were Sea Dragon troops while the remaining 300 thousand were from the defense army. But 600 thousand of those from the Sea Dragon army died in the hands of Zhao Hai’s undead. This showed how deadly the undead were.

Currently, Zhao Hai became more and more pleasing to Dashan’s eyes. He also understood what Luo Ying meant. Zhao Hai, who can minimize their losses while greatly harming the enemy was a very terrifying weapon in the battlefield.

The other Fishmen had also become aware of Zhao Hai’s prowess. The Fishmen were originally clueless about what Zhao Hai was doing. But the reinforcing army that came with Zhao Hai had told them about what he did back at mermaid island, and in addition to seeing the current attack, they were now in awe and veneration towards Zhao Hai.

After Zhao Hai turned the Fishmen into undead, he returned to the blade scale whale and told Dashan that he needed to rest and wouldn’t be returning to the Azure Dragon Snail. Dashan didn’t say anything, after all, Zhao Hai was the Fishman Race’s ally. Him, and even Luo Ying, didn’t have the authority to give Zhao Hai any commands. Because of this, Dashan just let Zhao Hai do what he wants.

Zhao Hai entered the blade scale whale and then opened the monitor. Laura and the others were also right by his side. They looked at the monitor with great interest, they didn't care much about the situation of today's war, but they wanted to see Luo Ying's reaction inside the azure dragon snail.

Luo Luo remained with Luo Ying at this time, so Zhao Hai and the others can just comfortably watch the scene in the monitor.

Seeing Zhao Hai leave, Luo Ying immediately called Luo Luo over and said, "Luo Luo, how did this mister Zhao Hai arrive at our Fishman Race's domain. Why did he come?"

Luo Luo immediately narrated about how Zhao Hai asked to see the Queen and then told her about the matter of the Divine Race. Although Luo Ying knew about Zhao Hai's existence, the information that she received from the messenger fish was inadequate. Seeing Zhao Hai fight today made Luo Ying careful towards Zhao Hai. In her opinion, Zhao Hai was too dangerous, therefore she asked Luo Luo about Zhao Hai's origin.

After Luo Luo finished talking, Luo Ying nodded and said, "So that's how it is. I didn't think that Mister would have so many status in the Human lands. It looks like mister would become our race's most solid ally. Having an ally like him would be a great boon for our race.

Luo Luo nodded and said, "The Queen said the same thing. General will the war end soon now that Mister Zhao Hai is here?"

Luo Ying forced a smile and said, "Silly Luo Luo, how could it be that easy, do you really think that the Sea Dragons would be that weak? Also, it seems like the Sea Dragons have gained help from the Humans and Dragons of the continent. If that really is the case, then it would be possible for them to have Light Dragons and people of the Radiant Church among them. Both of those entities are well versed in Light magic. And light magic is the nemesis of dark magic. Mister Zhao Hai's means would be limited because of

that.”

The Fishmen had their own intelligence network in the continent, therefore they also had some understanding about Dark Mages. So it wouldn't be strange for them to know that light magic was the bane of Dark Mages. But what Luo Ying didn't know was the fact that Zhao Hai was different from any Dark Mage. General Dark Mages might be afraid of light magic, but Zhao Hai didn't care much of it.

When Luo Luo heard Luo Ying, her expression couldn't help but change. Then she said, “What should we do? General, we can defeat the Sea Dragons, right?”

Luo Ying looked at Luo Luo and then smiled faintly, “Of course we can defeat the Sea Dragons. Don't worry about it. This time, the Sea Dragons just got some helpers. If mister Zhao Hai can help us hold them off for a while, then we can get the strength to wipe them out in one go.”

Luo Ying was just saying this to comfort Luo Luo. However, what she said also held some truth. The Mermaid family had ruled the Fishman Race for a very long time, and from that alone, their background was quite strong. The reason why the Mermaids became like this was because they had been caught off guard. As long as the Mermaids had time, and were able to gather their strength, then they would be able to deal with the Sea Dragons. It was just that the Mermaids would still have to pay a heavy price.

When Luo Luo heard Luo Ying, she couldn't help but feel relaxed. Seeing Luo Luo's appearance, Luo Ying couldn't help but faintly smile. She couldn't blame Luo Luo, after all, she was still young and still hadn't seen the big world. She hasn't even gone to a real battlefield. Therefore, this response from Luo Luo was quite normal.

At this time, Dashan arrived, he gave a salute to Luo Ying and said, “General, Mister Zhao Hai has processed the corpses.

Currently, he is inside his blade scale whale, resting.”

Luo Ying nodded, then she turned to Luo Luo and said, “How is the space inside the Blade Scale Whale? If it isn’t any good, I can arrange a room for mister Zhao Hai to rest here.”

Luo Luo smiled and said, “General, you don’t know, but the inside of the blade scale whale is very comfortable. It had several rooms in it, a living room, bathroom, and even a place where one can see outside. It was a great place.”

As soon as she heard Luo Luo, Luo Ying became surprised. She looked at Luo Luo and said, “Really? It seems like the level of mister’s dark magic isn’t low.”

Luo Luo nodded and said, “Mister is very strong. His wives aren’t simple either. I can see that mister places great importance to his wives’ opinion whenever they discuss something. Moreover, their relationship is very good. Mister’s wives are very harmonious with each other. They’ve become friends with our sisters back at mermaid island as well.”

Chapter 624 – You Take Command

Luo Ying nodded and said, “No matter what, mister is our ally. Dashan, Luo Luo, you have the most contact with mister. Make sure to listen to anything that he wants. Make sure that you satisfy his needs.”

When Luo Luo heard Luo Ying, she immediately responded, “General, I seem to remember something. Mister Zhao Hai wanted to collect unique beasts and plants as a hobby. Whenever he sees something along the way, he would stop and collect them alive. General, I think we should get some beasts and plants for mister, or maybe something else that is unique, what do you think?”

Luo Ying gawked, “So mister has a hobby like that. Is mister an Alchemist or a Refining Master? That doesn’t matter, I’ll have someone go and pay attention to this. Right, I have some sea dragon beads on hand. Although Mister is quite strong, it would be more convenient for him if he had these beads.”

Luo Luo nodded. Then Luo Ying turned to Dashan and said, “Dashan, what is the casualty count? Are we doing well?”

Dashan nodded and said, “The situation is good. Enemy casualties number over 800 thousand while our deaths are less than 300 hundred thousand. Six hundred thousand of those enemy casualties were due to Mister Zhao Hai’s undead”

Luo Ying knit her brows and said, “Our casualties are still more than the enemy. The Sea Dragons have gathered a lot of powerful warriors all these years, we’re much worse in terms of fighting prowess. But it was fortunate that we had more reinforcements coming soon.”

Dashan nodded and said, “It’s also good that mister has managed to gather more undead. If the enemy attacks tomorrow, then mister would gain even more undead, which would be beneficial for us. You’ve seen how strong those undead were from the earlier

fight, they're quite formidable."

Luo Ying nodded and said, "However, I'm afraid that the Sea Dragons might have a Light Mage or Light Dragon among them. Those would bring us some trouble. What we need to do right now is to keep the enemy from advancing beyond this place. We'll wait for more reinforcements to arrive and then grind the enemy bit by bit before we can claim victory in the end."

Dashan and Luo Luo nodded. Luo Ying felt some tiredness as she said, "Alright, let's go rest. I think the Sea Dragons wouldn't make another attack today." The two nodded before turning around and leaving.

Then Zhao Hai turned the monitor off. Laura turned to Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, it seems like they had finally recognized your strength. Are you happy?"

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "What does being recognized really do? If I weren't afraid of exposing my secrets, then I would've already extinguished the Sea Dragons."

Lizzy smiled and said, "But this is also good, they are now going to look for good things for Big Brother Hai. Brother Hai, how about asking for an Azure Dragon Snail? That thing is very good."

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "I really don't envy the snail, what I want is their water refining technique. If there's a chance, I would want to learn how they do it. It's quite an amazing invention."

Megan nodded and said, "Well, let's not talk about that. Elder Brother Hai, how about we look at the battle earlier, I want to see it clearly."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he had Cai'er replay the fight from earlier. Then they analyzed it bit by bit. But when it comes to battles, it seems like Megan and Lizzy were much better than him.

After analyzing the battle, Zhao Hai and the others reckoned that he can still kill about 100 thousand more if there was good strategy

involved.

After looking at the battle, Zhao Hai relaxed. Then Zhao Hai looked at Megan and Lizzy and said, “Alright, you two are indeed good at these things. I think we can talk to General Luo Ying tomorrow and ask for permission to do an attack using our undead. At that time, I can have the two of you be the commander. We’ll take the battle to the Sea Dragons while finding out who their helpers were. What do you think?”

Megan looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Elder Brother Hai, do you really want us to command the undead? What if we don’t do a good job?”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “Your worries are unnecessary. No commander starts off good. Moreover, how many undead do we have? And they’re quite strong as well. Don’t forget, the 500 thousand undead that we used earlier are all doing fine. When we go to the Space, I’ll have the two of you command a unit so that you can get familiar with them during battles. Later on, whether it be the Gods or the Demons, war would be inevitable. Me and Laura cannot take command, so we’ll be leaving that matter off to you two.”

When Lizzy and Megan heard Zhao Hai, they immediately understood what he was trying to say. Zhao Hai making them command the undead was just a preparation for the war in the future. They also understood that the fight against the Gods and the Demons would be more difficult than this one. And at the same time, their side really needed good commanders in order to maximize their fighting potential.

After thinking about this, Lizzy and Megan nodded and said, “Alright, we’ll listen to Brother Hai. We’ll be the ones dealing with the Sea Dragons tomorrow.”

Zhao Hai let out a long breath and said, “We need to make sure to take good care of ourselves. The most important thing is to prepare

to receive the Gods and Demons. These two would be hard to deal with. When they appear in the continent, then we would have no other choice but to fight.”

The others didn't speak. The Gods and Demons were like two mountains that were weighing down on their shoulders, making it hard for them to breath. Just like Zhao Hai said, they needed to use all of their energy to prepare themselves in dealing with those two.

They rested for the whole day, and on the next morning after having breakfast, Luo Luo arrived in front of the blade scale whale. Zhao Hai immediately invited her in. When Luo Luo entered the whale, she handed the dragon beads over to Zhao Hai and said, “Mister, take these. The general had me give this to you. Later, you can place it on your body so that you don't need to use magic in repelling the water.”

Zhao Hai received the dragon beads and carefully looked at it, then he nodded and said, “Alright, I was just about to visit the General. I'll go give my thanks when I see her. Let's go.”

Luo Luo nodded and then she asked, “What does mister want to ask the general?”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “It's about the war. We had always been on the defensive side, we're too passive. I want to take the fight to the Sea Dragons. I want to ask for the general's approval so that I can go and attack them.”

When she heard Zhao Hai, Luo Luo couldn't help but gawk. She looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Mister wants to attack the Sea Dragons?”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “Right, I want to see how good those Sea Dragons are.” Then he came out of the blade scale whale and stepped on the back of a turtle before heading towards the azure dragon snail.

Luo Luo looked surprised at Zhao Hai. She didn't expect that

Zhao Hai would want to attack. Yesterday, she heard that the general wanted them to hold the attacks off as long as they can while grinding the Sea Dragons bit by bit. But Zhao Hai's request was in direct opposition to the general's plan.

While she was thinking about this, they had finally arrived at the snail's hall. Seeing Zhao Hai come, Luo Ying immediately said, "Mister, I think the Sea Dragons wouldn't attack today. You can use the time to take a good rest."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "I came here today about this matter. I'm here to ask the general's permission. I want to attack the Sea Dragons."

Luo Ying stared, then she knit her brows and said, "Mister, we can just wait for the Sea Dragons here. It's too risky to attack them."

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "General, you said that it was possible for the Sea Dragons to have received help from the Humans and Dragons. If this is really the case, then it wouldn't be good for us to keep this defensive war. I want to use the undead in order to chip away some of the enemy's strength. Moreover, I also want to see who their helpers are."

Luo Ying still refused, "Mister, if the Sea Dragons had help from the continent, then perhaps they would use a Light Mage to deal with you."

Zhao Hai actually laughed and said, "General, you don't need to worry. I've been at odds with the Radiant Church for a long time. If Light magic really did affect me, then I would've already died in their hands. Also, I would only be using my undead in this attack, so we wouldn't have any casualties. If we wait for them to come to us, then we would certainly suffer some losses. I think it would be better for us if I were to take the initiative and bring the battle to them."

When Luo Ying heard Zhao Hai, she couldn't help but think

deeply. Mermaids treat the Fishmen like their own family. If they waited for the enemy to attack them, then it was inevitable that deaths would occur. And losing people from your own side doesn't give anyone a good feeling. Because of this, Luo Ying began to be moved by Zhao Hai's proposal.

Luo Ying nodded and said, "Alright, then I won't stop mister. However, Mister should do his best in order to protect your own safety. How about this, I'll have Dashan and a group of warriors accompany you. What do you think?"

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "General, although Captain Dashan is formidable, they don't know how to fight along with the undead. Even if they do come with me, they won't be able to offer any help. The general doesn't need to worry about me, after all, I don't have any plans to die just yet. There's no need to have someone protect me. In any case, I'll always be in the back, commanding the undead. If things go sour, I can just retreat."

Luo Ying was unable to refute Zhao Hai's statement, so she just nodded and said, "Then I can only ask mister to be careful. I'll be waiting for mister's good news. Right, if mister acquires some dragon beads, all of them shall belong to you."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "The general has my utmost gratitude. Alright then, this Zhao Hai would be taking his leave." Then he gave Luo Ying a salute before turning around to leave.

Chapter 625 – Such a Character!

About thirty nautical miles away from the Mermaid's defensive line was a large gathering of Fishmen. These Fishmen looked much stronger than those from the Mermaid clan's army. Among them were people from the Electric Eel tribe and the Shark tribe. This was the large camp of the Sea Dragons.

The Fishmen didn't have the custom of constructing camps. So these large gathering, the entire camp, was actually situated in a very huge coral reef. But the reef looked very peculiar, its form was like a curled up Sea Dragon.

The Sea Dragons had some differences compared to the other Dragons, perhaps it was to allow them to better survive at sea. Other Dragons were big bellied lizards with a pair of wings. But the Sea Dragons were different, they looked like sea snakes with four feet, and on those feet were some white bristles, they also had a fin on their tails. This form suited them the most in swimming underwater. This coral reef looked exactly like huge slumbering Sea Dragon.

This giant coral reef occupied a very large area, which was a testament to how large it was. But what is even more surprising was the fact that it was evident that this coral reef was not from here. One could see that it was moved to this location.

In front of this reef were countless ropes, which were made out of high level magic beast leather. These ropes were connected to large magic beasts. It was obvious that this huge piece of coral was dragged here by those magic beasts.

The coral reef seemed to be surrounded by a huge blue bubble. One could hardly see a drop of water inside the reef. From time to time, one could see some warriors coming in and out of the structure.

Another amazing thing was that the warriors who were on patrol

were all humanoid. They wore fish scales armor and dragon helmets on their heads. Their hands seem to be naked but one could see that it was covered in some sort of metal glove. The nails on the glove showed that it had quite an attacking capability.

These warriors who had gone to patrol were Sea Dragons. Dragons aren't like any other magic beast. Even if other magic beasts were to become 9th rank, the most they can do was change the size of their body, it was impossible for them to change their shape. On the other hand, when Dragons become 8th rank in their adulthood, they would immediately have the ability to change into humanoid figures. This was an advantage that Dragons had.

And this coral reef was the home of the Sea Dragons, the Dragon Palace!

The Sea Dragons lived in this palace, but they usually don't make the palace move around. It was because every time the palace gets moved, it would need at least 100 thousand strong marine magic beasts. And finding those beasts wasn't an easy task.

This coral reef has been transformed by the Sea Dragons through the years. The inside of it had become like palace, with pearls and crystals everywhere. It was extraordinarily attractive, even more attractive than Mermaid Island's palace.

Sitting inside the Dragon Palace's Great Hall were four people, two of them wore blue robes, robes that seemed to be made out of magic beast skin. The two weren't very tall, about 1.8 meters high. Their bodies were well-proportioned, they had dark blue hair as well as dark blue eyes. Their skins were white and their appearance seemed to be about 40 years old. They were revealing the aura of mature men, looking very handsome and unique.

Another man wore a long gold robe, he had a head full of beard, and was about 2.5 meters tall. He had long golden hair and if one looks closely into it, one could see a pair of sharp horns poking through.

The last man looked very ordinary, he wore a red mage's robe while having a Magic Staff in one hand. He had short but still attractive beard, and had a very holy expression on his face. If a Human were to see this person, then their first impression would be that this person was a Light Mage.

At this time, the younger of the two blue robed people opened his mouth and said, "Patriarch, Envoy, Bishop, I can assure you that our army has been attacked by undead. And their numbers were quite large as well, about 500 thousand undead."

The other blue robed person, who seemed to be the Sea Dragon Patriarch, said, "Illac, do you understand what 500 thousand undead meant? How many Dark Mages would need to command it? Moreover, you're saying that these undead were also quite strong, are you really sure that it was undead?"

Illac nodded and said, "Patriarch, I am telling the truth. After we got caught off-guard by the enemy's Falling Stone Formation, we began to retreat. But at that time, large quantities of undead suddenly appeared around us. The fighting strength of these undead were quite strong. If we haven't recovered immediately, we might have suffered more losses."

When Illac's voice fell, the golden robed man couldn't help but knit his brows and said, "How is that possible? Wasn't there supposed to be no contact between the Mermaids and the Humans? Then how come there were Dark Mages present? Moreover, 500 thousand undead wasn't something that one or two Dark Mages can summon. Were you able to see how many Dark Mages were present?"

The Red Robed Light Mage opened his mouth and with a serious tone, he said, "It's not necessary to have a lot of Dark Mages in order to summon 500 thousand undead. Envoy Ao Ke, I know of a certain Human Dark Mage. He is able to summon 500 thousand undead by himself, maybe even more."

Envoy Ao Ke, Illac, and the Sea Dragon Patriarch's faces changed, these three looked at the red robed Light Mage, then Ao Ke said, "Bishop Joshua, are you telling the truth? Does the Human Race have such a character? Why haven't you dealt with him yet?"

This Joshua was unexpectedly a Radiant Church's red robed Archbishop. However, this golden robed Ao Ke had a much bigger background. He is of the Dragon Race and was the current Dragon Patriarch's younger brother, but only a half-brother.

The birth of Dragons is very difficult, but they were still quite fertile. A peculiar thing about them was that they can more successfully procreate with those that wasn't of their own race. Although there were still some Pure Dragon births here and there, their numbers were still inferior to those who were born between a Dragon and of an inferior race.

In addition to giving birth to a Light Dragon because of his wife, Ao Ke's father was also able to give birth to him with a Metal Dragon. However, since Dragon law states that only Light Dragons can become Patriarchs, Ao Ke's chances of leading his race has become impossible. Although Ao Ke had both the advantages of being a Light Dragon and a Metal Dragon, he still had to give up the position to his brother. However, his status in the Dragon Race was still quite high. He was even entrusted with the responsibility of being the Envoy of the Dragon Race in this battle between the inferior Sea Dragon Race and the Mermaid Clan.

As soon as Joshua heard Ao Ke, he nodded, and with a heavy expression he said, "Patriarch Alex, General Illac, Envoy Ao Ke, our Human Race did have such a Dark Mage. Moreover, he had become our church's archenemy. To be honest, at this point, we are very willing to pay any price in order to eliminate him. But this person is very difficult to deal with, causing our Radiant Church to lose repeatedly by his hand. The reason why the Radiant Church has been pushed into a corner in the continent was partly due to this man. You might not know but this person is quite famous in the

Human lands. He's the Buda Clan's Patriarch, the son-in-law of the Emperor of the most powerful nation, the son-in-law of the Dark Mage Alliance's Calci Family, the Beastman Race's Foreign Prince, as well as being a very big merchant. He is also an extremely formidable Dark Mage, one time, he had turned the Aksu Empire's 600 thousand troop navy into his undead in just one night. For him, controlling 500 thousand undead wouldn't be very hard."

The Sea Dragon Patriarch Alex was dumbfounded upon hearing Joshua's words. He didn't think that such a character had popped up in the Human Race. After some time, Alex recovered and said, "I've got some word some time ago that the Fishman Race has been having secret transactions with Humans, maybe it's with this Buda Clan that Bishop meant? But Bishop Joshua, haven't you thought of a way to eliminate him yet?"

Joshua forced a smile and said, "This Buda Clan Patriarch is named Zhao Hai. He's extremely powerful, we have thought of eliminating him for a long time. In the beginning, we weren't aware of his strength, which cost us five white robed bishops and 18 knight guards. But in the end, the only thing we can do was drive him off to the Prairie. But when he came back, his power has greatly increased. After that, we had made continuous efforts in eliminating him, but all ended up in failure. The most recent one involved us sending forth four 9th rank experts and had them use Life Combustion in order to eliminate him. But for some reason, he was still able to successfully escape. Later on, in the war between the Beastmen and Humans, our plans had somehow become known to the Beastmen. We suspect that this Zhao Hai had something to do with it, but we had no proof. Later on, our Church haven't had the chance to muster up the force that would deal with him. Patriarch Alex, I think this secret trade was established by Zhao Hai. This Zhao Hai had a peculiar personality that made him have a good relationship with other races. I've also heard about him being in good terms with the Dwarves. Based on that, it wouldn't be strange for him to have a connection with the

Fishman Race.”

Alex and the others couldn't help but breathe in cold air. Although they didn't know how formidable this Life Combustion that Joshua told them was, they estimated how strong it would be judging by the fact that it used the life of four 9th rank experts. For Zhao Hai to survive this attack was quite a scary thing to think about!

Chapter 626 – Devil Scorpion

Joshua looked at the expressions of those present and couldn't help but smile bitterly, "We had underestimated Zhao Hai from the start. Now that he has established his name in the continent, it would be close to impossible for us to deal with him. And since the situation of the Church isn't very good, it would take us some time in order to make a proper move."

Ao Ke and the others recovered and couldn't help but breathe in some cold air. But Ao Ke's eyes suddenly lit up as he said, "If the one we're facing is indeed Zhao Hai, then the situation would be good for us. Although you don't have a way of dealing with him in the continent, we are currently in the sea. Zhao Hai's strength should be limited here, we can use this opportunity to kill him, essentially removing a huge problem of yours while at the same time removing a big helper of the Mermaid clan."

Upon hearing Envoy Ao Ke, the eyes of Joshua and Alex couldn't help but turn bright. This was good, even if it was difficult to deal with Zhao Hai in the continent, one shouldn't forget that they are currently in the ocean. One of the strongest entities here were the Sea Dragons. If they can remove Zhao Hai, then they would be removing a huge problem in their plan.

After thinking about this, the group couldn't help but get restless. Alex looked at Illac and said, "Illac, did you say that Zhao Hai's undead were strong? Did you happen to see Zhao Hai? He shouldn't be too far away from his undead, right?"

Illac shook his head and said, "Patriarch, this one hasn't seen him. At that time, the situation had gone hectic, I simply didn't have the chance to look for his shadow."

Alex nodded and said, "When you attack tomorrow, you must pay attention to any Dark Mages or even Zhao Hai among the Mermaid army. If we become sure that it is Zhao Hai, then we'll do

our best in order to kill him. Saving the plans of the Gods from being disrupted all the time.”

Illac nodded, then Alex turned to Joshua and said, “Bishop Joshua, do you have a portrait of Zhao Hai? We don’t want Illac to mistake him for another person.”

Joshua nodded and said, “Of course, this Zhao Hai is the Church’s number one enemy. It would be impossible for me to not have a portrait of him.” Then he turned his hand before a portrait appeared. The portrait was drawn masterfully, showing Zhao Hai’s figure as well as his face. Zhao Hai was holding a magic staff on one hand while also wearing a black robe on his body. His face was colored so well that the picture looked to be alive. But Zhao Hai didn’t have much expression on his face, probably due to the bias the artist had against him.

But when they saw the portrait, Alex and the others couldn’t help but gawk. They didn’t expect that this formidable Zhao Hai that Joshua was talking about to be quite young. They were expecting a skeleton looking Dark Mage, not an ordinary healthy young man.”

The group looked at Joshua, their expression probably saying, “Did you take the wrong thing out?”

When Joshua looked at their expression, he couldn’t help but force a smile and said, “Rest assured, I didn’t take the wrong thing out. This is indeed Zhao Hai, aged about 20 years old and was just recently married. Don’t be fooled by his ordinary looks, his methods are extremely brilliant. If we’re really facing him, then General Illac would need to be careful.”

Alex nodded, then he turned to Illac and said, “Illac, take this portrait with you so that you can clearly identify this guy. If it is really him, don’t go and attack him immediately. Come back and tell us first so that we can concentrate our efforts and destroy him in one go.” Illac nodded, then he took the portrait before turning back and leaving.

After Illac left, Alex turned to Joshua and Ao Ke and said, “Bishop, Envoy, if we prove that it is Zhao Hai, I would have to ask for help from the two of you so that we can be more certain of eliminating him. You should know that this fellow is a Dark Mage, and both of you can do light magic. And since he is fighting underwater, he shouldn’t be able to escape if our three sides deal with him simultaneously.”

Ao Ke nodded and said, “Patriarch Alex, rest assured, we aren’t just here to witness the fun. As long as we confirm that it is Zhao Hai, then we would immediately make our move.”

Joshua nodded as well, “Right, we’re not here to just be an audience. If we can really kill Zhao Hai here, then even if this Joshua loses his life, I would still do it in the name of the Radiant God.”

Alex nodded and said, “Good, good, we’re fortunate that the two of you are here. “The army had just experienced a huge battle, so they would need to take a day off. Tomorrow, Illac would attack once again while looking for this Zhao Hai.”

Ao Ke and Joshua were also people who can command troops. So the two knew about the impact their recent losses would have to the troops. Therefore, neither of them opposed to it.

The next day, after Alex and the others had their breakfast and were preparing to head into battle, someone suddenly sent a message. A large amount of undead were attacking them.

Alex and the others gawked, then Alex immediately gave the Sea Dragon a command, “Go and find General Illac.” The Sea Dragon nodded before turning around to leave.

Alex turns to Ao Ke and Joshua, he smiled faintly and said, “Just as we are about to look for him, he suddenly came. I want to see if this person is really Zhao Hai.”

Ao Ke coldly snorted and said, “If this is really Zhao Hai, then

he's being extremely arrogant. For a Human to dare attack the Sea Dragons in the ocean on his own is a very impatient move."

But Joshua actually frowned and said, "We still need to be careful. This Zhao Hai is not good to deal with."

Ao Ke couldn't help but be unconcerned. After seeing Zhao Hai's portrait, he had begun to form doubts about Joshua's words. In his opinion, a 20 year old young man wouldn't have much abilities. Ao Ke believed that since the Radiant Church weren't able to deal with him, they chose to exaggerate his qualities in order to save them some face.

However, since Ao Ke was Joshua's ally, he didn't want to say anything that would embarrass the other part. So he just nodded and didn't say anything. At this time, Illac had walked in from outside and then gave a salute to those present.

Alex nodded at Illac's salute and then said, "Illac, someone just sent word that undead creatures were heading towards us. I suspect that this Zhao Hai is coming. Go and organize the troops for defense. Remember, don't counter attack. Even if we lose some people, the important thing is confirming if it is really Zhao Hai." Illac nodded, then he turned around to leave.

Alex turned to Joshua and Ao Ke and said, "Bishop, Envoy, let's go take a look at this Zhao Hai." The two nodded before the group headed outside.

Zhao Hai was currently inside the blade scale whales body. In front of him was the monitor and on his side were Laura and the others. Megan and Lizzy were especially anxious at this time.

Zhao Hai wasn't planning to handle his affairs in a low key this time. He released 1 million undead, comprised of both magic beasts and Fishmen. They were currently in a cube formation as it headed towards the Sea Dragon camp.

The reason why Lizzy and Megan were anxious was because Zhao

Hai had made the two of them the commanders of this attack. The calculations and strategies all came from Lizzy and Megan, so it wasn't strange for them to be quite nervous.

Zhao Hai looked at their expressions and couldn't help but smile, "It's going to be fine, no need to be nervous. Even if we get defeated, our losses only comprised of undead. Don't be afraid of anything and just boldly try out everything. You must learn how to command an army attack."

When Lizzy and Megan heard Zhao Hai, they couldn't help but let out a long breath. What Zhao Hai said was correct, they weren't commanding humans this time, but undead. Even if these undead were to get 'defeated', they weren't essentially dead. Ninth rank undead couldn't easily die, all they were doing was going back to the Space.

After thinking about this, they immediately calmed down. Then their expressions turned to excitement as they looked at the monitor. Their change made Zhao Hai and the others smile.

The cubic formation advanced slowly. At the same time, a cubic formation also appeared on the side of the Sea Dragon camp. Zhao Hai and the others found out that the Fishmen really liked this formation, maybe because it was very simple.

The two great formations slowly approached each other. Lizzy then turned to Megan and said, "Megan, you go first."

Megan didn't become polite, she nodded and said, "Alright. I've thought of quite a lot of formations yesterday. I want to try their prowess this time. I'll go with the Devil Scorpion first. Brother Hai, this formation has a thick center while having two extended wings on each side. And as the battle goes on, the rear army would sprang up from above, attacking the enemy in that direction. This formation looks just like a giant scorpion." Then Megan used her hand to move the monitor. Zhao Hai also had Cai'er help her with this. The image that Megan described can be fully described on the

monitor.

Megan's Devil Scorpion formation did indeed look like a giant scorpion. The Center army has two wings on each side that would attack the enemy in two fronts. At the same time the Rear Army was also being the scorpion's tail, slowly going up, preparing to attack the opposite party from above.

Zhao Hao nodded and said, "Right, what you described is very clear." Then he waved his hand, making the undead creatures move, following the directions that Megan just described.

Megan and Lizzy were going to experiment on the idea that they had come up. They weren't like the Fishmen who already had their cubic formation, cone formation, or their whirlpool formation. For the fishmen, these basic formations were the ones that would express their potential the most.

And also, experimenting on new formations was something that would take a toll on soldiers. Soldiers much achieve near perfect movements in order to follow the idea of their commander. What their commander wants to do, they would need to do it, there was no room for any mistakes.

Chapter 627 – Poisonous Scorpion Tail

Achieving this formation wasn't easy, even the world's most disciplined army would still have problems executing it. After all, ideas couldn't be easily transferred to commands and movements. Therefore, any formation would need to be thought through and drilled properly before being executed in the battlefield. Formations like the cubic formation, whirlpool formation, cone formation, and others have been drilled by the Fishmen for lots and lots of years.

However, Zhao Hai's situation was quite special. What he commanded were undead, which functioned basically like blocks. What you want them to do would be done by them. Dark Mages might have problems in doing this, but Zhao Hai had the Space to assist him. He becomes a perfect commander to a perfectly functional army with all these points in place.

Just as Megan finished describing her formation and wanted him to employ it, Zhao Hai immediately arranged for his army to execute the formation. Before long, the entire army looked like a giant scorpion facing against a large Rubik's cube.

Illac was currently in the core of the cube. When he saw the undead going against his army, his expression couldn't help but turn heavy. He immediately issued a command, making the cube constantly rotate.

But at this time, Illac suddenly discovered that the formation of the opposite party has changed. The center army turned still as two wings suddenly came out of the undead formation. Upon witnessing this sight, Illac's face changed, he didn't expect that the other party would have the ability to command the undead to this degree.

Illac immediately said, "Face the enemy with a cone formation, make sure to defend against those two outward wings." Illac was

currently inside a giant shell covered by numerous thorns, as though it was a huge sea urchin. But the shell was transparent while there weren't any water inside, evidently due to the sea dragon bead. There were some furniture inside as well, making it Illac's command center.

Along with his order, the cube immediately changed its shape. The front of the cube that was slowly rotating started to extend out front and straight towards Zhao Hai's center army. However, the left and right wings didn't budge, they had held off the enemy attack quite successfully.

However, Illac was completely unaware that Zhao Hai's rear army, the scorpion's tail, had started to attack from above.

In the war between Fishmen, very few troops chose to get too close to the surface of the sea in order to attack the enemy. This was because that position exposed them to attacks from aerial magic beasts. And since they were accustomed to the bottom of the sea, their eyes wouldn't be able to survive the glare. If they approach the surface, it might hurt their eyes, blinding them in the process. Therefore, it wasn't common for any Fishman to attack from above.

It was because of this that Illac managed to eat a huge loss. Just as his cone formation started, Megan turned to Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, Use the wings to make two cone formations and make it break through their defense." Zhao Hai nodded and then had the undead move according to Megan's method.

Illac stared at Zhao Hai's move, at the same time, his ears had also been open, listening to the messages from the front regarding the current situation. Illac's expression couldn't help but turn heavy, he really wasn't expecting the other party's capacity to command the undead to be this degree. In their past encounter, he thought that the other party can only command his undead to rush in and fight, he didn't expect that the Dark Mage was able to make a formation such as this. Even Fishmen would have a hard time

executing such a maneuver, but the other party had actually done it.

However, Illac can't think about it for too long. The front of his army has finally gotten in contact with the other party. As his cone formation clashed with the other party's cone formation, blood immediately came out. At the same time, the two wings of the opposite party started to also form a cone formation as it went towards the Sea Dragon Army.

Illac immediately ordered two armies to make a whirlpool formation to meet the opposing cone formations. But his reaction was still a bit late, after all, he was still focused on encountering the center army and wasn't able to see the side armies. But fortunately, although late, his side armies still managed to block the approaching cone formations, which made Illac's army fall into full defensive mode.

One could say that Illac's response was correct, even if he was late in meeting the side armies, he still managed to block both of them as well as Zhao Hai's center army.

But at this moment, the scorpion tail of Megan's formation had arrived. It dived down from above and attacked the top of Illac's cube formation.

The people at the top discovered the tail too late, so when word got sent to Illac, the division commanders at the top already met with the approaching army. But since there was no unified command, the top still haven't done a whirlpool formation, they just met the scorpion tail as they were. And under Megan's request, Zhao Hai had also turned the tail into a cone formation, acting like a drill as it barrelled towards the center of the cube formation.

When Illac heard the news from the top formations, he felt that his head has been hit by a stick as his vision saw stars. But since he was a competent general, he immediately took action. At this

point, the enemy had already broken through the first layer of the formation. So Illac immediately sent word for the second and third layer to change into a whirlpool in order to block the enemy attack.

Illac was fortunate that the subordinates on those layers were members of warring tribes, so their response was very quick. After the first layer was broken through, the second and third layer also started to slowly rotate.

Illac knew since the first layer was already broken through, the second layer also wouldn't be able to block in time. The whirlpool formation was quite strong, however, it would also need time to be set up. So Illac plans to have the second layer stall for time, blocking the scorpion tail just in time for the third layer to get its whirlpool formation fully operational.

Zhao Hai and the others were inside the Blade Scale Whale, paying attention to the response of the other party. At this time, Megan couldn't help but sigh and said, "It looks like I'm only up to this point. I didn't think that the other party would have such quick response. But the experimental formation still turned out good. At the very least, we have proven that its attacking might is quite strong."

Zhao Hai and the others nodded. Just from this clash, the other party was already placed on their back foot. Especially during the attack of the scorpion tail, it had actually punctured through two layers of the other party's formation. It was indeed a very good result.

Megan turned her head to Zhao Hai and said, "Elder Brother Hai, my trial for the Devil Scorpion is done. You can have them draw back and have Lizzy give it a go."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Alright". Then he waved his hand, making the three extending armies retreat back while the center army slowly backed out.

Illac's face turned ugly when he heard about the report. Although the people at the top managed to block the opponent's attack, the losses that they suffered wasn't small. At the same time, he was also nearly defeated, this made Illac very angry.

At this time, the opponent army suddenly retreated slowly, making Illac stare. But he immediately ordered all of his men to keep their position and not chase after the foe. He was afraid that this might be another of those plans of the opposite party. So Illac immediately made his cone formation turn back.

Upon withdrawing, Adam immediately surveyed each division. Then he tallied their losses while also paying close attention to the actions of Zhao Hai's group.

Adam saw that the core of the enemy was also in the middle of the cubic formation, just like the Fishmen. In the middle of the formation was a single Blade Scale Whale. But this whale was very different compared to the other undead. This Blade Scale Whale wasn't comprised of only skin and bones. Adam reckons that the Dark Mage was inside this Blade Scale Whale. This was because he had been looking at the cubic formation for a long time and couldn't find any other place for the opposite party to hide from. And it would be impossible for the mermaids to allow this commander to be exposed to the outside, so it was natural for this Dark Mage to be inside the great cubic formation.

Adam's vision focused on the out of the ordinary Blade Scale Whale. And at this time, Zhao Hai was also doing the same, focusing his sight towards the big urchin in the middle of the other party's formation. His human eyesight seemingly able to pierce into the far distance.

At this time, Zhao Hai's cubic formation had recombined. Zhao Hai calculated his losses and found out that more than 50 thousand undead has retreated into the Space. Such a short encounter actually made them lose that much, this was beyond what Zhao Hai was expecting.

However, Zhao Hao also found out that the other party had lost significantly more people compared to him. One must know that from the start of the attack to the present, only one hour has passed by. And in this one hour, the other party had already lost tens of thousands of people. This casualty count was very big.

But Zhao Hai didn't become merciful, he knew that if his heart were to turn soft, the losses due to this war would escalate even more. So he turned to Lizzy and said, "Lizzy, it's your turn. How do you want to attack?"

Lizzy smiled faintly and said, "I also want to try out a formation. I have given this formation the name of Four Armed Demon!"

Chapter 628 – Four Armed Demon

Zhao Hai said, “Four Armed Demon? That sounds scary. Tell me how you want to arrange it.”

Lizzy smiled faintly and said, “Big Brother Hai, did you manage to see the weakness of the opposite party’s cube formation? It actually has a weak point.”

Zhao Hai replied, “Weak point? What weak point? How could something that the Fishmen had used for so many years have flaws? So tell me, what is it?”

Lizzy smiled faintly, then she waved at the screen, enlarging the Sea Dragon’s cubic formation. After looking at the formation, Lizzy said, “Big Brother Hai, look at this, although the formation looks very secure and compact, it still had one shortcoming. When this formation makes a move, the are edges in the back that almost always stayed motionless!”

Zhao Hai had always felt that there was something off with this formation, but he wasn’t able to know the difference. But now that Lizzy reminded him, Zhao Hai finally saw it. Although the formation looked like a rubik’s cube, it functioned much more like a square. The square was able to rotate but the four back edges always stayed in place. Even when the top face rotated, they still stayed completely still. Although some Fishmen were on those faces, they seem to be isolated from the rest of the cube and weren’t participating in the fight.

When the group heard Lizzy, their eyes couldn’t help but light up. Lizzy looked at their expressions and faintly smiled, “This point looks like nothing, but it was actually a point of importance. Once you break those four edges, the cube would break. So I designed this Four Armed Demon formation in order to deal with that weakness. The center army would be attracting the attention of the enemy commander. And when the opportune moment

comes, four arms would make their move and target those weak spots!”

While talking, Lizzy drew the image of her formation on the monitor. The formation looks like a four armed man that would hug up the enemy’s cube box. And his four arms would be grasping the back edges of the opponent’s formation, effectively breaking it apart.

Zhao Hai and the others couldn’t help but look at Lizzy in a new light. The way Lizzy and Megan attacked were very different. Megan’s attack emphasized on good attack and battle maneuvers, going head to head with the opponent’s formation. But Lizzy actually looks for weaknesses in the enemy’s formation and capitalizing on that knowledge to make a formation that would be able to break the enemy’s formation.

If Megan were to be described as open and aboveboard, like a Warrior wanting a duel, overthrowing any ideas of underhanded tricks, Lizzy would be like a strong assassin, always actively looking for weaknesses in the enemy that she can exploit.

Lizzy turned to Zhao Hai and said, “So Big Brother Hai, is it possible?”

Zhao Hai laughed and said, “How could it not be possible? Look at this.” Then Zhao Hai waved his hand as the cube of undead advanced. While it was advancing, some undead magic beasts slowly crawled and formed four distinct armies on the edges of the army, ready to launch an attack at any time. Other places of the formation didn’t change in order to not attract Illac’s attention.

But this time, Illac was already being very careful. Zhao Hai’s attack managed to make him focus on his next movement. It doesn’t matter if the other party was Zhao Hai or not, but their command of undead made Illac startled. Because of this, even if Zhao Hai kept his cube formation as it advanced, Illac didn’t dare to lower his guard. Moreover, he was prepared for any change that

might suddenly spring out.

Zhao Hai pushed forward slowly, carefully making sure that nothing would be noticed on his formation. Zhao Hai knew that for Lizzy's formation to be successful, preliminary moves needed to be taken into consideration. Only when the enemy's attention gets focused on the center army would the four arms be allowed to make their move.

Illac was somewhat confused at Zhao Hai's slowly approaching army. He didn't understand where the other party's awesome formations went. If they had used a formation before, then they should have a formation for this time, that was for sure.

However, do they really want to attack like this? Illac didn't know what to think, therefore, he sent an order to stand by, preparing for any changes that might occur. His eyes were completely stuck at the other party's army, looking for signs of any changes in the formation.

Seeing the other party's reaction, Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile faintly and said, "We should employ multiple cone formations in order to attract the attention of the opposite army, then we'll go attack the four edges. Lizzy, what do you think?"

Lizzy nodded and said, "Alright, the most important thing about my formation is the attack on the four edges. If we lost this chance, then the other party might quickly come up with a solution. After all, the enemy is an experienced general."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he waved his hand as his cube formation changed into small cone formations. Then it slowly advanced towards the other army.

After seeing this move, Illac couldn't help but let out a long breath. As long as it's not those special formations, then he would have means to deal with it.

However, Illac still didn't treat this matter lightly. Rather, he

was currently focusing on his defense. He couldn't risk making a wrong move at this time. The tail of the Demon Scorpion was still fresh inside his mind.

Before long, the cone formation finally clashed with the opposing army. Everything seemed to be quite normal, there were not special things happening. This made it easier for Illac to command his army, everyone was perfectly following his commands.

In this fight between Zhao Hai and Illac, there was almost close to no long-ranged attacks. Zhao Hai didn't use any since he didn't want Illac to know that his undead were able to use long-ranged attacks. Illac didn't use any long-ranged attacks either because he knew how ineffective those would be against the undead. Unless these undead were hit in their vital points, they could still continue on and attack.

Hitting these undead with long-ranged attacks wasn't easy. And most importantly, whether it be Fishmen or magic beasts, once they use magic, they would appear weak for a short time. Doing these against close-combat undead was akin to courting death. Because of this, Illac chose to refrain from using any long-ranged attacks. Both sides were using melee in order to draw losses from each other.

Zhao Hai had a lot of cone formations in his attack, but Illac managed to block all of them while using the conventional whirlpool maneuvers. But Illac didn't use small whirlpools, he was using a big whirlpool in order to maximize the amount of defensive power that he can exhibit against these cone formations. At the same time, this would also slowly dull the tips of the enemy's cone formations.

This whirlpool formation was deemed to be the most defensively powerful formation of the Fishmen. Almost all Fishman armies were able to skillfully use and execute it, after all, it always comes in handy, especially in situations like these.

Zhao Hai's performance has also been satisfactory. It also seems like his use of small cone formations was the right decision.

At the same time, Zhao Hai and the others were also waiting for the opportune moment, that moment when the enemy starts to relax. Time passed by, and Illac started to feel relieved. The other party wanted to grind them down. But although Illac's rate of losses was greater than the other party, the enemy still only had 1 million people. If Illac can sustain for a bit more time, the enemy would have no troops left to grind them down.

At this time, Lizzy saw that the other party was quite attracted to the current situation, so she immediately turned to Zhao Hai and said, "Big Brother Hai, it's time to attack." Zhao Hai nodded, then with an intention, four arms suddenly sprang out of the four corners of his formation. All of them simultaneously going for the four edges of the opposite party's cube formation.

This change came very abruptly, the enemy didn't expect that Zhao Hai and the others would make this move. The Fishmen were already used to this cube formation. Not moving the four edges was done in consideration of it being easier for the overall command of maneuvering. But Zhao Hai didn't have this problem, he was commanding the undead, even if the entire formation were to make a collective move, it was still very possible. Zhao Hai's formation was extremely flexible to any change in form.

The Demon's four arms had now changed into four cone formations as it struck the four edges of the opposite party's cube formation. And since Zhao Hai had already attracted the enemy's attention into the center army, their response to this surprise attack came very late. Before Illac and the others made a response, the four cone formations were now making their way into the core of the cube formation.

The four troops on the edges didn't expect that they would be receiving an attack, so naturally they weren't able to make a proper response. And since their position was at an edge, it was

close to impossible for them to make any significant moves. The four undead formations were now killing through the cube formation as it headed towards the center. At this time, the whirlpool at the front was having problems, so Zhao Hai used this opportunity to have his center army push through.

Illac was looking for any changes in the battle. When the four arms came, Illac stared for a moment before his face paled and he commanded, "With me as the center, block the enemy, quick!"

His subordinates were truly worthy of being warring tribes, they were quite strong. After their initial reaction, they were immediately stabilized by their leaders. Then with Illac as the center, all other formations made their move and surrounded Illac. Then layers of rotation and counter-rotations began. Before long, a huge rotating bead was spotted in the middle of the cube formation.

Chapter 629 – Interesting Thing

The weakness that Lizzy had found out was actually already known to the Fishmen. They have used this cube formation for many years, so how could they be unaware of its weakness? The four edges supported the formation, they just couldn't ignore it.

Some people have been using this weakness in order to break the cube formation, so the Fishmen quickly found a way to deal with it. The method was actually very simple. It was to gather a group of elite troops into those edges in order to not let it be broken into. At the same time, they also developed a defensive formation, called Ball.

This ball formation was what Illac was using right now. With the commander at the center, the sphere would keep revolving and counter revolving layer by layer. It looks like meat grinder, anyone who entered this formation would be ground to paste.

In addition to these two methods, there was also a weakness in this method of breaking the formation. The troop requirements needed to accomplish such attack was very high. Their actions must be fast and their movements must be unified, making its composition very strict. This was because if there were any defects in any one of those four attacking divisions, then the entire operation would be placed in jeopardy. It was precisely because of this that this method of breaking the cube formation has slowly vanished from use, allowing the cube formation to dominate in the Fishman armies.

Although the ball formation was a very good defensive maneuver, and can defend against an attack on the four edges of the cube, its defensive power was still inferior to the whirlpool. Moreover, its counter-attacking capabilities are extremely low. Because of this, the formation had always been a backup formation. Almost nobody used this formation at this time.

Naturally, Lizzy and the others weren't aware about those considerations as well as restrictions in using their attack. After all, they were commanding undead, so they don't need to worry about minute flaws in their formation.

But when Illac did their ball formation, Zhao Hai's attack became useless. The ball formation might not be good in offense, but it can certainly hold its own when it came to defense. Especially against small attacks such as the Lizzy's four demon arms, it was incredibly effective. Before long, the four divisions of undead that Zhao Hai had sent had been grinded into nothingness.

Zhao Hai didn't worry about any of this and just commanded his undead to retreat, reforming their cube formation before going away.

At this time, Illac didn't dare to take pursuit. The recent attacks had almost scared him to death that the thought of pursuing didn't even enter his mind. Illac didn't expect Zhao Hai to use a formation that targeted the cube's weakness. One must know that this method hasn't been used for so many years. If Illac's troops weren't formidable, then he might have lost his life just then.

Illac doesn't understand what the other party wanted to do. The other party was using undead, so it was natural to think that all of them were expendable. However, the other party was using his undead as though it was an army, and also retreated after suffering some losses. This was completely unlike what a Dark Mage was supposed to do.

Illac and the other Sea Dragon's relationship with the other Dragons haven't been established in just a day or two, so they clearly knew what Dark Mages were. And they were clear that Dark Mages, when commanding a lot of undead, would just let them attack in a swarm-like manner. This way, the Dark Mages would use less magic as well as mental power.

When Dark Mages command the undead, they use magic power,

however, the consumption of their mental power was even more. When Dark Mages use formations, they would surely be using more mental power than usual. Because of this, Dark Mages rarely used formations when attacking with large numbers of undead.

But contrary to normal customs, Zhao Hai actually arranged the undead in formations and also had them fight like any normal army. This made Illac confused as well as afraid of Zhao Hai.

At this point, Illac was almost sure that the other party was Zhao Hai. If the other party was composed of a battalion of Dark Mages, they wouldn't be able to control the undead to such an astonishing degree. Not only can the undead change formations, it can also target weaknesses in the opponent's defenses. This was absolutely not something that a group of Dark Mages were capable of.

A Dark Mage can surely command undead into delicate positions, however, a group of them can't. After all, it was very difficult to find dozens of Dark Mages that were of the same strength and skill in Dark Magic. And since their skills were different, it was an inevitability that their control would have slight mistakes as well. These slight mistakes can be fatal to the battlefield. The only logical explanation to what just happened was that only one person was controlling the entire army of undead.

The reason why Illac dared to affirm the other party's identity was the fact that he was facing against undead and not people. In the end, Dark Mages weren't military men. Their genuine might in the battlefield relied on their undead. Only a few Dark Mages would dare study army formations at the same time. After all, shuffling between cultivating magic and studying formations was something near impossible to do.

Most importantly, an undead army doesn't have any low and middle-level officers. The quality of these officers would heavily affect the effectiveness of the army. Some good low and middle-level officers can spot any small change in the battlefield and would make the appropriate adjustments. A commander's word

would just act like a guide for these kinds of people, they can already do what was expected of them, and maybe even more.

However, the undead was different. They don't think before they fight, they just do what they were commanded to do. This led to Dark Mages seeing formations as useless in their way of fighting. They might as well let their undead rush the enemies down until one of them prevailed.

Once he had confirmed that the other party was Zhao Hai, Illac couldn't help but feel dread. For Zhao Hai to have the ability to command the undead to this degree was very terrifying to think about. This was something Illac wasn't expecting. At this time, Illac felt that he was fighting against a wise commander and his army, not a Dark Mage and his undead.

Although Illac managed to defend against the opponent's attack, the losses that he had suffered weren't small. Especially during the last encounter, it almost claimed Illac's poor life. Because of this, when Zhao Hai retreated, Illac immediately reformed his cube formation. However, he kept the ball formation ready just in case another attack came in their way.

But even if Illac was being careful, he was still very worried. Not because of the other party, but because of his army's current strength!

The troops that he commanded were all made up of Fishmen, and Fishmen were alive beings. Unlike the undead, these people had limits on how much stress their bodies can handle.

Illac was currently worried about the overall strength of his army. After going through offensive and defensive maneuvers, his army should be quite tired right now. When their strength gets too low, their situation would reach disastrous levels.

Illac didn't quite understand Zhao Hai's purpose of coming today. Why did he come? Did he just want to attack with 1 million undead only to get turned back? How could this be possible? Was

Zhao Hai this arrogant?

....

Zhao Hai and the others were currently inside the Blade Scale Whale. Lizzy's face turned quite ugly as she said, "Big Brother Hai, it seems like this method had already been thought through by the Fishmen. Otherwise, they wouldn't have come up with a response this quickly."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Their reaction was indeed very good. But since the Fishmen already knew about this weakness, why haven't they used it now? I'm quite confused about this."

Lizzy sighed and said, "It looks like I failed this time. I didn't think that my formation was already been used before."

Zhao Hai showed a faint smile and said, "That may not be the case. Although the formation seems like it has been used before, it doesn't mean that you can't use it anymore. Since the Fishmen rarely used it, then there should be some shortcomings in the your formation. If you can find solutions to those, then wouldn't you be invincible in the battlefield?"

Lizzy thought for a moment before she nodded and said, "This formation truly has a lot of weak points. I'm going to try and improve it. Megan, let's go."

At this time, Cai'er's voice suddenly came, "Young Master, I've discovered something interesting. Want to take a look?"

Zhao Hai stared, then he nodded and said, "Alright." After he responded, Cai'er changed the monitor's display, showing the image of the Dragon Palace.

Zhao Hai and the others were shaken upon seeing the image. They didn't think that there would be such a large reef. Moreover, the other party was actually able to move it, this was too shocking.

But when the monitor zoomed it, the group discovered something. Naturally, it wasn't the Dragon Palace that Cai'er

wanted to show them, but something in the palace instead.

Zhao Hai and the others were still some distance away from the Dragon Palace, so their eyes weren't able to see it. Only through the monitor were they able to see it.

After Cai'er enlarged the image, several people appeared. Zhao Hai couldn't help but stare when he saw these people. He hasn't seen Sea Dragons before, but he had heard about them from Luo Luo.

The reason why the Sea Dragons wore blue robes was because these robes were actually their scales. Dragons normally didn't wear any other clothing, otherwise it would transform along with them.

Because of this, Zhao Hai was sure from Alex's blue robes that he was a Sea Dragon. Moreover, it was certain that his status wasn't very low. This was because all other Sea Dragons were having him as their center.

Chapter 630 – Definitely

But this Sea Dragon wasn't the focal point of Zhao Hai's attention, it was the two other people right beside him. One of the two was a person that wore a golden robe. The other person wore a red robe and seemed to exude a sacred aura.

When Zhao Hai saw this red robed person, his eyes suddenly shrank. He knew what this sacred person was, he was certainly someone from the Radiant Church. At this point, Zhao Hai already had a certain understanding of the church. For someone to be able to wear this red robe meant that this person was an Archbishop.

After having thought about this, Zhao Hai couldn't help but look at Joshua for a few times. Although he didn't know Joshua's name, Zhao Hai still engrained the person's image into his mind. This was a good opportunity to understand the enemy. Zhao Hai was already thinking of turning Joshua into an advanced level undead. After that, Zhao Hai would then know about the internal workings of the Radiant Church.

After remembering Joshua's face, Zhao Hai turned his attention towards the golden robed man. This person had the temperament of someone formidable. Moreover, Zhao Hai can feel that this person had a similar aura with the Sea Dragons. This made Zhao Hai guess that this person was from the Dragon Race!

Zhao Hai carefully looked at Envoy Ao Ke, when he saw the horns hidden on Ao Ke's golden hair, Zhao Hai became sure of Ao Ke's status.

Laura and the others were similarly looking at the two and were also quick to discover their characteristics. After all, the two people looked extremely obvious, they didn't even make an effort to hide their identity.

Laura's face turned heavy as she turned to Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, it seems like the Radiant Church and the Dragons are

indeed allies. It seems like our speculations have been confirmed. The Dragons were truly people of the Divine Race.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “The emergence of these two people further confirms our guesses. The Divine Race is indeed already in action. Since the Radiant Church had failed, they moved to the Fishman Race instead. Regardless or not the Radiant Church succeeds, they would still conquer the sea. As long as they establish their influence here, then they can be considered invincible.”

Lizzy frowned as she said, “So what do we do now? Do we deal with them?”

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “No, we retreat and go tell Luo Ying about this information. After that, we’ll go to the Prairie and the Dwarves, telling them of this information as well.”

Megan nodded and said, “Right, information is of utmost importance. Moreover, the Dwarf Mountains isn’t far from the Accra Mountain. If the Dwarves are unaware of this, then it would be possible that they would suffer great losses.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he waved as the undead creatures spat out a black gas towards the Sea Dragon army. When Illac saw this, he didn’t dare to ignore it, so he immediately gave the command to slowly retreat. He didn’t want to be wrapped up by the black gas, who knew what that can do.

Fortunately, the black gas wasn’t quick, so Illac’s army managed to successfully turn back. However, Illac suddenly discovered something out of place. The black gas just fluttered around the battlefield, not going any further. Moreover, the clump of gas started to shrink towards the center. At this point, Illac immediately understood what the other party was doing as his face couldn’t help but change. Then he immediately had his army fully retreat, at the same time, he also sent word asking Alex for reinforcements.

The reason why Illac did this was because he understood that the

black gas did none other than turning the corpses into undead. Zhao Hai was collecting more undead! Once Zhao Hai completes this process, his undead army would increase. When that time comes, Zhao Hai would become much more troublesome to deal with.

Before long, the black gas vanished, completely cleaning out the entire battlefield. No corpses were left on the scene. Illac's face was incredibly ugly, but he still ordered his army to do a full retreat.

However, what surprised Illac was the fact that Zhao Hai's undead army was currently slowly backing away. They seem to be retreating, with no intentions of continuing their attack.

This surprised Illac, but at the same time he felt relieved. He was really afraid of the other party attacking. If they did attack, Illac wasn't sure that he would be able to block it.

Naturally, Illac didn't dare to pursue. Although he didn't understand why the opponent retreated, it was good for him that they turned back. Illac was genuinely terrified of Zhao Hai today. Not to say about the strength of the undead, but the abrupt movements of the formation were formidable as well. To be honest, Illac was quite envious of Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai's command over the undead was something that Illac wanted to have. Being able to command an army as though it was your limb was the pinnacle of a commander's dream. But that dream would be impossible to achieve. Even if one had the world's most disciplined army, coordinating them together would still prove to be quite the problem. This made Illac wish that he had an army similar to Zhao Hai.

Illac thought that if he were to have any army like Zhao Hai's undead, then he would remain undefeated in every battle that he's in. However, it was a pity that he wasn't a Dark Mage, he can't achieve what Zhao Hai had.

At this time, Alex and the others also noticed Zhao Hai's retreat,

so he stooped the reinforcements that was headed towards Illac. However, the recent battle made Alex's eyes shrink. He thought that if he were in Illac's place, he still wouldn't be able to fare better.

At this time, Ao Ke's voice was heard, "Joshua, can you pinpoint the origin of the other party? This guy is not only good at commanding undead, his formations are also clever. Such people aren't very good to deal with."

Joshua forced a smile and said, "I can confirm 100% that the other party is Zhao Hai. Only Zhao Hai can command the undead to this extent. Other Dark Mages simply aren't able to do it."

Alex nodded and said, "Let's return to the Great Hall and talk." Then the group returned to the Great Hall. But before they continued on, Alex left a message to a person next to him, "Go call General Illac over to the Great Hall." The person nodded before turning around to leave.

Before long, the three people have returned to the Great Hall. After taking care of his guests' seats, Alex turned to Joshua and said, "Bishop, are you really sure that the opponent is Zhao Hai?"

Joshua nodded and said, "I'm sure of it. No other Dark Mage can do what he just did. Even the people from the Calci Family aren't this proficient. In the entire continent, the most skilled in commanding undead is Zhao Hai. Therefore, I'm pretty sure that the other party is him."

Alex's face sank, then he said, "This Zhao Hai is too difficult to deal with. We need to make sure that he gets eliminated here. Otherwise, he would be a bad factor in God's plans."

Ao Ke nodded and said, "Right, this Zhao Hai is too fierce. Not only can he command undead, he can also exhibit battle formations. Most importantly, his undeads were very strong, at least 5th or 6th rank in strength. This is too scary. At the same time, he also managed to acquire more corpses before he left. It

seems like he can also make undead en masse. Imagine the implications of 1 million 5th or 6th rank warriors on land.”

Joshua nodded and said, “It is indeed scary. This person must be removed. He’s a danger to our plans.”

At this time, Illac came. Alex immediately beckoned him over. Illac gave the three a salute before Alex gave him a seat. Then Alex looked at Illac and said, “Illac, what did you feel when you fought with the opponent? Can you identify their identity?”

Without delay, Illac answered, “Your Majesty, I’m quite sure that the other party is Zhao Hai. Such an army cannot be commanded by a team of Dark Mages. It can only be directed by one person, otherwise, that degree of control couldn’t be achieved.”

Alex nodded, he was now entirely convinced that the opponent is Zhao Hai. Then Alex asked further, “The undead, how strong are they? The opponent’s ability to do formations, how is it?”

Illac replied, “The undead are very strong, about the same as a 5th rank magic beast. As for the formations, they seem quite weak. However, with constant practice, they would definitely be a threat on the battlefield. Your Majesty, this person must be removed. Otherwise, he would be a huge threat to our Sea Dragon tribe.”

Alex’s face completely sank. Illac, Joshua, and Ao Ke reached the same conclusion. With Zhao Hai’s strength, he cannot be allowed to remain alive any longer.

Alex turned his head to Joshua and said, “Bishop, what are your ideas? This Zhao Hai must never leave the sea, we absolutely cannot let him escape.”

Joshua nodded and said, “Naturally, it would be easier to deal with Zhao Hai here. It would be difficult to kill him in the continent. I’ve heard that the Buda Clan has multiple 9th ranks, moreover, this Zhao Hai’s personal strength is quite good as well. Rumors have been circulating in the continent saying that he has a

Space Divergent ability. When we deal with him, we absolutely must not let him run away.”

Ao Ke stared, then he frowned and said, “He also has a Space divergent ability? If this is the case, then things just got more troublesome. I have heard that people with that ability is almost always impossible to catch. Their ability to escape is unparalleled under the heavens.”

Joshua nodded, “I know that. So I’m planning on having our church’s relic sent over. This time, no matter the price, we must eliminate Zhao Hai!”

Then Alex said, “Relic? What relic? Can it prevent a person with a Space divergent technique from running away?”

Joshua nodded, “This relic is specifically meant to deal with people who have Space divergent abilities. As long as we have that relic, Zhao Hai certainly cannot run away!”

Chapter 631 – Lukewarm Elven Race

Envoy Ao Ke frowned and said, “Archbishop, it’s not time for cracking jokes. Is this relic something bestowed by the Gods? Otherwise, how could it possibly freeze space?”

Joshua shook his head and then sighed, “Although this relic wasn’t bestowed by the Gods, it actually held great significance for the Radiant Church. There have been several people with space divergent abilities in the continent before. These people were extremely difficult to deal with. Not only do they possess strong attacking power, but they are also impossible to catch. Every time the Radiant Church encountered these people, we would always take huge losses.”

Ao Ke and Alex nodded, they also understood that space divergent ability users were the most difficult people to deal with. If you offend someone like that, they would do their best to harm you while also having the leverage of being able to escape whenever they wanted. This ability made many people frustrated about space divergent ability users.

Joshua continued, “Then our Church’s 31st Pope came into existence. Not many knew about this, but he was a space divergent ability user himself. Being one of those people, the pope knew that there was no way to study nor pass on such an ability. So he thought of another way, he used his own body to perform experiments. He used both alchemy and magic formations in the whole process. And after years of research, he finally produced a metal element magic formation, this formation can be used to isolate space, making space divergent abilities malfunction. However, this achievement claimed his life. Because of this, the 32nd Pope declared the formation to be one of the Radiant Church’s sacred relics.”

Ao Ke and Alex couldn’t help but reveal shock in their faces. They couldn’t fathom how someone would use their own bodies

to perform experiments, all of it for the sole purpose of dealing with space divergent ability users. But after their initial shock, the two of them expressed their heartfelt admiration towards that Pope.

Alex sighed, then he calmed his mood and said, “So there’s actually such a treasure. Then that’s good. As soon as Zhao Hai arrives, then we would lure him towards this magical formation.” Ao Ke also nodded, “I’ve also sent word back to the clan. The Patriarch would be sending five 9th rank Dragons in order to participate in this war. However, since they would be using dragon beads, their power would be lessened. In the end, the main force in this war would still be the Sea Dragons.”

Joshua nodded and said, “Alright, but you have to know that the range of the formation isn’t very far. Moreover, it can only lock the Space inside it, conventional methods of movements would still remain unhindered. Therefore, if we want to deal with Zhao Hai, then we should be assured of our means.”

Alex nodded, then he turned to Illac and said, “Illac do you have any means to lure Zhao Hai? We’ll set the formation beforehand and then have Zhao Hai lured inside before having him besieged by the experts. This is the only surefire way of dealing with him.”

Illac nodded and said, “This shouldn’t be difficult. After we attack, we could just retreat slowly. Seeing this, I’m quite sure that Zhao Hai would capitalize on the opportunity to do damage. And even if we don’t attack, I can still take the defensive line forward, making Zhao Hai come in before he notices that the formation.”

Alex nodded and said, “Good, I think that we shouldn’t make a move in the following days. Let’s preserve our strength and wait until the Dragons and the Radiant Church’s relic arrives. After that, we’ll deal with Zhao Hai in one go. As long as we can deal with Zhao Hai, the Mermaids would certainly fall shortly after.”

Ao Ke nodded, “Although dealing with the Mermaid Clan isn’t

easy, it doesn't mean that it is impossible. As long as we attract their forces here, the Dragon Clan can dispatch some people and attack Mermaid Island. As soon as that place falls down, we would achieve victory."

Joshua nodded and said, "Right, then we'll wait until the sacred relic arrives before dealing with Zhao Hai. In the meantime, we'll be staying back, defending against further attacks by him."

Zhao Hai was completely unaware that Joshua and the others were already thinking up of ways in order to deal with him. He was currently inside the blade scale whale, discussing with Megan and Lizzy about today's tactical situation. They had fought for about half a day and had managed to find that their battle formations had weaknesses. However, these weaknesses also meant that there was room for improvement. Because of this, even if Megan and Lizzy hadn't defeated the enemy, they were still elated about the result.

They kept talking up until they had reached the Mermaid Clan's defensive line. Upon arriving, Zhao Hai immediately received his undead since he didn't want to cause any panic among the troops.

Luo Ying and the others were outside the formation, waiting for Zhao Hai to come back. Luo Ying was also somewhat worried, they had even prepared to reinforce him. So when she saw Zhao Hai return, she immediately felt relief.

After inviting Zhao Hai over to the Azure Dragon Snail, Luo Ying looked at him and said, "How was mister Zhao Hai's trip?"

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Very good. I managed to get more undead. But more importantly, I also to come across a very interesting thing."

When Luo Ying heard Zhao Hai, she couldn't help but ask, "Interesting thing?"

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Among the Sea Dragons was a

person from the Dragon Race as well as an Archbishop of the Radiant Church. Isn't this very interesting?"

"What!" Luo Ying was in great surprise. "Really? Did mister really see a Dragon and a person from the Radiant Church?"

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "I wouldn't dare joke about this matter. I did see a Dragon and someone from the Radiant Church. One wore a golden robe while the other wore the clothes of a red robed Archbishop. It seems like the Sea Dragons did indeed have a relationship with the Dragons and the Radiant Church."

Luo Ying's face turned ugly, "So it's like this. The implications of this is very heavy. Mermaid Island is in the surface, completely vulnerable to the attacks of flying Dragons. If they suddenly attack the island, then it would mean great trouble. I have thank mister for this information, I shall immediately pass it over to the Queen."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Aside from this, I really don't have anything else to say. General, I'll be heading back first. I think that the Sea Dragons wouldn't be attacking today. So General doesn't need to worry."

Luo Ying nodded, she knew that Zhao Hai must have hit the Sea Dragons very hard this time. They shouldn't be thinking about attacking right now.

After Zhao Hai returned to the blade scale whale, he immediately used the Space in order to return to Iron Mountain Fort before telling Green the information. He also gave Green a messenger fish and taught him how to use it. After that, he went to Golden Island and relayed the information to Kun, Rockhead, and Blockhead. Then he went to the Dwarf Mountains in order to tell them of the news as well.

Zhao Hai didn't appear inside the village, but instead, he flashed on the square outside the Divine Palace. There was currently nobody here, so he wouldn't be noticed, at the same time, this

place was also not far from the Dwarf Village.

Not long after Zhao Hai appeared, a Dwarf came. It didn't take too long for this Dwarf to recognize that their Foreign Elder Zhao Hai has come. So he immediately welcomed him to the village.

Billy was currently setting up for work, so when he found out that Zhao Hai had come he immediately invited him over to his office. After they sat down, Billy looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Little Hai, why did you come? Did something happen?"

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Yes, and it's not something trivial. Patriarch, did you know about the relationship between the Dragons and the Divine Race?"

Billy looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Relationship between the Dragons and the Divine Race? What does the two of them had to do with each other? Did the Dragons participate in the war against the Divine Race?"

When Zhao Hai heard Billy he immediately knew that the Dwarves had not recorded the relationship between the Dragons and the Divine Race. Fortunately, Zhao Hai went to the Fishman Race. Otherwise, he wouldn't have known about this hidden chess piece of the Divine Race.

Zhao Hai sighed and said, "The Dragons did participate in the war against the Divine Race. However, they weren't helping the people of the Ark Continent. Instead, they sided with the Divine Race, becoming their running dogs."

Billy stared, then his face couldn't help but change as he said, "Really? Where did you get this information? How could the Dragons be the dogs of the Divine Race?"

Zhao Hai nodded, then he narrated to Billy his experience with the Fishman race. Billy calmly listened to Zhao Hai, and when Zhao Hai finished Billy said, "I didn't expect that the Dragons and the Divine Race would have such a relationship. Fortunately, we

found out about it. Otherwise, we would certainly suffer losses. What do you plan to do right now?”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “I want to help the Fishmen deal with the Sea Dragons first. Then after that, I’ll go and try to deal with the Dragons. They needed to be taken care of, them occupying the Accra Mountain is too big of a threat. Accra Mountain houses the magic beast kingdom. If we have them control the magic beasts, then they would become good weapons of the Divine Race come wartime.”

Billy nodded, “If they indeed are people of the Divine Race, then it is right that they get eliminated. High level magic beast have wisdoms no less than us. If Dragons were controlling them, then it would be absolutely bad for us.”

Zhao Hai agreed, then he asked, “How’s the information about the Elves? If there’s nothing, we’ll tell them about this matter. Let’s see how they react to it.”

Billy nodded, then he sighed, “The Elves have always been slow to move, we cannot be anxious about this matter. Right, how are my people? Are they doing well?”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “They’re doing great. They’ve already adapted to the environment and had even managed to make new friends. Right, since I’ve already told you about what happened, I need to leave. I still need to head to the Prairie and inform the Beast King about this matter, having him prepare for the future.”

Chapter 632 – Imperial Water Oyster

The Beast King has been very happy these days. The Beast God's Spear has been returned to the Beastman Prairie, and for the Beastmen, this was a monumentally important matter. And for the Beast King, having the Beast God's Spear back would give him advantages in ruling the entire Prairie.

Although the name 'Beast King' held power and prestige, the actual authority that it held wasn't that big. Moreover, the Lion Race was also at the side, waiting. This made the Beast King quite uncomfortable.

But now that their Divine Artifact was back, his prestige has increased. In the past, those huge Warring tribes wouldn't give him too much face. But now, the situation has been improved. This was also good for his future plans.

The Beast King didn't dare to tell the other Beastmen about the Divine Race. The Beast King knew that the Beastmen had a flaw. Aside from the Patriarchs of the tribes, the other Beastmen were very simple minded, it was very easy for them to reveal any secrets. The Beastmen were different from the Dwarves. The Dwarves operated inside their mountain, which was structured like a fortress, no Human can simply go in and out of it. Due to this, there was little to no chance of any Dwarf revealing secrets to the outside world.

The Beastmen, on the other hand, was placed in the wide Prairie where Human merchants were free to go in and out, being able to easily contact with the Beastmen. If the Divine Race's matter was revealed too soon, then the Radiant Church would surely get wind of it.

Because of this, the Beast King's preparations for dealing with the Divine Race were all held in secrecy, hiding it from the majority of the Beastman population. For this plan to succeed, the Beast King

would need the full cooperation of the various big warring tribes. In the past, this was fairly impossible, but now that the Beast God's Spear is back, the Beast King's influence has reached its apex, allowing him to carry out his plan.

The Beast King has been in contact with trustworthy Patriarchs of the warring tribes in recent days. He told them about the Divine Race, making them swear to hold the matter in secrecy before he had them return and prepare.

On this day, the Beast King had just finished doing a task when a guard suddenly gave word. Zhao Hai has come. When the Beast King heard this, he stared for a moment before instructing his people to lead Zhao Hai into his living room.

Zhao Hai's is the Foreign Prince of the Beastman Race, so it can be said that his position in the Prairie is above the majority of people while his reputation isn't lower than the Beast King. Since he retrieved the Beast God's Spear, the Beastmen were very respectful to him. Even his Magic Lily Shop has received good reception by the Beastmen, making its business very good.

This Magic Lily shop was something that was opened by Zhao Hai, and since he was their Foreign Prince, the Beastmen treated him as one of them. The Beastmen knew the value of buying from one's own people. This made the shop's business very popular in the entire Prairie.

Fortunately, the Buda Clan has the Markey Family's business network at their back, so no matter what, they can service all of the Beastmen that came to them. And since Magic Lily shop always did business fairly, its reputation soared in the Prairie, which added to Zhao Hai's prestige.

After being led by a Tiger clansman to the room, the Beast King immediately cleared the room, only leaving Zhao Hai and him behind. Then he looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Little Hai, you came, did something happen?"

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Your Majesty, I came upon something while I was visiting the Fishman Race. There’s a rebellion currently happening in the sea. However, this isn’t so simple. I saw a Dragon and a person from the Radiant Church there. Moreover, I’ve also learned something from the Mermaid clan. The Dragons have participated in the war between the Ark Continent and the Divine Race. However, the Dragons were on the side of the Gods. This made me suspect that the Dragons were aces that the Gods have hidden, preparing all this time to deal with us. If they manage to conquer the seas, then they would gain a huge advantage in the future war. And if we add the Radiant Church and the Dragons, we would stand no chance. I’m telling you this because it might be possible that the Dragons would send people here. When I’m done dealing with the matters of the Fishmen, I would immediately go to Accra Mountain in order to cope with those Dragons!”

The Beast King listened intently to Zhao Hai, upon hearing everything, his face couldn’t help but change, “Are you sure? The Dragons claimed to be invincible in the continent, but I don’t think so. I can send some Beastmen to help you. You can also discuss this with the Dwarves and have them send troops as well. Our men would deal with the Dragons first!”

But Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “No, the Humans of the Continent are still unaware about the Divine Race. If you suddenly send troops to deal with the Dragons, the Dragons would certainly stop it. At that time, a great war might happen, causing our side some losses. Just preserve your own strength. You can rest assured that I can manage this. You don’t need to worry too much.”

The Beast King looked at Zhao Hai, then he lightly sighed and said, “Alright, but if you need our help, don’t hesitate to send word. We Beastmen are always willing to die for our brothers!”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “No need to be uptight about this. Right, Your Majesty, I’ll be heading back to the Fishmen. The

war is still going on, I can't just leave for a long time."

Then the Beast King personally delivered Zhao Hai outside. Upon seeing Zhao Hai leave, the Beast King couldn't help but sigh. He suddenly felt helpless deep inside. The Beastmen generally didn't fear anything, but their enemy this time is just too strong. Even if they are Beastmen, they needed to bear with it patiently. They can only look at Zhao Hai like an outsider as he deals with the Radiant Church and the Dragons. The thought of this made the Beast King feel uncomfortable.

Zhao Hai didn't think about this, to him, the importance of informing the Beastmen and the Dwarves about the Dragon Race was just to make those two races defend themselves. He wanted them to be safe as much as possible. Dealing with the Dragons isn't very difficult for Zhao Hai.

When Zhao Hai returned to the Space, he finally let out a sigh of relief. He had finally plugged the leak. He was really afraid that this leak would be exploited by the Dragons.

Nobody in the continent knew about the relationship between the Divine Race and the Dragons. If the Dragons were to attack with the Divine Race, then the Beastmen and the Dwarves would surely be placed in great danger. It was good that he came to the Fismen at this time.

While thinking about this, Zhao Hai entered the Space's villa. But when he entered, he couldn't help but stare. He wasn't expecting the place to be so lively.

When he walked in, Zhao Hai saw Laura, Lizzy and Megan inside, discussing tactics. Naturally, Laura was only giving comments from time to time, the ones who talked a lot were Lizzy and Megan.

Lizzy and Megan both seem to have a natural instinct for strategy. This was something that one is born with, not learned. Once they are able to sense the changes of the battlefield, the two of them would surely become famed generals before long.

Zhao Hai didn't go and disturb them, he just went to the hot spring underground and soaked in it, relaxing his body and mind. In the past few days, the Divine Race's matter had made his entire being stiff, making it hard for him to breathe. But what gave Zhao Hai more headache was the fact that the Demon Race still haven't revealed themselves. Zhao Hai already has some understanding about the Divine Race, but for the Demons, he was entirely clueless. This gave him a huge headache.

After having rested for the rest of the evening. Zhao Hai was invited by Luo Ying to the Azure Dragon Snail the next morning. But Luo Ying wasn't intending to discuss war with Zhao Hai, she came to look for him for a totally different matter.

When Zhao Hai came to the hall, Luo Ying immediately said, "Mister, please sit down."

The Luo Ying who was generally cold had suddenly turned warm, this made Zhao Hai feel strange. He looked at Luo Ying, puzzled, before he said, "What matter does general want me for?"

Luo Ying smiled faintly and said, "Something good has arrived. The clan had sent me some items to give to Mister."

Zhao Hai asked, "Something for me? What are they?"

Luo Ying smiled faintly and said, "Take them here." Then two Mermaids carried two bottles over. The bottles had sand and some aquatic plants in them, but they weren't relevant. What's relevant were the actual contents of the bottles. One held a white oyster, while the other had an azure snail.

The white oyster had no patterns on it, it was pure white, the kind of white that would make one stare at it for quite some time. As for the azure snail, it looked just like a snail, nothing was special.

Seeing Zhao Hai's confused look, Luo Ying couldn't help but smile and said, "I came to know that mister likes to collect unique

lifeforms. This oyster is a special type of being in the sea, we call it Imperial Water Oyster. This oyster can grow a pearl that held some properties. The pearl can increase one's water element attacks. The bigger the pearl, the better its effect. It's quite a precious magic beast of the sea."

Zhao Hai's face changed into glee as he looked at this common looking oyster. He didn't think that this little thing would have such good use.

Seeing that Zhao Hai liked the oyster, Luo Ying smiled and then continued, "This snail is actually a young and living Azure Dragon Snail. Young Azure Dragon Snails have yet to form patterns on their shells. Only after ten years would the dragon patterns appear. The more years pass, the more distinct the patterns would become."

Surprise! This was definitely a surprise for Zhao Hai. He had long yearned for an Azure Dragon Snail, but this snail was a treasure for the Mermaid Clan, so he was too embarrassed to ask for one. And since the snail is too rare, he might not even be able to find one. He wasn't expecting the Mermaids to gift him one today, this was really a good gift.

Chapter 633 – Frequent Each Other

For ordinary people, these two things would be impossible to be put into good use. The Imperial Water Oyster would need years before a pearl can be made. And the longer the pearl stays inside the oyster, the better its effect would be. However, the life of a Human can only be so much. When the pearl reaches a formidable level, its owner might have already died.

The same was true for the Azure Dragon Snail. Although the snail had a lot of uses, it would still need several hundred years before it can become good. If one wants to have the same Azure Dragon Snail as the Mermaid clan, then one would still have to wait for a thousand years. Even 9th rank experts couldn't live for that long, much less average people. It was virtually useless.

But Zhao Hai was different, he has the Space which was going against heaven's will. So these two marine beings have great use for him. The Space can accelerate growth, so if he placed the Azure Dragon Snail inside, it wouldn't take too long for it to grow into something formidable. Moreover, he can also produce more Azure Dragon Snails.

There is also the Imperial Water Oyster. It might not be relevant to have one or two, but if this thing can be mass produced, then the situation would become different. This water element treasure was something extremely useful for Water Mages since their attack would become three times stronger. If the pearl gets mass produced and handed over to the Water Mages of the continent, then the overall power of the continent would be increased.

Naturally, since this thing is precious to the Fishman Race, they weren't able to mass produce it. But it was different for Zhao Hai, if he wanted more, then he would have more. And the oyster would be much different in the Space. The oyster might not produce a pearl in the sea, but in the Space, it was certain that it would make one.

Seeing Zhao Hai's expression, Luo Ying knew that Zhao Hai was satisfied with the gifts. Luo Ying couldn't help but appreciate Luo Luo. The information that Luo Luo gave her had become very important.

Zhao Hai received the two bottles, then he turned to Luo Ying and smiled, "I've made the General go through much troubles for me. This one is indeed interested in collecting unique things. I wish to have as many unique marine things as possible."

Luo Ying smiled and said, "Mister is too polite. I've already sent word, making people collect as much unique things as possible. I believe that they would be sending those over in a few days."

Zhao Hai smiled and then said, "Then I'll have to thank the general. I'm planning to suppress the Sea Dragons today as well. I also want to see how the Radiant Church and the Dragons respond. What do you think?"

Luo Ying thought for a moment and then said, "Alright, then I'll have to trouble mister. In two days, the clan's reinforcements would arrive. When they come, we can do a general attack."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Good, then I'll attack the Sea Dragons in the meantime. When your army is completed, then we can attack together. Just take these following days as a break and take a good rest."

Luo Ying nodded, then she stood up and bowed to Zhao Hai, "Mister's great kindness towards my Mermaid Clan will not go unremembered. If mister needs something in the future, me and my clan would surely come to your assistance."

Zhao Hai stood up and laughed, "General is too polite. I've only come to help this time because we have a common enemy. What General said made this Zhao Hai blush. If General has nothing else to say, then I shall be taking my leave."

Luo Ying nodded and then said, "Then I won't be stopping

mister.” Then Zhao Hai gave Luo Ying a salute before turning around to leave. When Zhao Hai left, Luo Ying turned to Luo Luo and said, “Luo Luo, you have contributed greatly this time. It seems like mister really likes to collect strange things. We must collect more things for mister, the sea is near endless, we should be able to find things that he likes.”

Luo Luo smiled and said, “General is too polite. But General, I don’t understand. It takes a lot of effort to collect such things. All of this just for mister’s help?”

Luo Ying smiled faintly and said, “Silly thing, you’re quite clueless. All this effort is not just a gesture of gratitude towards mister Zhao Hai. You might have heard, the Radiant Church, Dragons, and Sea Dragons have started to work together. I’m afraid the coming of the Divine Race would arrive soon. Mister Zhao Hai is an ally of the Dwarves as well as the Beastmen. He will surely be a central figure in the fight against the Divine Realm. Such a person is worth all of our effort.”

When Luo Luo heard Luo Ying, she stared for a moment before she completely understood. Her face was pale when she asked, “General, will the Divine Realm really invade us?”

Luo Ying sighed and said, “According to the recent developments, the invasion is for certain. The races in the continent would surely suffer a disaster.”

Zhao Hai didn’t know about what Luo Luo and Luo Ying were talking about. After all, he was currently in the Space, staring at the two bottles in his hand. Inspecting them with great curiosity.

Just as the group was staring at the bottle with the Azure Dragon Snail, the Space issued a prompt. It told them that it was possible to rear the two marine magic beasts, this made Zhao Hai feel relieved. At this time, Laura tapped the Azure Dragon Snail’s bottle and said, “Brother Hai, make Cai’er raise this one. When the time comes, we would also have our own Azure Dragon Snail.” The

Azure Dragon Snail that Laura meant was naturally the one that Luo Ying was currently using.

Zhao Hai looked at Laura and smiled, “How could that be so simple ? The Mermaid Clan’s Azure Dragon Snail had underwent many years of refining. Let’s wait for a few days, then I’ll go and ask whether we can gain access to this Water Refining method. This method is going to be very useful.”

Lizzy didn’t care about this so much, she turned to Zhao Hai and said, “Big Brother Hai, let’s go. I want to test my formation on the Sea Dragons today.”

Upon hearing Lizzy, Zhao Hai couldn’t help but laugh, “Alright, we’ll be heading to the Sea Dragons in order to practice battle formations.” Then he waved his hand to summon his undead army before they went forward.

Alex and the others have set up their army formation quite early and waited. They knew that since Zhao Hai gained the upper hand yesterday, he would surely come back today. So they decided to not go on the offense, but instead focused on defense.

They were waiting as well, as long as the sacred relic of the Radiant Church arrives along with the Dragon Clan’s experts, Zhao Hai would finally be dealt with. So what they want to do right now was to defend with all they have.

However, Illac had pushed their line of defense forward. This was to prepare for Zhao Hai in the future. Because they had gone forward, when they plan to deal with Zhao Hai in a few days, they can just move the army backwards, making Zhao Hai fall into the center of the magic formation. At that time, he would then be besieged by experts.

Illac was currently sitting inside his huge sea urchin, his eyes focused on the distance. He had a hunch that the enemy would be coming today. And sure enough, a cubic formation slowly appeared. Illac immediately ordered the army to prepare

themselves for battle.

The men of Illac's army didn't dare to be neglectful this time. They had already experienced the might of Zhao Hai's undead yesterday. They didn't expect that they would be placed in such a predicament by those undead.

Zhao Hai was sitting inside the Blade Scale Whale's body, he looked at the monitor and then said, "Lizzy, Megan, what formations do the two of you want to test today?"

Lizzy smiled and said, "Let me try first. I want the same Demon as yesterday."

Zhao Hai looked at her and said, "Alright, how does your Demon plan to deal with the enemy?"

Lizzy smiled faintly and said, "Big Brother Hai, the cube formation that the other party was doing today might be very good. But you can see that it has distinct edges and corners. My new Demon formation would look like a big octopus. Combat units on the tentacles of the octopus would attack those edges and corners. Although those places are filled with elite troops, changing their position wouldn't be very easy for the commander. Making it possible for us to slowly, bit by bit, grind those edges."

Then Lizzy drew her formation on the monitor. Zhao Hai understood what Lizzy wants, she wanted those troops to entangle the cube like an octopus' tentacle. These troops would then be akin to a file, grinding down on those edges of the cube.

Zhao Hai thought that this formation seemed to be quite interesting. So he nodded and waved his hand, ordering the undead like how Lizzy wanted. Then he sent them out to attack the other party.

Illac was currently in his command center, calmly looking at the enemy. He wanted to know what formations the other party had prepared for him today. To be honest, Illac couldn't help but feel

like he was currently playing chess with the enemy. This feeling was something that had stuck to his mind.

Zhao Hai's undead quickly arrived at the other party's cube formation. Then the undead formation suddenly changed, it had sprouted a lot of tentacles, all of which were heading towards Illac's formation

But Illac was an experienced war General, so he knew what the other party wanted to do. Upon seeing the enemy he immediately commanded, "Change formation, make a ball formation with me as the center." Then his command got passed through as the formation moved slowly. With Illac as the center, troops were rotating, layer by layer around him.

Lizzy didn't expect the other side to change formation this quickly. Her Demon formation was highly effective against the cube formation, however, it was unsuitable against the ball formation.

At this time, Megan said, "Good, they turned into a ball. Elder Brother Hai, use my Connecting Thorns in order to deal with them." After Megan saw how the enemy used the ball formation yesterday, she immediately racked up her brains in order to find a way to deal with it. The method that she had developed was exactly this 'Connecting Thorns.

This formation is very basic and simple, it was just a bunch of small cone formations lined up with each other. Then this line would oppose the direction that the ball formation was rotating, scratching its surface and breaking some of the enemies off.

Zhao Hai nodded, then he immediately changed the arrangement for the undead. The tentacles shrank as small cone formations appeared, then it went to oppose the spinning motion of the other party's formation.

Chapter 634 – The True War

Everyday in the next four days, Zhao Hai had brought his undead to attack the Sea Dragons' base. Fighting with the Sea Dragons had become a game to Lizzy and Megan. The ideas that they had come up were endless, most of them were something that Zhao Hai wouldn't have thought of. Seeing the two women being excited made Zhao Hai speechless. He really didn't expect these two to be this enthusiastic.[1]

In these four days, the Sea Dragons were also very calm. But now, they are ready, the Radiant Church's sacred relic had arrived. It was a huge magic formation made using seven minor metallic formations . But this formation didn't have a very large area of operation. The whole formation can only encompass about a thousand square meters. After this area, the effectivity of the formation would largely drop up until it couldn't suppress space anymore.

This thousand square meter area is not very big, especially to experts like Zhao Hai, they can pass this distance in just a blink of an eye. But if he were to be surrounded in this thousand meter squared area, he would still be in deep trouble.

At this point, the Sea Dragons were only waiting for the experts from the Dragon Clan to arrive. The Radiant Church had also sent four 9th rank experts, with Joshua in the mix, the Church had 5 9th rank experts participating. Besides Ao Ke, the Dragon clan had sent 5 9th rank experts, all in all counting up to six. Finally, the Sea Dragons had their own nine 9th rank experts. Altogether, there were 20 9th rank experts in this operation to deal with Zhao Hai. Because of this, Alex and the others were confident. They believed that Zhao Hai would finally be dealt with.

While the Sea Dragons were preparing, Luo Ying's side hadn't been idle either. These days, reinforcements had finally arrived. Right now, their army was numbered nearly 20 million troops.

When Zhao Hai heard this number, he couldn't help but get startled. 20-million-troop army, what kind of concept was that? Zhao Hai felt that this number could actually fill the entire ocean.

Luo Ying also prepared to make a move in two days. It can be said that the two sides were already preparing for their war. At the request of Luo Ying, Zhao Hai rested for two days. He didn't find any trouble with the Sea Dragons since he knew that Luo Ying was preparing to attack them.

When the Sea Dragons saw that Zhao Hai hadn't come, they couldn't help but stare. Then they immediately sent someone to check only to see the present Mermaid army.

After knowing about this, Alex immediately took Joshua and Ao Ke to the palace hall as he told them the scout's report.

After hearing Alex out, Ao Ke couldn't help but laugh and said, "Alright, then let's wait for them to get prepared. The opportunity finally came, so while we restrict their army here, the Patriarch would also have people go and attack Mermaid Island. Extinguishing their root in one fell swoop."

Joshua nodded and said, "The Church shall also help. We must give ruin to Mermaid Island. With the destruction of that place, the enemy's morale would be low. When the time comes, we can seize the opportunity and counter-attack."

Alex nodded and said, "Then I'll be troubling you two. When the experts from the Dragon Clan arrive, we would then be able to deal with Zhao Hai. After that, we can deal with the Mermaids."

The two nodded, then Joshua said, "We should set the formation up. So when Zhao Hai arrives, we can direct him there and the eliminate him."

Alex nodded, "Good, I'll have to ask the Archbishop's help in arranging the formation. As long as that gets set up, the only thing we will be waiting for would be Zhao Hai's attack."

But Ao Ke still knit his brows and said, “The Mermaid army has already been assembled. If they work together, then wouldn’t dealing with Zhao Hai be more difficult?”

Alex smiled faintly and said, “Envoy can rest assured, the love of the Mermaids are quite well known. Even if they had a large army, I think they would still let Zhao Hai and his undead take the lead. This is to ensure that they would suffer the least losses. So as long as Zhao Hai takes to the front, our plan can still go through.”

Ao Ke nodded and said, “Alright, then we’ll have to ask the Archbishop to prepare. When my people arrive tomorrow, we shall prepare our ambush. The moment Zhao Hai enters the formation is the moment he gets exterminated.”

Joshua nodded, then he walked out of the hall along with Ao Ke and Alex. The other two wanted to see how this formation was going to be arranged.

Joshua arrived outside, and long with several Sea Dragons, he went towards the battlefield. A couple of days ago, he had already chosen a place not too far from Illac’s army position. The place was in a narrow valley, so if Zhao Hai chases after Illac, he would surely come upon the formation.

After arriving at the place, Joshua made several Fishmen dig seven ditches first; one in the middle and then six on the surrounding area. The ditch wasn’t too deep, only about 2 meters down. Any deeper and it would affect the strength of the formation.

After having dug the holes, Joshua retrieved seven one-meter diameter discs from his space bag. These seven discs were made out of unknown metal, all of them were sparkling and beautiful. Etched on top of them were some mysterious symbols.

Joshua delicately placed the seven discs on each hole, carefully adjusting its angle and direction. After some time, when the discs were adjusted properly, the seven discs had started to give out a

faint glow, but faint enough that it couldn't be easily spotted.

After seeing this, Joshua knew that the magic formation had been placed properly. Then he instructed the Fishmen to carefully bury the discs. After that, the magic formation had already been set.

The next day, the experts from the Dragon Clan had arrived. Ao Ke and the others immediately handed them some water repelling dragon beads. When they prepared for the ambush, the Fishmen also took out a few large shells for them to stay in. These shells were also special products of the sea. Although its offensive and defensive strength wasn't very good, it still had the ability to mask the breath of a person. The Fishmen had given this shell the name Stealth Shell. I cannot really make someone stealthy, it just manages to hide a person's aura.

The stealth shells were placed right next to Joshua's magic formation. When they became disguised, nobody can see them from the outside anymore.

Since the formation was placed right behind Illac's army, Luo Ying wasn't able to spot it. At this time, they were still in preparation, getting ready to deal with the Sea Dragons in one go.

But at this time, Ao Ke and Joshua had also written a letter to tell the Dragon Clan and the Radiant Church about the current situation. The Dragon Clan and the Radiant Church immediately organized a group of experts and had them sent over to Mermaid Island, prepared to eliminate the Mermaid Clan.

Two days after Luo Ying started her preparations, the battle would finally begin. And just as Alex guessed, to Luo Ying had Zhao Hai take the lead with his undead army.

This idea was actually proposed by Zhao Hai, and Luo Ying didn't object to it. During the days where Zhao Hai was fighting with Illac, the undead in his hand had not reduced. Instead, it had gotten more and more. At this point, the Fishman undead that he

had amounted to more than 2 million.

After everything had been prepared, Zhao Hai left with his undead first, then followed by Luo Ying's army. While sitting inside the Blade Scale Whale and looking at the monitor, Zhao Hai turned to Lizzy and Megan and said, "When the battle starts, I'll have the two of you take command. What do you think?"

Lizzy turned her head and took a glance at the army that was not too far behind them. Her eyes couldn't help but turn red from excitement as she said, "Alright, commanding in battles is really fun."

The similarly excited Megan nodded. When he saw the two, Zhao Hai couldn't help but laugh. Megan and Lizzy had become more and more like generals in the past few days. Their strategies were getting more and more decent compared to their first ones. It had become more impossible for the enemy to break their formations as the flaws have gotten less and less.

The army was getting closer and closer to the Sea Dragons' defensive line. Adam had also spotted their army, but he didn't plan to challenge Zhao Hai right now. His purpose was to direct Zhao Hai to the magic formation. Therefore, he immediately ordered his army to slowly retreat.

This was also a normal thing to do. Illac's men numbered 10 million while Luo Ying had 20 million. With a difference of more than double, it wasn't a mystery why Illac retreated.

Zhao Hai didn't care about this as he commanded his undead to go forward. But at this moment, Zhao Hai was suddenly stunned as he turned to Lizzy and said, "Look, right there, aren't those people?" Then he pointed towards a spot in the monitor.

Lizzy and the others followed Zhao Hai's finger and saw that nearby Illac's army were several big shells. In these big shells were people, some were Humans while some were Dragons. Moreover, their strengths seem to be formidable.

Lizzy frowned and said, “Big Brother Hai, what do they intend to do? Do they want to ambush us? They look strong, perhaps 9th rank experts.”

Zhao Hai nodded, but he still didn't make army stop. He proceeded to advance slowly as the magic formation appeared in the monitor. Lizzy and the others carefully looked at the magic formation, but since they weren't acquainted with the art, they were puzzled when seeing it.

Zhao Hai was also clueless, at this time, Laura frowned, “Brother Hai, what is this? I can understand them using 9th ranks to deal with us, but a magic formation? What are they planning to do?”

Zhao Hai frowned as well as he looked at the buried magic formation. After a while, he shook his head and said, “I don't know, but it doesn't matter. We'll come to know about it soon.” He said as he still urged his undead to go forward.

Chapter 635 – Besieged

Zhao Hai knew that informing others about this was impossible. Although these people were 9th rank experts, they were currently inside a shell, with their aura's completely hidden. Moreover, these shells were also buried under the seabed. If Zhao Hai didn't have the monitor, then it would be impossible for him to spot these people.

However, Zhao Hai also didn't understand what this magic formation would do. So to be safe, he had Laura and the others return to the Space. In any case, nothing will happen to him, he can crystallize, making people unable to do damage to him. Moreover, he also has so many undead. Although they have 5th or 6th rank strength right now, all of them can instantly return to being 9th ranks. With these many 9th rank creatures, the enemy's 9th ranks would be useless.

But Zhao Hai didn't want to show his cards so easily. He still wanted to see what the other party wanted to do and what effects this magic formation had.

Laura and the others didn't object to Zhao Hai's idea to deliver them to the Space. Although they were also 9th rank experts, their experience in battle was very low. At the same time, they also didn't have Zhao Hai's crystallization ability. They would only burden Zhao Hai if they chose to remain here.

Zhao Hai commanded his army to move forward as though he didn't notice the ambush at all. He believed that as soon as he enters the magic formation, the other party would start to attack. He had counted the number of opponents, 20 people, not more not less, 20 people.

Twenty 9th rank experts! Seeing this number made Zhao Hai smile, the enemy surely did regard him very highly. Sending 20 9th ranks just to deal with him was very interesting.

Although Illac was retreating, he made sure that his retreat wasn't fast. If he went back faster than he wanted, Zhao Hai might stop and send his undead towards him. Illac managed his army carefully, attracting Zhao Hai closer and closer to the formation. As soon as Zhao Hai enters, then everything would be taken care of.

Zhao Hai sat inside the blade scale whale, in his hand was his Blood Ghost Staff. His two eyes intently staring at the opposing army as he calculated his entry to the magic formation.

The people in ambush were also waiting for Zhao Hai to enter the formation. Time passed by bit by bit as Zhao Hai got closer and closer to their encirclement

Zhao Hai counted in his mind, "Ten, nine, eight, seven, six, five, four, three, two, one," When he reached 'one' he had finally entered the formation.

Sure enough, when he entered the formation, the seabed suddenly moved as 20 shadows appeared from the bottom of the sea. Upon coming out, these people immediately got to work. Some of them were charged with handling the undead while some barrelled towards the blade scale whale.

Zhao Hai also made his move, he received the blade scale whale to the Space and then turned towards the approaching enemies. What made Zhao Hai feel strange was the fact that the enemy hadn't used their magic formation yet.

Zhao Hai didn't know that the formation was already in effect. It's just that its function was to lock the space, nothing else.

If Zhao Hai really had a space divergent ability, then he would have already felt that his power was suppressed. But unfortunately, Zhao Hai didn't have such an ability. His Space and the Ark Continent's space divergent ability were two different things.

Space abilities of the Ark Continent were different, no matter how good it was, it still uses the space of the continent. On the other hand, Zhao Hai's Space was another thing completely. His Space was inside his body, a variant Space that had no relationship with the Ark Continent. Because of this, the enemy's magic formation was useless to Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai had thought that the purpose of the enemy's magic formation was to attack him, or maybe to suppress his movements. But it looks like the magic formation was not functioning right now, which made Zhao Hai puzzled. He couldn't understand what this magic formation would do, why did they set this up?

However, the situation didn't allow him enough time to think. Ninth rank experts were currently throwing themselves towards him. Zhao Hai smiled and then had the undead try to block those people. Zhao Hai didn't have them show their 9th rank strength, so they were still 5th to 6th ranks, he wasn't planning on revealing his hand too soon.

Although there were 20 people on the opposing side, these people weren't a threat to him. So he just wanted to test his strength against these people.

Zhao Hai looked at the enemy, they were composed of Sea Dragons, Dragons, and people from the Radiant Church. This scene made Zhao Hai feel excitement. He really wanted to see how strong these Sea Dragons and Dragons were.

The 5th to 6th rank undead were unable to block all of the 9th ranks. Faced with the attacks of the enemy, Zhao Hai waved his staff and said, "Condense!"

This 'Condense' magic was a basic spell of Water Mages. This magic made all of the surrounding waters solidify, trapping any enemy within it.

One must know that Zhao Hai was now a 9th rank expert, so his 'Condense' magic couldn't just be ignored. If an 8th rank were to

receive Zhao Hai's Condense magic, then that 8th rank wouldn't be able to move.

The enemy that Zhao Hai was facing right now were 9th rank experts, 6 people at this time. These 6 people were all from the Sea Dragon tribe. The Sea Dragons knew that they were the strongest ones when it came to underwater combat. Although the Dragons and the Humans were also 9th rank, they're strengths were still suppressed by the sea. Therefore, the Dragons and the Humans became in charge of dealing with the undead while the six Sea Dragon experts were going to deal with Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai played along and had his undead bluntly attack. Although the present strengths of these undead were 5th or 6th rank, they still numbered about 2 million. No matter how fierce one was, even if they were 9th rank, one still couldn't ignore such numbers.

The six Sea Dragons felt the change of the surrounding waters, but since they were 9th ranks, it only affected them a little. After all, Sea Dragons were experts of Water magic as well. The eyes of the Sea Dragons couldn't help but turn smug before it was replaced by a cruel expression. They gave a shout before their blue robes turned into blue armor, their head ornaments turned into Dragon helmets, and their gloves became sharp claws.

Zhao Hai stared at what just happened, he just saw clothes that acted as the one that he had, both were clothing that can transform.

Zhao Hai knew that adult Dragons had three transformation. The first one would be their humanoid form, the one where they wore their robes. This form was called Human form by the Dragon race. The second form was their armored state, this was the fighting form of the Dragon race. Moreover, in this form, their strength would be twice their strength on their Human form. The final form is their true body state. This was when they completely become Dragons, of which they can exhibit their full power.

But since Zhao Hai was trapped inside a formation and was unable to escape, he was just akin to a fish in a barrel. Moreover, if they used their true form, the place would get cramped, given how small the area of the formation was. Only two Dragons can attack Zhao Hai each time. Therefore, the Sea Dragons opted to fight using their Armored form.

While Zhao Hai stared, a Sea Dragon rushed towards him. His claws extended as he swung towards Zhao Hai's head. His entire claw was covered with blue scales which also flashed some blue radiance, showing that this attack was a serious one.

Zhao Hai's hand moved, meeting this attack with a sideways stroke. The Blood Ghost Staff in his hand met the other party's attack. Zhao Hai didn't transform the staff into a sword, he struck with the intention of testing the defensive capabilities of the enemy.

The other party wasn't expecting the Mage Zhao Hai to retaliate with a strong melee attack. He couldn't block it, so the staff smashed into his chest. The Sea Dragon felt as though his chest was hit with an extremely heavy hammer. His lungs emptied as his body was smashed backwards.

This startled the Sea Dragon, he had actually been injured. He immediately retreated as he took a few breaths and suppressing the blood flowing out of his body. At the same time, the eyes of the Sea Dragon focused entirely on Zhao Hai.

One must know that the bodies of Sea Dragons were very formidable. Zhao Hai's blow actually damaged the Sea Dragon's armored body. This was beyond what he had expected, this also made him understand Zhao Hai's strength.

At this time, the attacks of the other Sea Dragons also arrived. Although all of them were 9th ranks, this was the first time that they had ganged up on one enemy, so their cooperation wasn't the best. However, they still surrounded Zhao Hai, they absolutely

cannot have Zhao Hai leave the formation.

After Zhao Hai's staff repelled the Sea Dragon, the attack of another Sea Dragon had already arrived. The Sea Dragon shone a blue light as Zhao Hai felt the water around his body turn a lot heavier. Zhao Hai's eyes flashed, this was 'Condense', the same spell that he used just earlier. It seems like the other party wanted him to see how they do the spell.

Then Zhao Hai wielded his staff as black gas appeared all around. This black gas wasn't the ordinary Dark Mist of the Dark Mages, this was another kind of Dark Magic, Corrosive Mist'.

Chapter 636 – Fierce Struggle

‘Corrosive Mist’ was one of the most commonly used Dark Mage spell. This magic can be both weak and strong. This spell was mainly dependent on the Dark Mage and on what type of poison he decided to use.

Corrosion magic was like this because it was a kind of growing magic. Magic is divided into low-level, high-level, and forbidden-level magic. And aside from these three classifications, there is also growing magic.

Growing magic is a magic that can be slowly upgraded. Take corrosion for example, when practicing this magic, a Dark Mage would find a certain toxin and then slowly refine it with magic. After that, whenever a Dark Mage uses corrosion magic, it would then have the properties of that toxin.

When a Dark Mage gets into a higher level, he can refine a stronger toxin, making the strength of his corrosion much stronger. The more formidable one’s toxin was, the more powerful the spell would be.

Zhao Hai’s corrosion spell was not simple, the toxin that he used was the one that the Space had. It was strong to the point that it can affect 9th rank experts. Most importantly, it can also become a water element technique. Although it still needed the dark mist, which was a gas, the poison can still diffuse into the water.

When the Sea Dragons entered this mist, their breathing suddenly became difficult, their minds turning dizzy. This startled those who were attacking Zhao Hai. Blue light came out of their bodies as they formed a protective layer around it. However, these experts didn’t expect that Zhao Hai’s spell would also corrode their protective layer. This shook the Sea Dragons, they immediately retreated soon after.

One must know that even ordinary barriers can still remain

untouched by 8th ranks as long as it was a 9th rank that used it. But Zhao Hai's corrosion can actually melt the protection of these 9th ranks. The Sea Dragons couldn't help but stare at the strength of Zhao Hai's 'Corrosive Mist'.

The Sea Dragons might have retreated, but one of them actually stayed. He saw how formidable Zhao Hai's corrosion was, but he still didn't go back. Instead, his eyes flashed as blue light reinforced his body before he rushed straight into the mist.

However, when he broke through the mist, he didn't see Zhao Hai in front of him. The person stared, before suddenly feeling alarms going off inside his head. He had a slight delay but was still able to promptly react as he blocked the attack from above using his trident.

Bang! A resounding sound was heard as the armor on the Sea Dragon's arm was broken by Zhao Hai's staff. The Sea Dragon let out a painful roar before he withdrew from the mist.

The scale armor of the Sea Dragons were derived from their own scales. The toughness of Dragon scales was famed throughout the continent. Nobody expected Zhao Hai to be able to crush it.

Dragon armor had many advantages, one of them was the fact that they were harder than most materials, making their defenses very good. However, their flaw was the fact that the scales were part of a Dragon's own body. So after being crushed, the pain that was brought to them would be much stronger compared to when one's full body armor gets crushed. Therefore, it wasn't a mystery as to why the Sea Dragon gave out a cry of pain.

The Sea Dragon was just repelled not killed. And after Zhao Hai hit the arm of the Sea Dragon, another one appeared on top of his head as he went to grab the back of Zhao Hai's head. However, Zhao Hai managed to quickly turn his body and blocked the other party's attack with his fist.

The Sea Dragon got excited, bodies of Dragons were always better

compared to Humans. Even if they are both 9th ranks, bodies of Dragons still came on top. For Zhao Hai to use his fist to meet his attack, the Sea Dragon thought that Zhao Hai was just courting death.

Although the strength that Zhao Hai showed was quite formidable and revealed that he wasn't just a Mage, but also a very strong warrior. Still, the Sea Dragon believed that Zhao Hai's body wasn't so strong that he can manage to survive this encounter.

However, the Sea Dragon failed to notice that Zhao Hai's hand had already crystallized. Boom! When claw and fist met, the Sea Dragon cried in pain as he retreated immediately. Moreover, one could see that the Sea Dragon's fist was oozing out blood. If Dragons didn't have great bodies, his hand might have already been erased.

After repelling yet another person, Zhao Hai's figure rushed back into the fight. He flew towards the recently injured Sea Dragon while also waving his staff, causing a few ice spears to appear and attack the other Sea Dragons.

The Sea Dragon who just retreated didn't think that Zhao Hai would attack. But since he was a 9th rank expert, his reaction also came quick. He didn't retreat but instead charged to meet Zhao Hai. His eyes were blazing as he stared at the Human. His two fingers extended as an ice weapon appeared and attacked Zhao Hai. The Sea Dragons had started to use magic in order to deal with Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai saw the Sea Dragons' movement, however, he didn't stop his charge and just sidestepped the attack. The Sea Dragon didn't expect that Zhao Hai would dodge like this. But he still followed up with a horizontal attack towards Zhao Hai's chest.

However, this Sea Dragon had forgotten about Zhao Hai's staff. Although the Blood Ghost Staff wasn't lengthened, it still came up longer in addition to the length of Zhao Hai's arm. Because of this,

Zhao Hai's attack had come in contact with the Sea Dragon much sooner, Bam! The scale of the Sea Dragon broke as the Sea Dragon felt extreme chest pain. The Sea Dragon preserved his breath, otherwise he might have already fainted.

But since his defense was still strong, he managed to survive Zhao Hai's attack. His body was repelled back which also took him out of Zhao Hai's attacking range.

Zhao Hai stood in place, and just as he was about to chase, a Dragon suddenly appeared. This person was different from the Sea Dragons, his body was covered golden armor, a style the same as the Sea Dragon but was thicker. Moreover, in addition to his sharp claws, this Dragon also had sharp protrusions on his two elbows. This made his elbows a good weapon for attack.

The Dragon used his elbow to attack Zhao Hai. The reason this Dragon stopped attacking the undead was because Zhao Hai was about to leave the magic formation. It was imperative to their plan that Zhao Hai stayed inside.

Zhao Hai didn't know about this, so he was concentrating on meeting the enemy attack. Zhao Hai saw that the enemy attack was quite strong, so he retreated and slammed into a Sea Dragon that was close who, at this time, was on his way to grabbing Zhao Hai's arm.

Seeing this situation, Zhao Hai waved his staff vertically, hitting the Sea Dragon upwards, blocking the Dragon attack. If the Dragon continued his attack, he would then be hitting the Sea Dragon, which was his ally.

As soon as Zhao Hai stopped, he felt a strong wave of pressure on his head. And behind him, another attack from the Sea Dragons arrived.

Zhao Hai flew down, then the staff on his hand suddenly lit up. One must know that it was very dark at the bottom of the sea, therefore the Sea Dragons had already adapted to the darkness.

When Zhao Hai lit the area up, this caused the surrounding Sea Dragons to be blinded, feeling like their eyes were on fire. They gave a grunt as they stopped their attack and then turned back.

Ninth rank experts all have their Divine Sense, making them aware of their surroundings without even needing to see. However, if one was used to seeing and then were suddenly blinded, one would still have the instinct to retreat. The Sea Dragons were experiencing the exact same thing.

At this moment, another wave of light appeared, but this time, it didn't come from Zhao Hai, but from the Mages of the Radiant Church instead. The Mages were using light magic in order to attack Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai coldly snorted, then waved his staff as a Dark Mist appeared and surrounded him. The Dark Mist also began to spread, beginning to swallow the surrounding Sea Dragons.

The light magic of the Radiant Church's mages disappeared into the mist. People said that light magic was the bane of dark magic, but this statement felt useless to Zhao Hai. Instead, he had just used dark magic in order to fight light magic.

Inside the mist, Zhao Hai fought with the swallowed up Sea Dragons. And due to the corrosive property of the mist, the Sea Dragons were simply unable to fight in their full strength.

However, although the Dark Mist can block sight, it cannot do the same thing to a 9th rank's Divine Sense. Zhao Hai's attackers were all 9th ranks, they didn't need their eyes to know Zhao Hai's location. So after going through the undead, the 9th ranks immediately bombarded Zhao Hai with both magic and battle qi attacks. They didn't allow Zhao Hai to continue fighting with the Sea Dragon experts.

At this time, Luo Ying and the others were present, witnessing all that happened. When Luo Ying saw Zhao Hai's predicament on the water curtain, her face immediately changed. But just as she was

about to send help, several people suddenly appeared inside the hall.

Luo Ying stared before seeing that it was Laura's group. Laura smiled faintly and said, "General, you don't need to worry about Brother Hai. You can just stay here and watch. Those who are fighting him are all 9th ranks. If you send people over, they will just die. Just let Brother Hai handle the enemy."

Chapter 637 – Sacrificial Offering

Luo Ying stared at the eyes of Laura and the others. The Mermaids had some understanding about Zhao Hai. He was famous in the continent for his dark magic and the Mermaids have also heard that the Buda Clan possessed numerous 9th rank experts. However, nobody had heard that Zhao Hai was a 9th rank expert himself.

Having said that, even if Zhao Hai was a 9th rank expert, he was still against numerous people of the same strength. In this case, how could Zhao Hai's group be confident? Where did this confidence come from?

But seeing that Laura and the others were unworried, Luo Ying couldn't help but hesitate. Can Zhao Hai really deal with so many 9th ranks on his own?

Luo Ying stared at Laura, Laura understood what Luo Ying was thinking, so she smiled faintly and said, "General, rest assured, even if Brother Hai can't kill them, he can just escape whenever he can. There's no need to worry."

Luo Ying nodded and said, "Alright, then we'll keep our eyes on Mister. If Mister needs help, we can send them at any time. My Azure Dragon Snail can deal with several 9th ranks with no problems."

Laura smiled faintly and said, "General, rest assured, if such a time arrives then we'll be impolite. General, we'll be taking our leave." Then the group vanished.

Luo Ying was stunned at what just happened, her expression couldn't help but change. She thought and reckoned that Laura and the others might also have Space divergent abilities.

Luo Ying knew about the rumors of Zhao Hai having a space divergent ability. However, she hasn't heard anything about Laura

and the others having it as well. It seems like Zhao Hai has a lot of things that he kept secret from the continent.

Luo Luo looked at the place where Laura and the other vanished, then she said, “I’ve been with them for a good number of days. I didn’t expect them to be this formidable.”

Luo Ying smiled faintly and said, “Silly thing, if they don’t want you to know then there’s no way for you to find out. I think they revealed themselves this time because they wanted us to feel at ease, otherwise, they wouldn’t have shown us their ability. It seems like Mister Zhao Hai has the capabilities to deal with the enemies this time.”

Then Dashan, who was at the side, said, “General, the Sea Dragons have accumulated a lot of 9th ranks. This might place us in a dangerous predicament, I think we should send word to Her Majesty, have her send a few 9th ranks to aid us.”

Luo Ying shook her head and said, “That’s no good. Don’t see our situation as dangerous. In fact, it is Her Majesty that’s in peril right now. You might not have seen it, but the current situation stemmed from the fact that the Sea Dragons wanted to deal with Mister Zhao Hai first before stalling us here, having us ask for help from Her Majesty. And when Her Majesty sends help, the Dragons would then have the opportunity to attack Mermaid Island.”

Dashan stared for a moment before his expression changed, “Then Her Majesty is in danger. General, don’t we have to send word back to the island?”

Luo Ying shook her head, “I don’t think it’s necessary, you don’t have to worry about it. When I told Her Majesty that the Sea Dragons and the Dragons were working together, she should’ve already prepared her defenses.”

Dashan nodded and didn’t talk anymore. Then Luo Ying turned her gaze back to the water curtain. Zhao Hai didn’t know this, but this water curtain wasn’t any ordinary magic, but a kind of magic

unique only to the Azure Dragon Snail. After refining this thousand year old snail for countless years, it managed to gain this ability. Luo Ying named this curtain the 'War Curtain'.

Once they left the Azure Dragon Snail, it would be impossible for the Mermaids to use this magic again. If Zhao Hai showed Luo Ying his monitor, Luo Ying would surely be surprised.

Luo Ying's gaze turned to the water curtain just in time to see a scene that made him surprised. Zhao Hai was now fighting with the Sea Dragons once again, but now he seems to be having the advantage.

Zhao Hai's magic prowess was now in full bloom, he used all kinds of magic, including fire magic. Even if fire was heavily affected by the water, Zhao Hai still managed to use it, moreover, its power was also quite strong.

In addition, Zhao Hai had close combat ability that was much stronger than the Dragons due to his body being able to crystallize. Therefore, although he was besieged, he still managed to dominate.

Luo Ying stared blankly at the water curtain, she didn't expect Zhao Hai to be this strong. She saw with her own two eyes how Zhao Hai hit a Dragon and managing to repel the latter. This made Luo Ying speechless, making her doubt if those were real Dragons at all.

At this point, the Sea Dragons were much more surprised than Luo Ying. They also didn't expect Zhao Hai to be this strong.

Zhao Hai's current mood was very good, the blood inside his body was burning. He didn't know that fighting actually felt this good.

He was now getting acquainted to fighting more and more, he seems to be born to fight. This wonderful feeling made Zhao Hai crave fighting even more.

But the extraordinary thing about this was the fact that even if his blood was boiling with excitement, his mind stayed calm, allowing him to always react to the attacks of the enemy and counter them. This unusual and contradictory feeling made Zhao Hai even more excited.

On the other hand, the people from the Sea Dragon side were getting startled more and more. In the past, they had heard about Zhao Hai's clashes with the Radiant Church, but now, they seem to understand that Zhao Hai was much more difficult to deal with than they had thought.

The Sea Dragons and Dragons didn't expect Zhao Hai to be this fierce. Moreover, they didn't think that he would have the body that wasn't any worse than a Dragon. Their initial expectation of Zhao Hai being a mage was crushed at this point. This huge discrepancy from their imagination made them startled.

The thing that the Sea Dragons and the Dragons failed to notice was the people of the Radiant Church going outside of the formation, surrounding the two as well. Then these people took out a set of magic formations and placed them on the ground. After that, they shackled their bodies to the formation as they took a knife and slit their wrists. Blood immediately spurted out and fell on the magic formation. Then these people started to loudly recite magic incantations, and it seemed like this process would take a long time.

But along with their incantation, a layer of barrier slowly rose from those magic formations and surrounded not only the Dragons, but the Sea Dragons as well. Even the people from the Radiant Church were enclosed, including Joshua.

When they saw this barrier, Alex and Ao Ke stared before they stopped and turned their gaze towards Joshua. Alex loudly said, "Joshua! What are you doing?!"

Joshua's mouth didn't stop saying the incantations, the barrier

slowly turned white as its pressure became stronger and stronger. This was not true pressure, but a kind of force that pressed down on Zhao Hai like a mountain.

Ao Ke loudly shouted as well, “Joshua! What do you want to do?”

Joshua had finished saying his spell. So he looked at him and said, “I said that Zhao Hai must fall here at all costs. This is a magical formation called ‘Sacrificial Offering’. You guys along with me will be sacrificed and no one can escape. All of us will be dedicated to God today.”

Ao Ke’s face couldn’t help but change, “Joshua, don’t talk nonsense. If you do this, the Dragons certainly wouldn’t let you off.”

Joshua coldly smiled and said, “Your Dragon race is the servant of our Radiant Church’s God. For the sake of God’s purpose, it’s understandable that you are to become a sacrifice. Everybody here will die, and the Dragons wouldn’t be aware of how you died.”

Zhao Hai coldly smiled and said, “Didn’t you try dealing with me with this method last time? I seem to remember that it failed. If I leave right now, all of you will die while I survive.”

Joshua sneered and said, “The last time only had a few people, we have a lot more this time. And Zhao Hai, where you are right now is a magic formation that locks the space. You wouldn’t be able to use your space ability even if you wanted to. It’ll become useless.”

Zhao Hai’s expression changed before it turned into bewilderment. This was because he can feel that he hasn’t lost contact with his Space. This meant that the Radiant Church’s formation was useless.

Alex and Ao Ke’s expressions changed as well. They didn’t expect Joshua to be this ruthless, even sacrificing everyone here, including his own.

At this moment, Zhao Hai smiled and then said, “Now that your magic has been set, this meant that you people aren’t able to move anymore. I won’t be overstaying then, everyone, goodbye.” Then his body flashed as he disappeared only to reappear outside the barrier.

When Joshua saw Zhao Hai appear outside the formation, his expression couldn’t help but change as he turned into a maniac and said, “This is impossible, how can you leave? This is impossible! Our magic formation has been set. This is impossible!!! Zhao Hai come back here!!!”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly as he looked at Joshua and sneered, “This thing is useless to me. If I want to come in, then I can come in. If I want to leave, then I can leave whenever I want. You simply don’t have the ability to block me. Hehe. The ‘Sacrificial Offering’ is about to start. All of you are going to die.” Then Zhao Hai turned around to leave.

At this time, Alex suddenly shouted, “Mister, wait!”

Zhao Hai stared, then he turned his head to Alex and said, “A Sea Dragon? What do you want? Also want me to come back in? It’s useless. I can leave whenever I want.”

Chapter 638 – Resolution of the Sea Dragons

Alex shook his head and said, “No, Mister has misunderstood. I want to ask Mister to help us exit this place.”

Zhao Hai looked at Alex, then he sneered and said, “And why would I help you exit? You go and wait for your death here.” Then Joshua’s magic was completed. A strange pattern that looks like the sun appeared on top of the barrier, with lines connecting to Joshua’s magic formation. Then some crept towards Joshua as his body lost moisture, becoming very dry. After that, his body withered as as sprinkled towards the seabed.

Joshua and the others disappeared, however, in their original position were several balls of light. Then as if sensing other lives, the balls extended some yellow lines towards the Dragons and the Sea Dragon experts.

Seeing this situation, Alex immediately went to the barrier and talked loudly to Zhao Hai, “Mister, please help us. Our Sea Dragon Race will forever submit to you!”

Zhao Hai stared, his figure vanished from the barrier along with Alex and the others. There was no question that Alex had been taken out of the barrier by Zhao Hai.

Just as Alex and the others came out of the barrier, the barrier suddenly left a dazzling golden light before it turned violent. Ao Ke and his men had forever vanished inside the barrier, everything inside has turned into ash. The Radiant Church’s formation disk had similarly vanished as well. A huge depression appeared on the seabed and when the light vanished, seawater immediately filled it in.

Although Zhao Hai had taken Alex and the others out of the barrier, Alex and the others’ bodies were still tied down by vines. No matter how the Sea Dragon experts struggle, they actually cannot break it. This vine had extraordinarily strong tenacity.

Naturally, they can't break it, these vines were from Cai'er. Cai'er had the strength of a God, the 9th rank Sea Dragons couldn't stand a chance.

Zhao Hai looked at Alex and said, "Are you saying the truth? Will the Sea Dragons really submit to me? If you dare lie to me, I will kill you right now."

Alex didn't struggle, he looked at Zhao Hai and smiled bitterly, "I won't dare deceive Mister. Mister's abilities are exceptionally high. We Sea Dragons simply didn't have the courage to lie to you. I'll be candid to Mister, our Sea Dragon Clan had never been part of the Dragon Clan. The reason why we cooperated with the Dragons and the Radiant Church was because we only want our Clan to be stronger. But if we are all killed here, we would be losing all of our 9th rank experts. At that time, the Sea Dragons would surely be destroyed by the Mermaids. So I ask Mister to help us."

Zhao Hai looked at Alex, the latter seems to be telling the truth. To be honest, Zhao Hai admired the strengths of these Sea Dragons. If he can put the Sea Dragons to good use, then it would be a good thing.

Seeing that Zhao Hai has not spoken, Alex couldn't help but get flustered, he quickly said, "Mister, please believe me. I am willing to make a Blood Oath. I'll give you my loyalty forever. Our Sea Dragons will forever be loyal to you."

Zhao Hai looked at Alex, then with a serious voice he said, "Good, as long as you swear by Blood Oath, then I will let you go. But your Sea Dragon Clan couldn't live in the seas any longer. I will take you to another place where you shall live."

Alex stared, he lowered his head and said, "Yes, Mister." Then Alex bit his own tongue and performed a Blood Oath. Then Zhao Hai released the Sea Dragons. The other experts looked at Alex and didn't speak. Alex sighed as he turned his head and said, "Mister, please give us two days. After two days, our whole clan would be

concentrated on Dragon Palace. We shall be waiting for Mister there.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Alright, I’ll give you two days. If you dare violate your pledge in this two days, then don’t blame me for being impolite.” Then Zhao Hai’s figure vanished.

After Zhao Hai left, a Sea Dragon approached Alex and said, “Patriarch, will we really submit to this Zhao Hai?”

Alex sighed, “We don’t have any choice other than to submit. Don’t forget about our present situation. Those Radiant Church fellows are surely a group of lunatics. But I believe that it would be impossible for them to succeed with Zhao Hai as their enemy. Even if the Divine Race were to descend, I still think that they wouldn’t have any way of getting their hands on Mister Zhao Hai. You might not have noticed, Joshua had mentioned the Divine Race a couple of times, but Zhao Hai’s expression didn’t even change a bit. I believe that Zhao Hai might have already known about this a long time ago. Also, haven’t you noticed his current prominence in the continent?”

Just as Alex’s voice fell, the Sea Dragons stared for a moment, then one of them said, “Patriarch, you saying that Mister Zhao Hai’s relationship with the other races was a cooperation for resisting the Divine Race?”

Alex sighed, “I’m almost certain about this. Don’t forget how good Mister Zhao Hai’s relationship with these races are. He had met with the Dwarves, become the Crown Prince of the Beastmen, and now he is helping the Fishmen. Doesn’t this explain the issue? One must know that these races were the same races that had participated in the last war with the Divine Race. Although those races had close to no relationships right now, Zhao Hai had become their middle man.”

The people here were 9th rank experts, so they were aware of the matters that Alex was talking about. They suddenly understood

what Alex was thinking. If Zhao Hai could unite the races, then they wouldn't be powerless against the Divine Race. Didn't they just repel the Divine Race last time?"

Alex looked at his clansmen and said, "From what just happened, we can see that the Divine Race doesn't treat us as people, but as puppets instead. In their eyes, we are less than servants, we are slaves, people who they could just sacrifice whenever they want. Letting such people rule us meant that we won't have a good future. It was better to rely on Mister Zhao Hai and join them in resisting the Divine Race. Even if we were to die, we can still hold our heads up high and fight proudly instead of giving up our dignity as Dragons and becoming slaves to the Divine Race!"

After Alex said this, the bodies of the Sea Dragons couldn't help but shake. Dragons have their own pride, their own dignity, so they only submit to those stronger than them. But if they do submit, they still must receive the appropriate respect and not work as a slave for another person. Alex's words just touched the deepest recesses of their minds.

Alex looked at them and said, "The reason why we cooperated with the Dragons and the Radiant Church was first, because we are a branch of the Dragon Clan, so it wouldn't be great for us if we decline. Second, because of the Divine Race, since our ancestors were once their servants. Third, we want to use this opportunity to expand our race, making the Sea Dragon Clan replace the Mermaids and becoming the ruling power of the sea. But it seems like that point will remain impossible. With Zhao Hai's help, the Mermaids would always hold the upper hand. At the same time, the Divine Race simply doesn't treat us as people, and only sees us as ants. We don't need to help them if we are only going to discard our dignity as Dragons. We can submit to Zhao Hai and hope that he doesn't treat us as trash. But if he does, our family will fight him until all of us perishes. The Dragons of the continent had forgotten their pride. Now, they have become brainwashed by the

Radiant Church, just like Joshua. But we aren't them, so we can go and have our own way.

The other Sea Dragons nodded, then Alex turned his head and said, "Go and return to your own families, move the clansmen to the Dragon Palace. In two days time, let's see how Zhao Hai will treat us. If he respects us, then we'll submit to him. But if he doesn't, then our clan will just fight him until we die!"

The other Sea Dragons loudly shouted before they left. Alex turned and headed back to Dragon Palace. When he entered the palace, he immediately summoned Illac back. Since Illac was the commander of the army, he wasn't able to participate in the battle against Zhao Hai. He didn't know about what happened, only the massive amount of energy that eliminated the Radiant Church people and the Dragons. What Illac saw was Alex saying a few words to Zhao Hai and then to the other Sea Dragons before they all left. This made Illac sense that something was going on.

While Alex was sitting in the hall, Illac walked in. Alex looked at Illac, he waved his hand and said, "Sit."

Illac gave Alex a salute, then he took the seat closest to Alex. Then Alex looked at Illac and said, "Illac, you are the smartest person in our clan. Did you manage to see what is going on?"

Illac looked at Alex, then as though he was not sure, he said, "I thought about something, but I really am not sure if I'm right."

Alex nodded, "Tell me."

Then Illac said, "According to what I just saw, the Radiant Church had used some type of self destruct magic, intending to perish together with Zhao Hai. But their anti-space magic formation had become useless to Zhao Hai. Since Zhao Hai can run away at any time, and Patriarch is afraid that the Clan would perish. The Patriarch had reached some sort of agreement with Zhao Hai."

Chapter 639 – Two Days

Upon hearing Illac, Alex couldn't help but let out along breath, "It looks like training you to become the next Patriarch didn't go to waste. You're really smart, Illac. The agreement we came up with is submission. If we don't submit to Zhao Hai, how else would be save us? You have guessed right."

Illac looked at Alex and said, "Patriarch, did the Radiant Church really self-destruct? Did they eliminate everyone inside?"

Alex's face couldn't help but change, "It's not self destruct magic, it's 'Sacrificial Offering'. If not for Zhao Hai, we would've become part of that sacrifice."

Illac's face turned complex, then he said, "Does Patriarch want to fight the Divine Race with Zhao Hai?"

Alex looked at Illac, he knew that Illac had already guessed the gist of the matter. Speaking to a smart person really is very convenient. He nodded and said, "It's better to die in battle rather than living without dignity. Wasn't this our Dragon Race's pledge?"

Illac's face looked a little bit better. He stood up and gave a salute to Alex, "I'm going to disband the army. The sharks had always been our followers, i will make things clear to them. I believe that the Mermaid wouldn't be too harsh on them."

Alex looked at Illac and said, "Good, if nobody dies this time and our clan continues to survive, the next Patriarch would be you." Illac held a happy expression, then he gave Alex another salute before turning back to leave.

At this time, Zhao Hai was currently inside the Blade Scale Whale, looking at Alex in the monitor. Laura and the others were sitting by Zhao Hai's side. When Illac left the hall, Laura turned her head to Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, it seems like

everything is done.”

Zhao Hai nodded, “Let’s go see General Luo Ying.” Then Zhao Hai commanded the Blade Scale Whale to head towards the Azure Dragon Snail and arriving at the hall.

The water curtain was already gone and Luo Ying was waiting for Zhao Hai anxiously. She didn’t know whether Zhao Hai survived or not. When the Radiant Church used their magic, the image in the water curtain suddenly turned incomprehensible. Because of the magic, the image became muddy, and it became impossible for Luo Ying to investigate. The only thing she could do was wait.

Although she was confident in Zhao Hai, she was still extremely worried. This was because this fight was too important. If Zhao Hai suffers an accident, it would not only affect the Mermaid Clan, but also the future war against the Divine Race. If Zhao Hai falls, then the Mermaid Clan would become criminals in the eyes of the other races in the continent.

At this time, Zhao Hai had brought Laura and the others to the Hall. Luo Ying couldn’t help but relax. She immediately asked Zhao Hai to sit down and said, “Mister, what happened? I was worried to death!”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “General can rest assured, everything is alright. I’ll have the general to ask the army to hold for two days. After two days, everything will be clear.”

Luo Ying looked at Zhao Hai and said, “What does Mister mean?”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “Two days later, everything will go back to normal. General can be relieved, the Sea Dragons would not attack anymore. Moreover, their army might also disband in these two days. After that, I’ll have to leave the work of quelling the remnants of the rebellion to the General’s hands.”

Luo Ying gawked, then her two eyes flashed, she looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Is Mister telling the truth?”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “I didn’t lie. I also ask the General to prepare. It’s possible that the Shark Tribe might be a little troublesome.”

Luo Ying looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Mister can rest assured, I shall wait for two days. Then after that, I’ll see for myself what you mean.”

Zhao Hai stood up, then he bowed to Luo Ying and said, “Then I’ll have to thank the General for your trust. I;m quite tired, so I’ll go back and rest first. After two days, the General shall get your answers. The only thing that I can guarantee to the General is the fact that you won’t be seeing Sea Dragons in the sea in the future.”

Luo Ying stared, she couldn’t understand what Zhao hai said, “Mister’s meaning is?”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “Everything will be clear in two days.” Then he lead Laura and the others to leave.

Seeing Zhao Hai’s departing back, Luo Ying was utterly confused. She frowned and then muttered, “Two days later? What would happen in two days? I’m becoming more and more curious now.”

After Zhao Hai and the others returned to the Space, they opened the monitor and looked at the situation of the Sea Dragon Clan. Zhao Hai was able to peer through the Sea Dragons’ situation at a far place because when he talked to Alex, he had also placed his staff down in Dragon Palace in order to monitor the area more clearly.

The Sea Dragons had now truly dissolved their army. In fact, most of the people from the Sea Dragon Army wasn’t willing to fight in this battle. But due to the strength of the Sea Dragons, they had no other choice but to participate. Now that the Sea Dragons had disbanded their army, these people immediately turned around and ran.

However, the sole trouble came from the Shark Tribe. The

Sharks were extremely willing to join the Sea Dragons in this rebellion. This was because they also want to use this opportunity to enhance their status in the sea. Therefore, when the Sea Dragons decided to end everything, the Sharks immediately expressed their refusal.

But the Sea Dragons had a different mindset right not, they didn't have their initial ambition. They knew that if they go on with the battle, it would be impossible for them to continue. So they disbanded their army, so that the Mermaids wouldn't be hard on the other tribes.

The Shark Clan was extremely unwilling, they were adamant on killing the Mermaid Clan. They wanted to replace the position that the Whale tribe held. However, the Sea Dragons had started to lose heart, which was something that the Sharks didn't want to happen.

At this time, the Sea Dragons became impolite. The Sharks certainly have ambition, but they don't have the strength. If the Sea Dragons allow the Sharks to continue, then the Fishman Race would be placed into further turmoil. And this situation would affect their future fight with the Divine Race.

On the minds of the Sea Dragons, since they were now fighting the Divine Race, then they would have to preserve all the resources necessary to resist the descending gods. Whether they were killed or not, they had sworn their allegiance to Zhao Hai, so the ambition of the Sharks must be extinguished. After all, this wild tribe was brought up by them.

Illac already thought that the Sharks would cause a ruckus once he announced the dissolution of the army. Therefore, Illac led an army of Sea Dragons to kill. The Sharks were totally not the Sea Dragons' match. The Sea Dragons took the lead in extinguishing the Shark tribe. The remaining Sharks were those who were initially honest. Therefore, the image in Zhao Hai's mind didn't appear.

Zhao Hai didn't think that Illac would be able to handle things this easily. He didn't even give the Sharks the chance to cause trouble. This made Zhao Hai look into Illac more. Illac had been their opponent, and it seems like Illac wasn't someone simple.[1]

Seeing that the matters in the Sea Dragon side had been solved, Zhao Hai felt relief. Then he adjusted his monitor to see the situation back at Mermaid Island. Zhao Hai didn't know when the Dragons would go and attack the island.

When the monitor changed, Zhao Hai saw that everything was normal. There weren't any signs of a fight. It seems like the Dragons had yet to make their move.

However, Zhao Hai can also notice some difference in the place. The leisurely mermaids on the island can no longer be seen. What replaced them were Mermaids who wore armor, fully prepared for the battle ahead. There were also other 9th rank Fishmen present. It also looks like the 9th ranks at the Azure Dragon Snail had also returned to the surface. Zhao Hai couldn't help but feel relief upon seeing how prepared the Mermaids were. Even if the Dragons were to attack, they surely wouldn't be able to affect the situation in the sea.

Seeing no developments in Mermaid Island, Zhao Hai turned his vision to the Dragon Clan. To be honest, Zhao Hai liked the look of Dragon Palace. It was a naturally occurring coral reef, this reef should also be considered to be quite a treasure.

Additionally, Zhao Hai also took a liking to the Sea Dragons. The Sea Dragons were the beings that were closest in appearance to a Chinese dragon. This made Zhao Hai regard the Sea Dragons very much. Therefore, he decided that since Dragon Palace was their home, he wouldn't be taking it away from them.

Zhao Hai was prepared to arrange the Sea Dragons to the Space. The Sea Dragons were also some type of magic beast whose strengths were formidable. If they go to the Space, then it might be

possible for them to turn loyal towards Zhao Hai.

At the same time, Zhao Hai had also found appreciation towards the guts of the Sea Dragons. Sea Dragons were people who would rather die than lose their dignity, such people were worthy of respect.

Two days passed in a blink of an eye. Luo Ying had also been holding back her troops all this time. But she also knew that there wouldn't be any huge fights going on. After all, the Sea Dragons had already dissolved their army. They would just wait until Zhao Hai gives them word, then they can go to the other Fishmen and had them go back under the rule of the Mermaid Clan.

At the same time, Sea Dragons had also been arriving at Dragon Palace. The Dragon Palace was their main residence, so not many people went too far from it. But since they were going to battle, the young and old people had stayed back. This time, their entire Clan had gathered.

The main residence of the Sea Dragons was initially Dragon Island. They have been living at that place for many years. But ever since they had found the Dragon Palace's reef, Dragon Island had only become their root. This time, they abandoned their root and gathered to Dragon Palace. The Sea Dragons weren't many, only about 10 thousand people. Naturally, these 10 thousand people were all pure Sea Dragons. They also had near 100 thousand Lesser Dragon Race people, which also joined the move.

Chapter 640 – Attitude

Alex told his clansmen about the situation, they truly are worthy to be Dragons. The people of this clan did indeed have hard bones. After listening to Alex, it didn't matter whether they were old or young, nobody in the hall flinched. Everyone was in one mind, not one of them wanted to work as a slave.

Zhao Hai saw the response of the Sea Dragons while he was inside the Space. Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile over the two days, he was liking these Sea Dragons more and more.

Upon seeing that the Sea Dragons have arrived, Zhao Hai knew that it was time to show himself. He didn't use his Space and just used his Blade Scale Whale to head towards Dragon Palace.

Dragon Palace was currently surrounded by Sea Dragons as well as their lesser relatives. Although they had less strength than the Sea Dragons, these Lesser Dragons still had the blood of Dragons within them. Their strength was still quite formidable.

These Lesser Dragons were guarding the surroundings of the Dragon Palace. All of them looked at Zhao Hai with discerning eyes. These people were absolutely loyal to Dragons. Even though they weren't Dragons themselves, they were still descended from them. Among the Sea Dragons were their parents, so how could they betray them?

Even if their status wasn't high in the Sea Dragon Clan, they were still representatives of the clan to the other tribes. No other tribe would dare move them. Moreover, whenever the Sea Dragons need anything, the ones who would act would be these Lesser Dragons. This stemmed an interdependent relationship between the two of them. Although most of them were the children of two Lesser Dragon parents, they still couldn't let go of their relationship with the Dragon Race.

These Dragons held their word with extreme importance. Once

they said that they would submit to Zhao Hai, then they would submit to Zhao Hai. However, if Zhao Hai treats them like a slave, then these Sea Dragons would surely fight even at the risk of their life.

Therefore, these Lesser Dragons were quite hostile to Zhao Hai. They wanted to know how Zhao Hai plans to treat them.

Zhao Hai's Blade Scale Whale arrived at Dragon Palace. Since there was no water inside the Palace, Zhao Hai stopped his whale right outside of the place. Then he took Laura and the others to see the people waiting inside. All of the Sea Dragons were currently looking at Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and didn't dare become arrogant, he bowed to the people and said, "Zhao Hai Buda requests an audience with the Patriarch of the Sea Dragon Clan."

The Sea Dragons gawked at Zhao Hai's manners. Their face changed, but one of them said, "We have met Mister Zhao Hai. We have been sent by the Patriarch to welcome Mister."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Then I'll have to trouble everyone." Then he walked towards the hall with the others. Zhao Hai's attitude was seen by all the Sea Dragons as well as the Lesser Dragons. Seeing Zhao Hai's manners, they couldn't help but change their view of him by a little bit.

Alex had told them about how powerful Zhao Hai was. He also told them that if Zhao Hai didn't have a bad attitude, he wouldn't have been worried that they would be humiliated. However, he was desperate at that time so he didn't have any choice. Because of this, their expectations of Zhao Hai was different that what he was showing right now. This made the Sea Dragons and the Lesser Dragons very surprised.

Zhao Hai didn't care about any of these as he arrived inside the hall along with the group of Sea Dragons. The coral was very huge and had underwent a lot of renovations by the Sea Dragons. There

were many palaces inside the entire Dragon Palace and they held no difference compared to the palaces in the continent, it might even be more beautiful compared to those. The palaces of the continent didn't have as much pearls and crystals as those inside Dragon Palace.

Zhao Hai followed the Sea Dragons towards the Dragon Temple inside the Palace. This Dragon Temple was the largest hall inside the Dragon palace. It was also the place where Alex and the elders decided to greet their guest. Usually, Alex wouldn't be here, he would only be inside his palace.

Before the entrance of the hall, two Sea Dragons stood guard. When the two saw Zhao Hai arrive along with the other Sea Dragons, both of them announced, "Mister Zhao Hai has arrived!"

Then the two turned their heads to Zhao Hai and bowed, "We invite Mister Zhao Hai to enter." Then they shoved the door of the Great Hall open. Zhao Hai expressed his gratitude to the two before leading Laura and the others towards the hall.

As soon as he arrived inside the Hall, Zhao Hai couldn't help but stare. There were a lot of people inside the hall, some of these were elder Sea Dragons while some were 9th rank experts of the Sea Dragons. It can be seen that the people present here didn't have ordinary status.

Zhao Hai smiled faintly, then he took several steps forward before bowing to Alex, who was currently on a high platform, and said, "Zhao Hai has seen Patriarch Alex."

Alex gawked at Zhao Hai's attitude, he returned the bow and said, "We welcome Mister Zhao Hai. Mister, the entire Clan is already here. I don't know how Mister plans to deal with us."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "The Sea Dragons and the Mermaids wouldn't be harmonious after this. I'm afraid that the Sea Dragons don't have a place in the seas anymore. I have my own place which also has a sea. That place didn't have any Fishman in

it, only a few marine magic beasts. I want to move the Sea Dragons to that place. What does Patriarch think about this?”

After hearing Zhao Hai speak, the hall immediately turned into a sea of murmurs. These Sea Dragons have lived in this sea for generations. And they were also clear that this endless sea was the only large sea in the entire Ark Continent. They had not heard of any seas that didn't have a Fishman tribe and only having marine magic beasts.

Alex frowned as he looked at Zhao Hai, “Mister, are you joking with me? I don't think there's such a place in this world. If there is really such a place, then we'll be extremely willing to move.”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “Then, I'll have to ask the Patriarch to have all of the Sea Dragons and the Lesser Dragons be inside Dragon Palace. After that, I'll be sending you to that place.”

Seeing that Zhao Hai seems to be serious about this, Alex couldn't help but nod. In any case, things have already reached this point. Even if he wants to hide, he wouldn't be able to hide. In addition, Zhao Hai was very respectful to them, his attitude was not bad. Therefore, Alex turned to the people outside the hall, “Have everyone come inside the Palace.” Then the people outside issued a sound before going off. Before long, the Sea Dragons and Lesser Dragons had come into the Palace. Although they didn't know about what was happening, they still didn't ask any questions.

After talking to Alex, Zhao Hai just stayed there, standing calmly. He even closed his eyes as though he wasn't curious about anything. On the other hand, Laura and the others were sizing Alex up as well as everyone inside the hall.

Before long, people from the outside had sent word, “Reporting to the Patriarch, everybody has entered Dragon Palace.”

Alex nodded, then he turned to look at Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai slowly opened his eyes and then said, “Great, now I ask the Patriarch to have a look outside.”

Alex was confused at what Zhao Hai just said, “Look outside? What does Mister mean?”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “We already arrived at the place that I said. I want to ask the Patriarch to see if he likes it.”

Alex stared, he was thinking that Zhao Hai might be cracking a joke. But Zhao Hai’s expression told him that he was serious. Although he was confused, he still walked outside.

After Alex went out, he couldn’t help but gawk. This was because even if there were still underwater, Alex can feel that they were somewhere different.

Dragon Palace had already stopped at its position for a long time. Therefore, Alex was quite familiar about its surroundings. However, the reefs and plants that was currently around him had become different. Alex can be sure about this due to the magic beasts swimming around the coral reefs. He can see that these things didn’t have any traces of Fishman activities.

At this time, Illac also arrived, he was in charge of keeping the other Sea Dragons and Lesser Dragons in control. Therefore, when Alex saw Illac, he immediately said, “Illac, what’s all this about? How come everything around us changed?”

Illac was stern faced as he shook his head. “Patriarch, I have no idea. When I asked everyone to go inside the Dragon Palace. I only felt a small fluctuation on the water around me. Then the scenery changed.”

Alex turned to Zhao Hai and said, “Mister, where is this?”

Zhao hai smiled faintly and said, ‘This is the Sea Dragons’ new home. As for what this place is, I ask the Patriarch to join me to the surface. I’ll explain everything to the Patriarch.’ When the Sea Dragons entered the Space, a prompt was immediately heard. It seems like the Space was considering the Sea Dragons as an intelligent race, so it cannot subdue them immediately. Zhao Hai

didn't care, since the Sea Dragons have entered the Space, everything else will be easy to do. He had already calculated what would happen.

Zhao Hai joined the Sea Dragons as they slowly went to the surface. Upon reaching the surface, Alex and the others were shocked. This wasn't the endless sea, they knew this because they can see land in a not so far place. On this land were plants and houses. The atmosphere of the place was also very different from the Ark Continent.

Alex turned his head to Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, this, where are we?"

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "This is my Buda Clan's territory, my Clan's root. This is also my domain. Here, I am a god!"

Alex was confused at Zhao hai, "Mister, you mean that including the sea, everything here belongs to the Buda Clan? We aren't in the continent anymore?"

Chapter 641 – Turning Misfortune into a Blessing

Alex looked at Zhao Hai and said, “So we’re in a completely independent space, and this space belongs to Mister?”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he looked at Alex and said, “Right, this independent Space is mine. I shall bestow this place’s ocean to your Sea Dragon Race. This ocean would be your domain, you can kill the beasts that live here save for a few that I personally raise.”

Alex turned his head towards the Space’s endless sea. He turned to Zhao Hai and then suddenly knely on one knee, “Alex has met the Master!”

Alex understood that this Space was a place where the Sea Dragons wouldn’t be able to blow any winds. However, why do they need to gain control here, is there a better place in the world? The whole ocean was theirs, nothing greater can satisfy them. So Alex called Zhao Hai ‘Master’. This was akin to making Zhao Hai the king of their Clan. In the past, Alex had always called Zhao Hai ‘Mister.’

Zhao Hai looked at Alex and said, “Get up, then next time, I would prefer being called Young Master. Since your Sea Dragon Clan decided to side with me, then you’ll have to prepare yourselves to battle the Divine Race as well as the two chess pieces that they have, the Radiant Church as well as the Dragons. These people are on my kill list. Your Clan used to be in this list too, but since you’ve become my followers, you’ve been saved. If I ever need your assistance in the future, you must now decline. Understand?”

Alex replied, “I understand, Young Master.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he summoned Cai’er and said, “This is Cai’er, the Space’s manager that I had appointed. Normally, I

won't be able to be inside the Space all the time. If you need anything, just look for her. If I have something for you to do, then Cai'er will be the one looking for you. However, I won't be needing you for the majority of the time. You can just live your lives here as you see fit."

Alex nodded and said, "Yes, Young Master. Actually, the Dragon Palace is already enough for us to live in."

Zhao Hai nodded, "Then that's good. You settle yourselves in while I go and see Luo Ying. The situation of the seas needs to be stabilized. Its fortunate that you've failed, otherwise the Divine Race would gain the continent's endless sea as their backing, allowing them to attack and retreat without any consequences. Right, Alex, did you know about any matters of the Divine Race? Do you know when they'll attack?"

Alex shook his head and said, "I'll be unfair to the Young Master, I really have no information regarding this. Although we are in a cooperation with the Radiant Church and the Dragon Clan, we have only been in contact for a short amount of time. For this reason, I was still able to hire oneself to the Young Master."

Zhao Hai nodded, "Forget it, you go and settle your people down. Cai'er will tell you which magic beasts you aren't allowed to touch. The others, you can hunt and kill. Alright, then I'll be taking my leave." Then Alex bowed to Zhao Hai before Zhao Hai's figure vanished.

At this time, Cai'er looked at Alex and said, "Were you the one that submitted to the Young Master?"

Alex looked at Cai'er. To be honest, Alex really couldn't identify what race Cai'er belonged in. If Alex considers people with the same size as Cai'er, then he would be able to name a few Fishman Tribes. However, it was evident that Cai'er wasn't a Beastman. He had never heard of a race that looks like Cai'er.

However, Alex still nodded and said, "It's me."

Cai'er coldly snorted as a pressure erupted from her body. Alex was stunned where he stood as he looked surprised at Cai'er. Alex didn't expect that Cai'er would have the ability to freeze a 9th rank expert. Also, Alex knew that it didn't matter if he goes to his Armored Form or True Form, he would still be suppressed just like this, it was too scary.

Cai'er looked at Alex and said, "I don't care about what the Young Master promised you. But if you dare disrespect the Young Master, then I will make sure that you will be the one to suffer first. The Young Master is a good person, and is someone that is easily approachable. But if you dare to be betray him, I will eliminate your Sea Dragon Race. Take this, it's the list of all the magic beasts that you're not allowed to touch, it's a small list. You can do what you want with the other beasts. Talk to me if you need anything." Then her figure vanished.

When Cai'er left, Alex finally relaxed. He felt like a baby facing a 9th rank expert under Cai'er's pressure. He was simply not on her level. Alex completely believed Cai'er, if Cai'er did want to extinguish him, then she could do so at any time. And if she were to destroy the Sea Dragon Race, then she wouldn't take too long to do it. Alex couldn't help but wipe a cold sweat while thinking about these.

Alex finally understood that when Zhao Hai was fighting with others, he wasn't using his full strength. If he did use all of his strength, then his enemies wouldn't have survived for long and played around with Zhao Hai. Alex knew that Zhao Hai did this in order to deal with the Divine Race. And from listening to Zhao Hai, Alex understood that Zhao Hai might have been even more informed regarding the Divine Race than him. This made Alex feel glad that he had surrendered to Zhao Hai. Otherwise, Zhao Hai would surely have destroyed all of them.

Alex now had a change of heart regarding Zhao Hai, he immediately changed his mood as he returned to his own people.

At the same time, he also told his people about what he had found out about Zhao Hai, which made the little dissatisfaction in the clansmen's hearts completely disappear.

This time, they had really turned a misfortune into a blessing. They didn't even need to be the kings of the sea, they don't need to snatch anything they need, the whole sea was theirs. Aside from those that Zhao Hai prohibited, everything else was free game. The materials here can also be used at will, which was definitely a great news for them.

Zhao Hai didn't care much about these, although the Space has raised a lot of marine beasts, it was actually still quite short in life. It was good that the Sea Dragons are present, making the Space's sea much more livelier.

When he teleported the Sea Dragons, he also made the effort in absorbing the surrounding seawater and obtaining a lot of tiny marine lifeforms. These things managed to balance the sea's food chain. One could say that the Space's sea has become complete.

The reason why the Space couldn't subdue the Sea Dragons was perhaps because it was the first time that the Space had absorbed creatures like them.

The Sea Dragons had entered the Space in their Human Form, therefore, the Space had no method of subduing them. But if they were to turn into their Dragon form inside, things might become different. Zhao Hai was curious about this and wanted to look for an opportunity to find out.

But for the Lesser Dragons, the Space was naturally impolite. The moment they entered the Space, they were immediately subdued. The Sea Dragons didn't know about this.

Zhao Hai came out of the Space and immediately went to Luo Ying's Azure Dragon Snail. Luo Ying was currently waiting for Zhao Hai, she was paying attention to Zhao Hai's interaction with the Sea Dragons. If the Sea Dragons dared to attack Zhao Hai, then

she would immediately send an army to destroy them.

But what happened next made Luo Ying surprised, Zhao Hai and the Sea Dragons suddenly vanished right in front of her. Disappearing without a trace, nothing was left behind, this made Luo Ying startled.

However, Luo Ying believed that this was Zhao Hai's doing, it was impossible for the Sea Dragons to have the capability to perform such a feat. If the Sea Dragons really did have something like this, then they should've already used it to deal with Zhao Hai, they shouldn't have waited to use it until now. Only Zhao Hai can cause such a huge group to disappear in front of her.

Therefore, Luo Ying wasn't very worried as she sat still inside the Azure Dragon Snail, waiting for Zhao Hai. When Zhao Hai arrived, Luo Ying immediately asked him to sit down and said, "Did Mister deal with the Sea Dragon Clan?"

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "No, I just sent them to another place. Saving them from being shunned in the sea. The General can rest assured."

Luo Ying nodded, and didn't ask about this anymore. Then she looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, I just received word from Her Majesty. The Dragon Clan and the Radiant Church had sent 9th rank experts to attack Mermaid Island. However, they had been repelled by Her Majesty. The enemies lost some of their experts as well. We believe that they won't dare to do such a thing again. The Fishman Race has been saved."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Good, good. Then General should go and appease the Fishman tribes. I can't help you with these matters. I'll stay in the sea for some time and collect some marine magic beasts as well as some unique plants before going back to the continent."

Luo Ying quickly said, "Mister shouldn't be quick to leave. Her Majesty had sent word that since Mister has helped us greatly, she

wanted to invite you over to Mermaid Island. I ask Mister to consider giving us face.”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “Alright, then before I return to the Continent I’ll stop by and visit Mermaid Island.”

Then Luo Ying smiled and said, “What magic beasts does Mister want? Our Fishman Race might be able to help Mister with this. We have been living underwater for generations, there aren’t a lot of things in the sea that we cannot find. If Mister can tell us, then we shall certainly do our best to acquire it.”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “I appreciate the General’s words. However, my target is the Devil Octopus. I’ll get a couple of them before I head back. I can handle it myself.”

When Luo Ying heard Zhao Hai, she couldn’t help but stare. Then her face changed as she said, “Does Mister really want to get those Octopus? That’s too dangerous. Those magic beasts are living in an extremely cold environment. People who go there are instantly frozen to death. It wouldn’t be a good idea if Mister were to go there.”

Chapter 642 – Demon Realm Aura?

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “The General doesn’t need to worry about it. There are ways of dealing with the chilling cold. Those octopus really do have a great use to me. If General has anything else to do, then I won’t be holding you back. You don’t need to worry much about me, I can manage on my own.”

Luo Ying knew from Zhao Hai’s words that there was no way for her to stop him, so she didn’t say anything else. After all, Zhao Hai has already revealed his strength, he had the qualifications to do whatever he wants.

After exchanging a few more words with Luo Ying, Zhao Hai left the Azure Dragon Snail. He was now ready to catch those Devil Octopi. These beings grow up to be 9th ranks, almost not any worse than Dragons. This fact made Zhao Hai very curious.

Zhao Hai didn’t immediately go catch some octopus after leaving Luo Ying. Instead, he returned to the Space and observed if the Sea Dragons have been properly settled in.

However, he didn’t go and personally see the Sea Dragons and just looked at them through the monitor. Upon seeing that they had settled down quite well, Zhao Hai felt relief. After all, they were in the sea, at the same time, they also had all the room that they want.

Then Zhao Hai switched the image on the monitor to see Mermaid Island’s situation. He didn’t expect the Dragons and the Radiant Church to be prompt in their attack of the Island. Zhao Hai wanted to see the state that the Island has been turned into.

When he saw Mermaid Island, Zhao Hai couldn’t help but stare. It wasn’t destroyed due to the attack, it was the exact opposite, he couldn’t see any traces of battle. It seems like nothing happened, this scene showed Zhao Hai how strong the Fishmen were.

From Luo Ying's words, Zhao Hai knew that the ones who attacked Mermaid Island were the people from the alliance between the Dragon Clan and the Radiant Church. But there were only limited ways in order to attack the island. First was by using ships, but this was impossible. Aside from the Buda Clan, no other power would be able to navigate the sea in order to head towards Mermaid Island.

The second method was by flying, which can be done by the Dragon Clan. However, it would be impossible for them to have the tolerance to ferry people over on their backs. Therefore, the attack on Mermaid Island could only be done by 9th rank experts.

Being assaulted by 9th rank experts but not leaving a trace of battle was a testament to the might of the Mermaid Clan. Ninth rank experts aren't easy people to deal with.

Seeing that nothing happened on the island, Zhao Hai felt relief. He was now preparing to catch a Devil Octopus, then he would go and see the situation of the Soul Sucking Reef. He wanted to find out why Fishmen weren't able to leave that place.

As soon as he searched through these two places, Zhao Hai would return back to the Continent. But before heading back to land, he still needed to pay the Mermaid Queen a visit. And while doing so, he would try and see if he can learn about their art of Water Refining. Zhao Hai really wanted to learn the technique.

After recalling all of these in his mind, Zhao Hai determined his itinerary. First he would catch a Devil Octopus, this was a simple task, the trench was just a short distance away. Although these beasts were 9th ranks, it was impossible for them to pose a threat to Zhao Hai. He plans to catch two of these beasts and see if they can upgrade the Space.

Upon thinking it through, Zhao Hai returned to the Space to rest for the entire day. The next morning, he had the Blade Scale Whale proceed towards the Devil Octopus' domain.

In the sea, this trench has its own special name, it's called Devil's Trench. It was because it was the place where the Devil Octopi reside, and at the same time, because it was a place that was very dangerous. Therefore, the Fishmen decided to name it as thus.[1]

It didn't take long before Zhao Hai reached the mouth of the trench. This trench didn't have any special appearance, it looks just like an extremely deep canyon. However, Zhao Hai can feel the cold aura being released by the trench. It was enough for a person to shiver with fright.

Zhao Hai is a 9th rank expert, and for someone of his level to feel this explains that this place was something dangerous.

At this time, Cai'er's voice was suddenly heard, "Young Master, I can feel the aura of the Demon Realm here. Especially inside that trench, the Demon Realm aura that I can feel there is very thick."

Zhao Hai stared, then his expression changed as he said, "Really? Can you really feel the Demon Realm in this trench?"

Cai'er came from the Demon Realm, she was a plant that grows normally there. Because of that, she was extremely familiar to the aura of that place. Zhao Hai trusted her words, but he was not willing to believe it. If that was really the case, then this trench might be associated with the Demon Realm. This meant that this place might become a battlefield in the future.

Cai'er insisted, "Young Master, there really is an aura of the Demon Realm here. And it gets stronger the deeper you go in."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Alright, it seems like coming here was a good idea. Let's go and take a look." Then he directed the Blade Scale Whale to go down to the bottom of the trench.

The deeper they went, the darker the surroundings became. Zhao Hai was now 500 meters into the trench, and not a single ray of light can be seen here. Zhao Hai can see some beasts in the distance, but they were different from those that he had seen in

the surface. From what he can see, these beasts looked more fierce and aggressive compared to those at the top.

At this time, Laura and the others had arrived at Zhao Hai's side together with Cai'er. Since the place might be related to the Demon Realm, Zhao Hai had Cai'er come out and talk to them about that place. Only Cai'er had concrete understanding about the Demon Realm.

Upon seeing these magic beasts, Cai'er turned her head to Zhao Hai and said, "Young Master, these magic beasts are already demonized."

Zhao Hai was confused at what Cai'er just said, "Demonized? What's that?"

Cai'er replied, "The Demon Realm has a very unusual toxin. This toxin will start to affect beings and change their appearances. Look at these beasts for example, it was possible that they are only ordinary magic beasts. But because they were subjected to the aura of the Demon Realm, they had turned into their current form. They had become more formidable, however, they also turned more aggressive due to the toxin."

Zhao Hai extended a spike from the Blade Scale Whale and captured a small fish. This small fish was only the size of Zhao Hai's palm. However, a third of its body was its head, and two thirds of this head was its giant mouth. This small fish was still struggling and would oftentimes open its mouth, revealing its saber-like teeth. It also flashed a blue radiance, showing that its attacking strength was quite strong.

Zhao Hai waved his hand and sent the small fish to the Space. He wanted to see how the Space valued such things. And just as the fish entered the Space, a prompt was heard, "Seriously polluted mutant fish has been detected. Such organisms have strong survivability, strong attacking ability, strong defensive ability. Extracting its toxin, changing organism's temperament.

Integrating properties into lifeforms in the Space. Toxin has been combined to the Space's insecticide. Enhancing all toxic lifeforms in the Space. Increasing survival capabilities of the lifeforms inside the Space."

This prompt informed Zhao Hai that the Space has identified these creatures as 'polluted'. To be honest, it was quite a suitable classification.

Zhao Hai grasped other mutant magic beasts inside the trench and had them sent over to the Space. The prompt that he heard was similar, this made Zhao Hai lost interest in these mutant magic beasts.

At this time, Zhao Hai had already penetrated 1000 meters deep into the trench. Everything around him was pitch black. If they didn't have a monitor, then they wouldn't be able to see anything outside.

Zhao Hai looked at the monitor and saw that the mutant magic beasts were getting fewer and fewer. But the strengths of those who were present has been getting stronger and stronger. They also looked more and more fearsome.

At this time, Laura suddenly issued an astonished tone. Then she pointed to a place outside the Blade Scale Whale as she said, "Brother Hai, look, there seems to be a bright spot there."

Zhao Hai stared, then he turned to look at what Laura pointed out. Currently there was a light that repeatedly flashed. In this jet black environment, it looked like a single small star.

However, Zhao Hai seemed to notice that this star had gotten brighter and brighter, it seems like it was approaching them.

Zhao Hai immediately looked at the monitor and saw a strange fish appear in front of his eyes. It looked terrifying, it was about two meters long, its body was covered with spikes. It also had a pair of small red eyes, its mouth was big and had fangs of different

lengths. Most importantly, on the top of its head was a long spike, but it seems like it wasn't hard but instead was soft of which an organ was hanging. Zhao Hai felt strange since this organ was the one that was flashing its lights. It looks just like a faulty lantern.

At this time, Zhao Hai saw another small fish approaching. Zhao Hai was curious about this small fish, he didn't know why it was swimming towards them. Then suddenly, the small fish went towards the flashing organ of the strange fish. And just as the small fish approached the organ, the strange fish suddenly opened its mouth, its tongue flew out and stretched. Before long, the small fish was nowhere to be seen.

Chapter 643 – Core and Level Up

Zhao Hai and the others stared at this strange fish. This fish actually uses this method to hunt, it's quite strange.

Zhao Hai and the others curiously looked at the fish as it drew near to them. Zhao Hai couldn't help but get careful, he wanted to see what this fish intends to do, does it want to attack them?

However, Zhao Hai wasn't worried much about it. Although this fish had uncommon strength, one shouldn't forget that the Blade Scale Whale was a 9th rank undead beast. This strange fish would be unable to place a dent on the whale's body.

It didn't take long before the strange fish arrived by Zhao Hai's side. But what made Zhao Hai surprised was the fact that the fish didn't attack the whale. Instead, it just stayed by its side, looking like it was acting as an escort for Zhao Hai and the others.

Zhao Hai was confused at what the fish just did, "What's going on? Did this guy suddenly become docile? But that doesn't seem to be the case."

Cai'er smiled and said, "Young Master, these fishes shouldn't be considered to be marine beasts at this point, they were now more like beasts from the Demon Realm. And as long as they have a bit of the Demon Realm within them, they won't be attacking us. This is because my aura can provide these beasts with survival. Therefore, they should be very respectful towards me."

Zhao Hai stared, he didn't think that it would be like this, "Really? I didn't think Cai'er would be this formidable. This is fantastic."

Cai'er proudly smiled and said, "Young Master can rest assured, as long as we are in a place with Demon Realm Aura and I'm by your side, nobody would dare attack our group."

Zhao Hai laughed and said, "Good, good, then I'll be relying on

your cover. Let's go and see what's going on here." Then he directed the Blade Scale Whale to dive deeper into the trench.

However, Zhao Hai still took the time to get a few fishes as he can. After all, these were creatures that weren't seen before, there was no loss in acquiring a few more of them.

When Zhao Hai and the others reached about 2 kilometers deep, the strange fishes left while another batch of fishes came over. These fishes looked more fierce and seemed to be much stronger than the ones before. They had the forms of a fish version of an alligator. But they didn't attack the Blade Scale Whale, instead, they escorted them one kilometer down before another batch came and escorted them for another kilometer.

Zhao Hai now knew about how Cai'er was seen by these beasts. She seems to have a status that was much better than any Human Emperor. As soon as these beasts feel her aura, they would immediately come and escort her, perhaps due to their innate instinct.

Zhao Hai and the others have now dove about ten thousand meters deep, however, they still weren't able to see a Devil Octopus. Zhao Hai had looked around and cannot see these octopus, and at the same time, they were already 10 thousand meters under the sea yet the bottom of the trench was still out of sight. How deep was this trench? Zhao Hai was completely unsure.

But Zhao Hai didn't worry about it as they continued diving downward. The magic beasts that they met were getting bigger and bigger while they looked more and more ugly. Most importantly, it seems like their strengths were increasing as well. The magic beasts at this level were already comprised mostly of 8th ranks. And they were quite numerous as well, if these beasts were to head to the sea, the Fishman Race wouldn't be very peaceful.

This also aroused Zhao Hai's anticipation. At this point, he was extremely curious about how deep this trench was. Zhao Hai had

commanded the Blade Scale Whale to head straight down to the point where it was almost heading vertically downward.

They have dived for another five kilometers when a giant octopus suddenly appeared in Zhao Hai's monitor. The octopus was swimming sluggishly. It looks just like any octopus, however, it was very big. If one includes its tentacles, this octopus would be 100 meters long.

What surprised Zhao Hai was its appearance. The entire head of this octopus was black, but behind its body was a white image of a devil. It was a large image, almost fully occupying the back of the octopus' head. Its tentacles were white as well, looking like a Devil's beard if one were to look at it.

All of this added up made the octopus look very scary. Although it didn't have any spikes like the other fishes, it still instilled fear on those who looked at it.

However, Zhao Hai's eyes shone when he saw this beasts. It was because this was the beast that he was looking for, the magic beast Devil Octopus.

Without waiting for Zhao Hai to make a move, the Devil Octopus started to swim towards them. Then it arrived at the Blade Scale Whales side and acted as an escort just like the other magic beasts. This made Zhao Hai stare, but he relaxed soon after. The Demon Realm aura this deep into the trench had gotten very strong, so naturally this octopus should've also been demonized.

But Zhao Hai didn't stop, in addition to finding this beast, he also wanted to see the cause of the Demon Realm Aura in this trench.

After going down for another 1 kilometer, the Devil Octopus that followed Zhao Hai had now numbered to about 100. What made Zhao Hai startled was the fact that all of these 100 Devil Octopus were 9th ranks. This number of experts would cause a commotion if revealed to the continent. Except for Zhao Hai, nobody would be able to match this number of experts.

Zhao Hai's face couldn't help but turn ugly. If these octopus were to escape the trench while taking the mutant beasts along with them, then the endless sea would be placed into turmoil.

At this moment, Zhao Hai suddenly noticed a group of black gas in the distance. Zhao Hai gawked at this black clump. It wasn't very big, only about 100 meters wide. However, Zhao Hai actually can't see through this gas.

Zhao Hai immediately had the Blade Scale Whale swim towards the black gas. At the same time, he turned his head to Cai'er and said, "Cai'er, what do you think this thing is? Why do I feel that its the source of the Demon Realm aura?"

Cai'er nodded and said, "Young Master, it is indeed the source of the Demon Realm Aura. This should be a type of High Level Demon Core."

Zhao Hai asked, "Core? What is that?"

Cai'er answered, "Demon Realm beasts have cores, it is the source of power for all the residence of the Demon Realm. The cores of High level beasts are extremely formidable. From what I can see, this should be a core of a God-ranked magic beast. Even in the Demon Realm, this thing is a treasure. These God-ranked beasts aren't any weaker than God-ranked experts, they may even be stronger, at the same time, they also have much longer lives than God-ranked experts. And when they die, these beasts would look for a place where nobody would be able to find them, making it extremely hard to find their cores. This God-ranked core is extremely useful to God-ranked experts. They can use this core in order to manufacture weapons and also absorb it and make its power their own. Although some energy would be lost in the process of absorption, it was still a huge help for the God-ranked experts. After all, increasing one's strength upon reaching God-rank is very difficult."

Zhao Hai nodded, but he still couldn't help but feel startled. He

didn't think that a Demon Realm's God-rank beast's core would arrive at this place. At the same time, this core actually managed to change an entire landscape on its own, creating these formidable 9th rank Devil Octopus.

The Blade Scale Whale had already penetrated through the clump of black mist. Then Zhao Hai saw a fist-sized black bead. This bead was peacefully floating there, about a meter above the bottom of the trench.

Zhao Hai made the whale go right by the bead as he carefully examined the bead. However, besides being black, there wasn't any other aspect to be seen.

Cai'er then said, "Young Master, absorb this thing into the Space. I think it would be extremely useful in upgrading it."

Zhao Hai stared, then nodded as he absorbed the bead into the Space. And just as the bead entered, a prompt was heard, "Extremely strong energy has entered the Space. Absorbing energy. Upgrading the Space's environment. Incorporating upgrades to the Host's Body. Improving lifeforms inside the Space, lifeforms has been strengthened. Robotic objects in the Space has been upgraded. Spatial Water and Spatial Soil has been upgraded. Space's toxin has been improved as well. Space upgraded to level 60. Hoping for the Host's continual effort."

Zhao Hai was wild with joy, he didn't expect the bead to upgrade the Space. This is a very fantastic outcome. Moreover, Zhao Hai had felt that his body has been strengthened after the level up. Zhao Hai immediately turned to Cai'er and said, "Cai'er, how do you describe my present strength?"

Cai'er smiled and said, "Young Master, your current strength is the same as that of a God-ranked expert. You can now claim to be God-rank. This is really good, I can feel that my strength has been improved as well. Young Master, you can now buy 10 more backgrounds. However, they can only be ordinary backgrounds."

Zhao Hai was ecstatic, “Good! Fantastic! Ordinary background is till good. Go buy a sea-based background for me. Then place those mutant beasts on that. I want a background that would specialize in breeding these creatures.”

Cai’er noddod as she immediately took action. Then Zhao Hai turned his head to Laura and the others, “This is great. Now that the Space has levelled up, I can now plant more powerful plants so that you can upgrade your strengths. Even if we can’t turn you into God-ranked experts, you would still be able to tower above normal 9th rank experts.”

Chapter 644 – Water Refining Technique

Laura smiled and said, “That’s great! Now we don’t have to go to the Elven Forest in order to level up. Brother Hai, you should get those plants sorted out, have Grandpa Green and the others level up.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he absorbed the Devil Octopus before heading back to the surface. As long as he sees a Devil Octopus, Zhao Hai would immediately absorb it to the Space. As a result, Zhao Hai had accumulated about 300 Devil Octopus. This turned the Octopus’ population in the trench into zero.

Zhao Hai felt that this was good. After all, if these octopus were to stay here, they would be a continual threat to the Fishman Race. But Zhao Hai still had some worries. Although the trench had a very strong Demonic presence due to the core, it still hadn’t spread outside the trench. At the same time, the inhabitants of the trench were all spotted outside. Why was this possible?

Zhao Hai was thinking about these while the Blade Scale Whale continued to go upward. Every magic beast that they had come across were all grabbed by Zhao Hai.

The whale slowly went up the trench before they had finally reached the exit. Zhao Hai couldn’t help but give out a long breath. Although they got huge harvests in the trench, Zhao Hai and the others still felt down while inside there due to the lack of light. It was good that they were now approaching the brighter parts of the sea.

At this time, a pressure suddenly dawned on them. Zhao Hai couldn’t help but get stunned, he didn’t know what was going on. Where did this pressure come from?

Zhao Hai immediately turned on the monitor to see what was happening. At this time, the Soul Sucking Reef suddenly emitted a black energy that formed into a magic formation. This formation

pressured the trench making Zhao Hai and the others feel as if a mountain was pressing down on them. No matter how hard the Blade Scale Whale swam, it was still unable to progress further.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but be surprised upon seeing this. One must know that when the Space levelled up, the undead got an upgrade as well. Compared to average 9th rank experts, these undead were a notch better. And because of the Demon Aura, they all became much stronger. But after all of these, the whale was still being suppressed by a formation. This magic formation wasn't simple.

Zhao Hai didn't worry about it, he had the whale dive back down as the pressure vanished along with the magic formation.

Zhao Hai was stunned as he turned to Laura and the others, "What's going on? Why does the formation appear when we go up and vanish when we go back down?"

Laura and the others were clueless about this as well, however, Meg suddenly said, "Young Master, when we got down, we weren't stopped. Only when we came up were we blocked from exiting. I think it's because we had been tainted with a bit of the Demon Realm's aura. Maybe this formation's purpose was to block those Demonized creatures."

Zhao Hai stared, then he thought carefully about it. It seems like this was the case. They weren't able to hear about this from the Fishmen, but judging by the fact that no mutant beasts were able to get out of the trench meant that this formation had the function to block them from exiting. It might be just like Meg said, the formation was something that was sensitive to Demonic aura. When they got close to the exit, the formation had detected some of the aura that had stuck to them and thus promptly blocking them from leaving the trench.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but look at Meg in surprise. When Meg was with everyone, she would basically stay quiet and didn't

express her opinions too much. Therefore, one would see that it was Zhao Hai and the others that were doing well. All Meg was doing was taking care of Zhao Hai and the others.

But Zhao Hai wasn't expecting Meg to talk at this time. It's not that she wasn't smart, Meg just doesn't want to fight for attention. Usually, Zhao Hai and the others would have taken care of everything before needing her help, so she just kept a low profile. Seeing her express herself, Zhao Hai felt a little bit happy.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but laugh and said, "I think you're right, Meg. Hahaha. Don't be reserved too much in the future. If you have anything to say, just say it. Alright?"

Meg nodded, which made Zhao Hai smile. Then he waved his hand as light magic and water magic cleansed their bodies. Then he commanded the Blade Scale Whale to head upwards. This time, nothing stopped their progression. The whale swam continuously before passing through the mouth of the trench and going back to the battlefield.

When they came out, Zhao Hai became surprised, this was because the Mermaid Clan's Azure Dragon Snail was still there. They had been inside the trench for about four days. The trench wasn't shallow, and after heading down, they still went out of their way to collect magic beasts, making the time they spent inside quite long. Zhao Hai and the others were 9th rank experts, so it wasn't an issue for them to go sleepless for a few days. However, Zhao Hai wasn't expecting the Mermaids to be still here. Why would they stay?

At this time, Zhao Hai saw some black spots coming out of the Snail and was swimming towards him. Zhao Hai looked at the monitor and identified the other party as Dashan. When they arrived by the Blade Scale Whale, Zhao Hai immediately went to the whale's mouth and greeted, "Captain Dashan, why are you still here? Weren't you going to deal with the other Fishmen tribes?"

Dashan gave Zhao Hai a bow and said, “The General was worried for mister, so she had me wait here for your arrival. However, the General also had sent some parties on order to deal with the important matters, so everything is going according to plan. The General had left word that if you come out, she wanted you to see her.”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “Alright, I also wanted to apologize to the General for making her worry.” Then he had the Blade Scale Whale swim towards the Azure Dragon Snail.

Before long, Zhao Hai and the others had arrived inside the Azure Dragon Snail’s main hall. Luo Ying was already waiting inside along with Luo Luo. Other than the two of them, nobody else was present inside.

Seeing that Zhao Hai had arrived, the two immediately stood up. Then Luo Ying said, “Mister, please sit down. How was the trip? Did everything go well?”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “Very well. I can tell the General that the Devil Trench wouldn’t be dangerous anymore. You might even go there and settle. However, I suggest you don’t do that. It is extremely pitch black inside.”

What Zhao Hai said was reasonable, although the seabed was also dark, there were still some luminescent shellfish and plants to illuminate it. However, the trench had no light at all, it was filled with depressing black color all around it.

Luo Ying smiled and said, “Then I’ll have to thank mister. But I’m afraid that nobody would want to settle there either. The endless sea is too big, so there are still places that are much better than the trench. Right, what is mister going to do now? Will you be returning to the Continent?”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly, then he shook his head and said, “I wont, I also want to see what the Soul Sucking Reef is all about.”

Luo Ying wrinkled her brow upon hearing Zhao Hai. She doesn't understand, Zhao Hai was obviously a Great Noble of the continent, he should have a lot of matters to be taking care of. So why must he risk his life in all of these locations? Casually going to dangerous places was too unreasonable.

After thinking about it, Luo Ying couldn't help but get the courage to ask Zhao Hai, "What does mister want to see in Soul Sucking Reef? You should know that our Fishman Race has always been investigating the place. However, we still weren't able to find anything despite doing it for generations. At this point, we won't dare going there anymore."

Zhao Hai gave a nod and said, "I know about this. But it's possible that I may get something that is very important to me. So I want to go there and search for it. After that, I'll return to the continent."

Zhao Hai wasn't lying, he really wanted to see how the reef's magic formation could get that strong. It can actually pressure the mutant magic beasts for many years. This made Zhao Hai very curious about it.

If there was really such a formation, then Zhao Hai would naturally want to take a look at it. If he studies this formation, then it would be similar to gaining a weapon to battle the Demon Realm in the future. .

Upon hearing Zhao Hai, Luo Ying knew that she couldn't persuade him, so she just said, "Then I'll be waiting for mister's return. If mister encounters any danger, don't hesitate to retreat."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Alright, General can feel relieved. Right, I have a matter to ask Her Majesty and I might need the General's help."

Luo Ying stared, she was curious about what Zhao Hai wanted help with, "What does mister need? I shall immediately send word to Her Majesty."

Zhao Hao nodded and said, “I want to ask Her Majesty if it was possible for me to learn your Mermaid Clan’s Water Refining Technique. Rest assured, I certainly won’t spread it to other people.”

Luo Ying stared when she heard Zhao Hai, then she forced a smile and said, “Mister, I think you are misunderstanding something. My Mermaid Clan’s Water Refining Technique is not a secret. The reason why this technique is only used by a few was because its requirements are very high. In addition to having the person be gifted in controlling water, the water used for the technique needed to be special as well. The technique would need high quality water in order for it to succeed. Our Mermaid Clan has our own innate technique that can purify water, making sure that the water is as high quality as possible. Because of this, only our race was able to use this Water Refining Technique. If other people don’t have the means to purify water, then it would be impossible for them to use this technique.”

Chapter 645 – Soul Sucking Reef

Zhao Hai was calm while listening to Luo Ying, but was actually very excited deep inside. Luo Ying said that others weren't able to use this method of refining due to the lack of water purifying methods. However, this wasn't a problem for Zhao Hai. One shouldn't forget that Zhao Hai has Bubble, the source of Myriad Water. Bubble was more than qualified to be used as a helper for Water Refining.

After Luo Ying finished talking, Zhao Hai showed a faint smile and said, "I ask the General to still convey my request to Her Majesty. I want to use this Water Refining technique as a reference. The General should know how much importance I place in this war with the Divine Race, but when the war starts, we would need to have a lot of weapons. Relying on Human and Dwarf artisans simply wouldn't do. Therefore, I want to add this Water Refining Technique to the equation and see if it can help with the demand."

When she heard Zhao Hai, Luo Ying immediately nodded and said, "Mister can rest assured, I will surely take responsibility for this matter. Our Water Refining Technique isn't a secret, it just needs appropriate preparations. However, I can assure you that this method has its own brilliant methods. Mister, you can handle your matters first. When you come back, I will have the Water Refining technique to give you."

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "Alright, then I'll have to trouble the General. I'll be heading to the Soul Sucking Reef now, farewell."

Luo Ying stood up and gave Zhao Hai a salute, "I wish for Mister's good luck." Zhao Hai returned the gesture and then smiled faintly before turning around to leave.

After returning to the blade scale whale, Zhao Hai couldn't help but laugh. Laura looked at Zhao Hai and smiled, "Brother Hai, I

didn't expect that obtaining the Mermaid Clan's Water Refining Technique would be that smooth."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "The Mermaids do care about the other Fishmen, but since no other race had the ability to purify water, they weren't able to pass this technique around. Even if they spread the method, nobody would be able to use it. But we have Bubble, although I get angry every time I see him, at least we had found a use for him."

When Laura heard Zhao Hai, she couldn't help but chuckle. Bubble was really an interesting thing, he was quite bold and loved to mingle with the ladies. Seeing Bubble makes Zhao Hai feel discomfort.

However, Laura and the others didn't care about this. In their eyes, Bubble was like a small pet that was just a bit smart. Bubble has also been like this, so it was impossible to change him. More importantly, Bubble makes Zhao Hai jealous.

To be honest, Laura and the others loved seeing Zhao Hai being jealous of Bubble. It was because this meant that Zhao Hai really did treasure them.

Lizzy chuckled as well and said, "Big Brother Hai, do you think that this Water Refining Technique would be something useful?"

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "With our current techniques, this Water Refining Technique should be of use. Additionally, Father might want to research it. When we get the technique, perhaps he would find some avenues of which to improve on."

Lizzy naturally knew that the father that Zhao Hai meant was Karen. The man was a research maniac, therefore Lizzy didn't become confused and just nodded.

Then Zhao Hai said, "I want to head to the Soul Sucking Reef to look for the thing that made it suppress the things inside the Devil Trench. If we can find out about it, then it might prove useful in

our fight against the Demon Realm.”

Laura nodded and said, “Soul Sucking Reef is truly formidable. Its quite a distance away from the trench, btu it can still sense the Demon Realm’s aura and suppress it. At the same time, it also imprisoned the mutant beasts of the trench.”

Megan wrinkled her brows and said, “But I haven’t heard of such a formation in this world. Elder Brother Hai, you should ask Luo Ying and see if this formation was something that they had set up.”

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “There’s no need to ask, it definitely wasn’t them. Otherwise, Luo Ying might have already told us about it when I informed her of my intention to investigate the place. It’s also because of this that made me curious about who had the ability to set up this formation or maybe why the reef came into existence.”

Megan nodded, if the Mermaid did indeed set up the reef, then they should have already informed the other Fishmen.

There were two places that the Fishmen couldn’t understand. One of them gave Zhao Hai a God-rank magic beast core which upgraded the Space to level 60, gave Zhao Hai ten more slots for backgrounds, and gave him plants that can become God-ranked. This was a huge harvest.

As for the other place, they still haven’t investigated it yet. That place was full of mystery and Zhao Hai didn’t want to rashly charge through it. So Zhao Hai decided to take a break and maintain a good condition for himself.

Zhao Hai and the others returned to the Space and had a hot bath before taking ample rest. After that, they immediately rode the blade scale whale and headed towards the Soul Sucking Reef.

Zhao Hai hadn’t told Green and the others about the Space’s upgrade yet. Although the Space had raised some Messenger Fishes, their number wasn’t very large. Therefore, Zhao Hai

wanted to wait until all of the Fishman race's matters got dealt with before telling Green and the others everything as well as handing them some Messenger Fish. In any case, they had gone uncommunicative before, and it wasn't a big deal.

Zhao Hai and the others sat in the Space while the blade scale whale swam towards the Soul Sucking Reef. They were eager to know what is inside the place.

It didn't take long before the blade scale whale entered the reef. Its insides were beautiful, there were strange shapes everywhere that would attract anyone's gaze. The inside was like a totally different world, completely detached from the world outside. One might even see the shapes of some of the continent's animals on the corals.

Zhao Hai and the others forgot about their initial purpose of coming here as they gawked at the beautiful scenery. The reef was that beautiful. Besides the reef, there were also a lot of plants as well as small fishes inside. The bodies of these fishes had attractive patterns on them making it extremely adorable to the women. Laura and the others were nudging Zhao Hai to catch some of these fishes.

Naturally, Zhao Hai didn't decline, he caught some fishes and placed them in the Space. Laura and the others then had a glass tank and filled it with seawater. Then Zhao Hai placed the small fishes on the glass tank for them to look at.

Laura and the others were looking at the fishes, swimming around in a very attractive manner. This made Zhao Hai force a smile.

Zhao Hai turned his attention back to the monitor, he wanted to see where they were at, but this made him startled. When Laura and the others heard Zhao Hai, they immediately turned their attention to the screen. The Laura said, "Brother Hai, what's wrong?" Zhao Hai didn't speak as he pointed to a corner of the

screen. Zhao Hai enlarged the image and showed Laura and the others what was wrong.

On the screen, Zhao Hai's group was represented by a small red while the other fishes were green dots. What made Zhao Hai surprised was the movement of their red dot. The red dot was circling around one area, not deviating from this circular course. It was as if it was trapped by something.

This astonished Zhao Hai, one shouldn't forget that the blade scale whale is an undead, so it didn't depend on its eyes for perception. However, it was still trapped, it seems like this Soul Sucking Reef is living up to its reputation.

Laura and the others also saw what was going on. They couldn't help but stare in amazement, they didn't expect that they would experience such a thing.

Zhao Hai immediately came out of the Space and went to the blade scale whale. He sat inside the body and felt that everything was going normal. The whale seems to be going forward and the scenery was constantly changing, he couldn't see any duplicates in what he saw.

Laura and the others also went out with Zhao Hai. When they saw the situation, they were shocked, Laura turned her head to Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, what's all this about?"

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, "I also don't know. But I'm sure that this is related to that magic formation. No need to think about it too much, what we have to do is go forward." Then Zhao Hai didn't mind the outside scenery as he directed the blade scale whale to go in a straight line. When the whale finally left its circle path, Zhao Hai turned to Laura and said, "Did the scenery change?"

Laura shook her head and said, "No, it just felt like the whale took a small turn. Everything else didn't change."

Zhao Hai nodded, he now understood how formidable this formation was. It can actually bewitch not only people, but the undead as well. Otherwise, the blade scale whale wouldn't have been duped.

However, this had made Zhao Hai even more curious. He now believed that what he would obtain in this place wouldn't be very simple.

Zhao Hai continued to direct the whale to go in a straight line. A short while after the whale breaks out from its circular path, it would return to going in circles, which would then prompt Zhao Hai to change its course. Fortunately, Zhao Hai had the monitor, otherwise he would be trapped inside this reef.

Chapter 646 – Tai Ji Eight Trigrams Chart?

After crossing through nine traps, the whale had finally maintained its straight direction without going in circles once more. However, Zhao Hai can actually feel anxiety. He felt that the thing that he was looking for was already quite near.

Laura and the others were anxiously staring at the monitor as well. The screen was now bigger than it was back in the trench. Back there, the monitor can only look at about 100 meters away, it seems like its ability was suppressed by the God-ranked core.

The situation at this time was very different, but it wasn't anything better. It can still only display about 200 meters in front.

However, this also managed to make Zhao Hai happy. After all, when the monitor was suppressed, they had managed to acquire a God-ranked core, making the Space level up in the process. Although the suppression was weaker, only about 200 meters, the thing inside should still managed to nudge the amount required by the Space to level up.

At the same time, Zhao Hai also become careful. They hadn't met an attack the last time because of Cai'er's presence. However, the situation this time is completely opposite. The place where they are now suppresses the Demon Realm aura. If they were to meet an attack, then it was possible for it to be quite dangerous. Therefore, Zhao Hai had Laura and the others enter the Space while he stayed inside the whale, urging it to go forward.

After going forward for several minutes, Zhao Hai suddenly felt a very formidable aura wash over him. He immediately made the blade scale whale stop and had some undead fishes to take a look. Nobody from the outside can see the undead, so they can exhibit all of their abilities here.

At this time, a long figure arrived. Zhao Hai looked at this figure and knew that it was a 9th rank magic beast. When that long figure

saw Zhao Hai, its tail immediately flashed as a blue light travelled towards the Blade Scale Whale.

Zhao Hai didn't have the opportunity to dodge, the blue light came too fast. When he saw the light, it had already hit the blade scale whale. The whale felt the shock, but there was no further damage.

Zhao Hai identified the long figure as a 9th rank electric eel. It discharged a very powerful shock. However, electric attacks were completely ineffective against the undead.

The electric eel's electricity might be a problem for other magic beasts, but the undead were different. The undead couldn't be paralyzed, making the electric eel's abilities virtually useless.

Zhao Hai waved his hand as his undead threw themselves towards the electric eel. The eel didn't expect that his attack would be useless. One must know that the intellect of 9th rank beasts were no different than normal humans. So when it saw the undead, it immediately dodged as it discharged even more attacks, but to zero effect.

Zhao Hai calmly looked at his undead, he knew that the electric eel's attacks wouldn't work. It might be strong against beasts, but for the undead, it doesn't really affect them.

Sure enough, the electric eel found itself at a dilemma. When he stopped attacking, it was already too late, he was now surrounded by the undead. Naturally, the undead weren't polite, one of the swordfish undead attacked the eel to death.

Zhao Hai then released a black gas that enveloped the electric eel. When the gas vanished, the eel turned into an undead creature.

9th rank beasts can speak, so Zhao Hai called it over and asked, "What is ahead of here?"

Since the electric eel can answer, it immediately said, "Young Master, up ahead is a strange flower. Since I was little, I always

found that flower to be comfortable, so I stayed by its side all the time.”

Zhao Hai looked at the eel and asked, “Flower?”

The electric eel nodded and said, “Yes, Young Master, it’s a very big flower, moreover, it is also very attractive!”

Zhao Hai immediately responded, “Let’s go, let me see it.” Then the eel complied as it lead Zhao Hai towards the same flower that it described.

Upon seeing the flower, Zhao Hai couldn’t help but get shocked. This wasn’t a flower that he had seen in the sea. This was a lotus flower!

The lotus was very big, its blue petals were arranged in nine layers. It was very beautiful. Most importantly, the middle of the lotus wasn’t actually a seed base. There was another lotus flower inside, it seemed to be like 9th rank lotus bud.

Zhao Hai stared at this flower, he didn’t expect this thing to appear at this place. Lotuses weren’t usually found at the sea. For this one to be here was extremely strange.

However, Zhao Hai immediately became happy, this was the first time that he had come across a lotus in this world. He had seen other similar Earth plants on the continent, however, all of them were variations from what Zhao Hai imagined. This lotus was the first one that Zhao Hai can really describe as a genuine lotus.

Then Zhao Hai turned to the electric eel and said, “Are there any other flowers such as this?”

The eel answered, “There nothing else, Young Master, only this one.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he immediately went to the lotus and had the monitor examine it. He wanted to see the underside of the lotus.

Sure enough, Zhao Hai can see the lotus root under the flower. Although the root only had a thickness of an arm, it was as transparent as a crystal, it looked very tender as well.

Zhao Hai didn't take the lotus immediately, he still wanted to see how long the roots were. Therefore, he continued to follow the root until he can see its end.

Zhao Hai looked for a long time but still cannot find the end of the lotus' root. It seemed like the root has no end, it was very long. Zhao Hai frowned but he still didn't stop. He felt that this lotus was becoming more and more extraordinary. If other other lotuses had such long roots, it might have already grown new buds, but this lotus only had one.

After thinking about it, Zhao Hai placed his anxiety away. Then he continued to find the tip of the lotus' root.

Zhao Hai found a problem after searching for a long time. The lotus root started to extend, and it seems like it ran underneath the entire Soul Sucking Reef.

This finding made Zhao Hai excited, if its really like what he thought, then the magic formation of the Soul Sucking Reef might have been caused by the lotus root. If that is really the case, then he might have found another treasure.

A day had passed by but Zhao Hai still wasn't able to find the tip of the lotus root. However, he didn't give up, he took a rest and had Cai'er replace him. At this point, he can confirm that this lotus root does indeed cover the entirety of the Soul Sucking Reef.

The next day, Zhao Hai finally found the tip of the root. When he found the end, Zhao Hai couldn't help but be stunned. The ends of the root turned out to be circular. Then there was a curved dividing line in the middle of the circle. Then with the circumference of the root, it had actually turned into a Taiji Yin-Yang circle.

And when he traced the image of the roots and zoomed out, Zhao Hai can see that the reef, and the lotus root actually formed a natural Tai Ji Eight Trigrams Chart, with the lotus flower placed in the middle of it.

Zhao Hao stared at the diagram on the screen while being startled deep inside. He didn't think that he would encounter this diagram in this world. This image was too familiar, it was a unique design in Chinese culture.

He couldn't help but gawk at the mystery of creation and its ability to form a diagram like this naturally. No wonder the Demon Realm's aura got suppressed. The Tai Ji Eight Trigrams Chart was a Daoist diagram that could restrain various Demonic creatures. For this big diagram to be placed right beside the trench meant that the Devil Trench has been suppressed all this time.

Zhao Hai knew what this chart was, however, it was different for Laura and the others. Laura and the others curiously looked at the monitor and asked, "Brother Hai, what did you find?"

Zhao Hai recovered, then he laughed out loudly and said, "We had found something good. In fact, we had found a treasure!! Fantastic, this is really fantastic. Hahaha"

Laura and the others stared at Zhao Hai, they couldn't understand what made Zhao Hai this happy. After some time, Zhao Hai recovered, he didn't explain the chart to Laura and the others since it was quite complicated. At the same time, Zhao Hai can only understand about half of it, so he really doesn't have the qualifications to explain.

Zhao Hai looked at the others and then smiled faintly, "Just know that we gained something good. I can't tell it to you right now. In any case, we must absorb the entire Soul Sucking Reef into the Space."

Laura and the others stared blankly, then they shifted their gazes towards the reef. The Soul Sucking Reef is very huge. They even

needed two days to travel through it. Can they really absorb the entire thing into the Space?

Zhao Hai also knew about this issue, so he couldn't help but knit his brows. Then he turned to Cai'er and said, "Cai'er, can we absorb the entire reef into the Space?"

Cai'er looked at the reef and nodded, "I can, however, this area might have something special going on. So I need the help of Bubbles in order to accomplish it."

Chapter 647 – Innate Treasure

When Zhao Hai heard Cai'er, he couldn't help but be surprised. He looked at her and said, "Does that little guy have the strength to help you out?"

Cai'er just smiled and said, "Young Master, don't underestimate that fellow. He is the source of Myriad Water. He is a very strong underwater. With his help, I would definitely be able to absorb the entire reef into the Space."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned his hand to grab Bubble while pinching it a good amount of times. Naturally, this doesn't affect Bubble, it wasn't able to hurt him. After all, Bubble really didn't care about what form he was in.

While Bubble was being grabbed by Zhao Hai, he tried to flee towards Laura's arms. However, he was stopped by Zhao Hai, "If you run away, I will roast you. Making you into a boiling Bubble. Go and help Cai'er absorb the reef into the Space. That thing is useful to me."

Bubble doesn't dare offend Zhao Hai. Although he always stayed in the Space with Laura and the others while acting stubborn towards Zhao Hai, he was still very afraid of angering this Young Master of his. He was already part of the Space, and if Zhao Hai wanted to deal with him, he only needs to think about it and Bubble would disappear. And Zhao Hai can still retain his powers while making a new Bubble, a much different one compared to the original.

Therefore, Bubble doesn't dare to neglect this command, so he immediately flattered Zhao Hai, "Young Master can feel relieved. As long as the Young Master needs me, I would go through fire and water for you."

Zhao Hai tapped his own head, he feels a little headache. He already knows what kind of person Bubble was, so why does it feel

the need to flatter him?

In the end, Zhao Hai decided to ignore it, he turned to Cai'er and said, "Cai'er, you can begin." Cai'er nodded, then she turned to Bubble and said, "Bubble, imprison the water here, make it clump up before I absorb it to the Space."

Bubble nodded and said, "So it's only this? This is too simple." Then his figure disappeared as he exited from the Blade Scale Whale while Zhao Hai and the others observe him.

Bubble was seen floating there, his body rotated as he loudly said, "Surrender to the Myriad Water, condense!" After hearing this voice, Zhao Hai and the others can see that the Soul Sucking Reef had experienced a change. The water in the entire reef seems to have suddenly solidified. The water around it became stationary along with the fishes inside. Everything looks as though it was sealed in ice. However, the solidified water didn't turn to ice.

Zhao Hai hasn't seen this side of Bubble before. This guy always had a playful look as Laura and the others play with him like a pet or a naughty child. Zhao Hai couldn't imagine that this blob would be this strong.

Seeing that Bubble had delivered, Cai'er immediately said, "Absorb!" Then a spatial rift appeared and enveloped the entire reef like big pocket.

The reef was directly taken from the sea to the Space, even including the rocks ten meters under the sea.

Seeing this, Zhao Hai immediately turned to Cai'er and said, "Cai'er don't put it in the Space's sea. Look for a remote place close to the villa, prepare a place and place it there."

Cai'er nodded, then a large pond appeared right close to the villa where the reef was placed in. Cai'er directed seawater towards the big pond, then she placed a small hole on the side, making sure that there was running water in the pond.

After the Soul Sucking Reef got absorbed to the Space, a prompt was then heard, “Innate Treasure found. Going in accordance to the highest good in Taoism. Laws of Heaven and Earth detected. Space Levels up. Space is now level 65. Host officially achieves God-rank. May now use Heaven and Earth energy. This was a very good level up. Hoping for the Host’s further effort.”

Zhao Hai stared before he exploded with joy. He didn’t think that the lotus was actually deemed to be an Innate Treasure by the Space. It was actually a treasure that was naturally produced, which also contained the laws of Heaven and Earth. This harvest was indeed extremely good.

Moreover Zhao Hai can feel that the Space’s classification of God-rank was different than outside. It seems like God-rank for the Space was much stronger than the God-ranks of the outside world.

But Zhao Hai had noticed something different from this level up. It didn’t say anything about the undead or the beasts being upgraded. Other than him being a true God-rank, nothing else has changed.

Zhao Hai thought for a moment and probably guessed the reason. In the past, whether it be the God’s Blood or the God-rank Core, they were all based on energy, so it can manage to improve everything. On the other hand, the Soul Sucking Reef was a treasure that was based on the laws of the Heaven and the Earth. This law requires people to comprehend it. Therefore, the Space couldn’t upgrade the beasts and the undead.

After thinking through this point, Zhao Hai couldn’t help but laugh. He really got a treasure this time. Moreover, this treasure can still be upgraded. Although Zhao Hai had no idea how to improve this treasure, he can still find some time to research it in the future.

With Zhao Hai making this big move, it was impossible for Luo Ying and the others to not know about it. At this time, Luo Ying

had arrived right by Zhao Hai's Blade Scale Whale, staring blankly at the pit that Zhao Hai just made. This time, they had finally witnessed the might of Zhao Hai. Nobody but him can make the entire Soul Sucking Reef vanish completely.

Zhao Hai also noticed Luo Ying, so he turned his head and smiled, "General, I apologize, I just noticed that there was a naturally formed magic formation here. It's very dangerous, so I took the chance to take it away."

Luo Ying recovered, then she looked at Zhao Hai and saw the happy expression on his face. Although she didn't know what just happened, she was sure that Zhao Hai just obtained something good. As for Zhao Hai's gain, Luo Ying had no intention of asking about it. As far as she knows, it was virtually useless for her. Even if it was the largest treasure, the Fishman Race still haven't managed to understand it after all these years. If Zhao Hai obtains it, then it was good. Moreover, he also got to erase a danger to the Fishman Race.

Luo Ying gave a salute and said, "I congratulate Mister and also wanted to express gratitude in behalf of our Fishman Race for erasing this hidden danger."

When Zhao Hai heard Luo Ying, he stared for a moment before he smiled to her and said, "The General is too polite." At this time, Zhao Hai was pulling a thumbs up for Luo Ying deep inside. She was truly worthy to be a general. She can actually notice that he had obtained a treasure just by observation.

Seeing that Zhao Hai didn't deny it, Luo Ying became glad. This means that Zhao Hai was an honest person. So she smiled and said, "Mister, please come with me. I will be giving the Water Refining technique to you."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Alright, then I'll be right behind the General." Then he commanded the Blade Scale Whale to head towards the Azure Dragon Snake.

Upon arriving inside the snail and having sat down, Zhao Hai smiled and then said, “I don’t want to alarm the General. Soul Sucking Reef is actually a naturally formed magic formation. I don’t know how to use this formation, so I planned to take it back in order to study it. Right, I forgot to tell the General last time. The Devil Trench actually houses a core of a high level Demon Realm magic beast. The Devil Octopus is actually a beast that was polluted by that core. The Core has already been destroyed by me, the octopi have been seized as well. There won’t be any problems in the future, the General can rest assured.”

Luo Ying knit her brows and said, “That the Devil Trench actually has a Demon Realm’s magic beast core? Is this a plot by the Demon Realm?”

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “I’m not sure. This core is a treasure in the Demon Realm, so no Demon should be willing to just place it here. However, it is also good to keep guard. If there’s anything that you can’t solve in the future, then don’t hesitate to tell me about it. I will do my best to find a solution. We must gather our strengths before the attack of the Divine Race and the Demon Realm. We should be stable as we prepare for the dozens of battles to come.”

Luo Ying nodded, then she took out a beast skin scroll and handed it over to Zhao Hai and said, “Mister, this is our Mermaid Race’s Water Refining Technique. I hope that it can be useful for mister. Is Mister preparing to head to the Continent? Her Majesty also asks you to see her.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “General can rest assured, I will certainly see Her Majesty. After all, I’ve already promised before. Will General not go back with us?”

Luo Ying shook her head and said, “I’m unable to go back now. I still have a lot of things to do. I’m simply unable to find free time.”

Zhao Hai gave a nod, “Alright, then we’ll rest for a day here

before heading towards Mermaid Island tomorrow. After seeing Her Majesty, I will then be returning to the Continent.”

Luo Ying nodded and said, “Then I won’t be disturbing Mister anymore. You have been working hard in the past few days.” Zhao Hai nodded, then he gave Luo Ying a salute before turning around to leave.

When Zhao Hai returned to the Space, he immediately opened the beast skin scroll and carefully read it. He was genuinely curious about this Water Refining Technique.

The Water Refining Technique wasn’t long, nor was it difficult. There were two points in this method, one was the requirement for water. The water to be used needed to be high quality. The better the quality, the better the item that was going to be produced.

The second point was about the controlling of the water. Along with its requirement for water, the control that was required for this technique was high as well. Even most water element magic formation doesn’t require this intricate control of water.

Chapter 648 – Startling Changes

However, Zhao Hai had no problems dealing with these two points. As for the high quality water, he has Bubble. At the same time, who else was suitable for controlling water than Bubble?

Besides these two characteristics, there was also another property to this Water Refining Technique. It was that it was slow. Comparing Fire and Water Refining Techniques, Fire Refining Techniques were much faster. Fire Refining techniques uses fire to refine metals and other materials by hitting them with a hammer, removing impurities from these materials with each round of hammering.

Water Refining technique also has the same process but it uses water instead of fire. Naturally, control of water was extremely important in this process. If one was bad at control, then they would risk the destruction of the material, making it unable to be used anymore. Water Refining technique might remove impurities, however, it actually doesn't change the composition of the material, instead, it actually makes it much stronger and sturdier.

An advantage to Water Refining technique that was different from Fire Refining techniques was that the usage of water makes it possible to refine more types of materials compared to using fire.

Actually, the Humans also have some sort of Water Refining technique. For example, spear shafts, these shafts were needed to be immersed in water before they were going to be used. After a lot of steps, these would then be qualified to be part of a spear. If one were to look at it, then it was exactly like refining that used water. However, this method was different. The Water Refining technique of the Fishmen was used to get rid of impurities, while the Water Refining technique of Humans was just to make their spear shafts much tougher.

On the other hand, the Fishmen also used Human techniques in their refining. While using their refining techniques, they would also incorporate many materials together in order to make new and improved items.

After reading through the Water refining scroll, Zhao Hai sighed. This Water Refining technique is truly a one of a kind technique. In fact, Zhao Hai believed that Humans might be able to use it, but in a lower probability of success. Purifying water can be done through distillation, the only problem would be the control of water.

But all of these wasn't a problem for Zhao Hai. The reason why the Mermaids created this Water Refining technique was so that they wouldn't rely on Human-made weapons. Therefore, most of the materials used in this technique originated in the Sea. And since Zhao Hai had the Space's ocean, he had the proper requirements to perform the technique.

Laura looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Brother Hai, you don't need to be anxious. The Divine Race wouldn't be coming soon."

Zhao Hai smiled bitterly, he knew that Laura was just doing this in order to comfort him. And how can he not be anxious, the Radiant Church and the Dragon Clan's moves had become more and more frequent. Zhao Hai reckoned that the time of the Divine Race's move was not far.

After thinking about this, Zhao Hai couldn't help but loudly sigh. Then he turned to Laura and said, "Let's go and take a walk before resting. Then we'll head to Mermaid Island tomorrow." Laura and the others didn't decline as they followed Zhao Hai.

Unknowingly, the group arrived at the big pond where the Soul Sucking Reef was placed in. Zhao Hai didn't call it the Soul Sucking Reef anymore, instead, he changed its name to Tai Ji Pond.

Zhao Hai looked at the lotus' naturally formed Tai Ji Eight

Trigrams Chart and couldn't help but become calm. He let out a long breath as he looked at the lotus flower. He couldn't help but smile as he remembered his time back on Earth.

Then suddenly, Zhao Hai remembered that the Water Refining Technique was able to refine a lot of materials. The Fishmen had done experiments wherein they refined living plants and animals. Although it had a small chance of success, it would yield good results if it were to succeed. Refined plants and animals would become much better than their unrefined counterparts.

When he thought about this, Zhao Hai's eyes couldn't help but shine. He immediately loudly called, "Bubble!" Then Bubble quickly floated towards him saying, "Young Master, you called me."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he looked at Bubble and said, "We had acquired method of Water Refining. I will have Cai'er teach you how to do it later, then Cai'er shall provide you with living plants as well as minerals to experiment on. When you fully master the technique you'll be living here in the Tai Ji Pond. Go and refine everything inside here, the lotus flower, the root, the stones, everything, even the small fishes. As long as I don't call you, don't stop refining. Understood?"

Bubble thought for a moment and said, "Young Master, I know how to read, there's no need for Cai'er to teach me. That little girl is too hateful. I don't need her, I can learn by myself."

When Zhao Hai heard this, he stared, then he looked puzzlingly at Bubble and said, "Bubble, you know how to read characters? Who taught you?"

Bubble shook his head and said, "I don't know, the only thing I can remember is that I've always been literate. That knowledge came along with the images of women from before. As for the other specifics, I really have no idea."

Zhao Hai looked at Bubble and said, "You really can't remember

anything?”

Bubble nodded, “Young Master, the only things I can remember were the figure of a woman as well as characters. Nothing else.”

Zhao Hai knitted his brows, he was confused about this matter. In the end, he can only give the beast skin scroll over to Bubble and said, “Alright, you go read this thing. Remember, make sure to take care in refining things in this pond. If you do badly, then I will boil you and make you into tea.”

Bubble shivered in fright, he immediately nodded and said, “Young Master, rest assured, I will certainly follow your orders.” Then he unrolled the beast skin scroll and read a bit before looking at Zhao Hai and said, “Young Master, I’ll be heading back and do some experiments.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned to Cai’er and said, “Cai’er, provide Bubble with everything he needs to experiment with. Don’t use good things. As long as he masters it completely, immediately have him enter the Tai Ji Pond.” Cai’er nodded, then she turned to Bubble and smiled, which frightened Bubble so much that he ran away. While running, Bubble said, “Young Master, there’s no need for her to look for materials. I’ll go and acquire them myself!”

Cai’er coldly snorted as she yelled back, “You dared to call me little girl as well as hateful, you stinky Bubble, you’re dead. I’ll boil you into hot water.” Then she chased after Bubble, leaving Zhao Hai and the others behind.

Zhao Hao looked at the two and couldn’t help but chuckle. Laura looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Look at this, Cai’er had taken you as an example. She’s now saying that she’ll boil Bubble. You should know that Bubble is really afraid of being boiled alive.”

Zhao Hai laughed and then said, “Of course I know, but that Bubble has extremely thick skin, so he’ll definitely be fine. If you don’t threaten that fellow, then he won’t move. It’ll be good for us

to have Cai'er looking after him.”

Laura and the others laughed as well. Cai'er had a deep connection with the Space. So she always places Bubble and Mu'er in check. However, she was also quite playful and wanted to play tricks, making Bubble's life interesting.

Mu'er was usually right by Zhao Hai's side, so Cai'er couldn't move him most of the time. Additionally, Mu'er always kept his calm, making him a bad target for Cai'er's pranks. Therefore, Cai'er stopped going after Mu'er and shifted her attention to Bubble. Bubble was a rascal and doesn't want to surrender easily. He was a perfect target for Cai'er's antics.

However, this doesn't mean that their relationship wasn't good. In fact, they were quite harmonious, Cai'er liked playing with Bubble while Bubble also liked being chased around by Cai'er.

At this time, Lizzy looked at the pond and said, “Big Brother Hai, will you really trust Bubble in refining this pool? This thing is a treasure, much more valuable than the God-ranked magic beast core. The core upgraded the Space by one level while this lotus actually upgraded it by five. If Bubble fails in refining it, then wouldn't it be a pity?”

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “There's nothing to pity about. Refining might be the only way of evolving this thing. Forget it, there's no point in worrying about something we don't have any hold of. We'll just have Bubble be extremely careful in doing it. With his control over water, I don't think that there would be any issues.”

Lizzy didn't say anything else. This Tai Ji Pond and the lotus flower were really too strange. Even Zhao Hai didn't know how this thing came about. They can only try what they could to upgrade it. In any case, they had acquired a new weapon for the future.

At this time, Cai'er suddenly ran over to Zhao Hai and said,

“Young Master, Grandpa Kun came and was looking for you. It looks like an urgent matter.”

Zhao Hai nodded as his figure vanished and reappeared inside Kun’s office. When he saw Zhao Hai, Kun calmed his worried expression before he said, “Little Hai, something very important just happened.”

Zhao Hai replied, “Grandpa Kun, tell me.”

Kun sighed and said, “Yesterday, the Ocean Waves Dynasty suddenly announced that they would be handing their throne over to the Radiant Church. Their nation is now renamed to the Radiant Empire. It declared to be a nation that devotes itself to the worship of the Radiant God. At the same time, the Dragon Race suddenly attacked the Lyon Empire. The Lyon Empire’s famous cavalry suddenly rebelled and in just one day, the Lyon Empire fell. The Dragon Race changed the nation’s name to Saint Dragon Empire. They also announced their alliance with the Radiant Empire. At this point, the Dragons has complete control of the Lyon Empire while the Radiant Church has complete control of the Ocean Waves Dynasty.”

Chapter 649 – The Dragons Must Be Eliminated

Zhao Hai stared blankly at Kun. Due to the shock, his mind has been unable to process the information for a short time. Zhao Hai felt that something just exploded inside his head, obliterating every thought that he had at the moment.

The news was just too sudden. After dealing with the matters of the Fishman Race, Zhao Hai was planning to wipe out the Dragons, eliminating one of the hands of the Divine Race. After that, he would slowly start to move against the Radiant Church.

However, he didn't expect that the Radiant Church and the Dragon Race would make this sudden move. Moreover, they had taken two empires simultaneously. Although the Ocean Waves Dynasty was the fifth largest Empire and was quite small, it was known that their navy was quite invincible. Their strong navy was due to their lands being surrounded by the sea from three sides, which also made their naval transport very good.

At this point, Zhao Hai didn't care much about sea warfare. He has the Fishman Race as allies. Even if the Ocean Wave Dynasty's navy was known to be invincible, it was only in comparison to other Human powers. The Dynasty's navy would have no chance in facing the Fishman Race at sea.

On the other hand, the Lyon Empire was a whole different story. The Lyon Empire was known as the second most powerful nation in the Continent. Their strength was formidable and because they were close to the Accra Mountains, they can gather wild beasts en masse then have those beasts become mounts to their Magic beast Cavalry.

A Cavalry that was made up of wild magic beasts was always more formidable than one with magic beasts that were bred. Therefore, the Lyon Empire's Magic Beast Cavalry was well

renowned in the entire continent for its strength. In fact, this mighty nation was brought to its knees by their own Magic Beast Cavalry.

Zhao Hai slowly calmed himself down as he pondered on the consequences that were brought up by this development. He planned to eliminate the Dragons because they were legends that lived in the Accra Mountain. If Zhao Hai were to kill them, then nobody would make a fuss.

But this time, the Dragons had actually taken control of Lyon Empire. This meant that if Zhao Hai were to deal with the Dragons, he would have to deal with the Lyon Empire first.

Zhao Hai didn't believe that the Lyon Empire fell because of the Magic Beast Cavalry rebellion and the attack of the Dragons. Capturing an Empire wasn't that easy.

The smooth takeover of the Dragons was surely aided by the nobles of the Lyon Empire. In other words, the Dragons and the Radiant Church were already controlling the Empire long time ago, they just decided to reveal it at this time.

This was troublesome. If Zhao Hai wanted to deal with the Dragons, then he would have to wage war against the Lyon Empire. More importantly, Zhao Hai had thought about the reason why the Radiant Church and the Dragons decided to make this move. What did this mean? It might be because the Divine Race was close to attacking, therefore, the Radiant Church and the Dragon Clan controlled those two empires, allowing the Divine Race to have an initial footing in the continent.

Seeing that Zhao Hai hasn't spoken for quite some time, Kun looked at him and said, "At this moment, the Ocean Waves Dynasty and the Lyon Empire are gone. Meanwhile, the Buddha Empire was in the midst of an attack from those two new empires. Now that the Dragons have shown themselves, the other Empires in the continent have become flustered. This was due to the title of

invincibility that the Dragons have held all this time. This development caused huge waves in the other Empires. At the same time, their alliance with the Radiant Church boosted the church's influence by a huge margin.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned to Kun and said, “What is the Rosen Empire's response? How are they prepared to deal with this matter?”

Kun forced a smile and said, “What else can they do? Even if they don't want to recognize the Dragon Race's sovereignty to the Lyon Empire, they also don't want to offend the Dragons. After all, the Dragons have great reputation. Also, whether they are young or fully grown, all Dragons are capable of flight. In this case, the Rosen Empire had no choice but to recognize the existence of the Saint Dragon Empire and the Radiant Empire.”

Zhao Hai slammed his hand on the table, smashing it in the process. Then he talked through clenched teeth, “Radiant Church, Dragon Clan, I will not let you off easily.”

Kun gave out a sigh and said, “What do we do? I suspect that this is the prelude to the Divine Race's invasion. If this is the case, then great troubles have come our way.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “I have the same suspicion as well. The main thing we have to do is to destroy the Dragons first before the Divine Race arrive. Otherwise, the Dragons will provide the Divine Race with stable footing with their existing reputation. Moreover, the joint attack on the Buddha Empire is also very dangerous.”

Kun nodded, “It seems like the Divine Race will attack at any time. While they still haven't come, we need to destroy the Dragons. Then we will deal with the Radiant Church later on.”

Zhao Hai nodded, “But it's not time to act yet, wait for more news while I go and ask the Mermaid Queen for help in dealing with the Ocean Wave Dynasty's navy. We need to stop them from

supporting the Lyon Empire. After that, we'll deal with the Dragons."

Kun nodded, then Zhao Hai turned his hand and withdrew a bottle. The bottle held the Messenger Fish. Zhao Hai handed the bottle over to Kun and taught him how to use it. Then he produced two more bottles and gave it to Kun, having him hand it over to Blockhead and Rockhead later.

Kun was surprised when he saw the three Messenger Fishes. He didn't think that this world would have such a thing, but he was still very happy. With these things, communication wouldn't be a problem anymore.

Kun and the others already have their own Space Bags, so Zhao Hai didn't hand them more and just told Kun that the bottles can be placed inside the bags. For this reason, Zhao Hai had made Bubble pay attention. If someone sends a message while the Messenger Fish was in his bag, then Bubble would go and inform Zhao Hai through the Space. Unless it was an important matter, Zhao Hai would keep his Messenger Fish inside his Space Bag.

After handing the fishes over to Kun, Zhao Hai immediately went to Iron Mountain Fort. Not only did he give a Messenger Fish to Green, he also distributed some Messenger Fishes to the stewards of every village as well as to some people with status in the Black Wasteland. The reason why Zhao Hai decided to send the fishes right now was because their numbers had already reached a high enough number.

The Messenger Fishes weren't very large. This was because Zhao Hai wanted them to be more convenient to use outside, so he had Cai'er further reduce their size. At this point, the Messenger Fishes were about two pinky joints big.

Moreover, after the level ups of the Space, the Messenger Fishes can now survive in any type of water and were very efficient in digesting food.

After dealing with the matters in Iron Mountain Fort, Zhao Hai then went to the Dwarves. He wanted to give Billy some Messenger fishes before telling him about the Dragon Race and the Radiant Church's movement.

Zhao Hai didn't care so much this time as he appeared directly inside his warehouse in Dwarf Mountain. When he came out, the Dwarves outside the warehouse were very shocked, but it quickly turned to joy as they sent word to Billy. Zhao Hai didn't dally and directly headed towards Billy's office.

Billy was currently worried about the Dragons as well as the Radiant Church. The sudden move of the two surely gave them a huge blow, completely derailing the plans that they had thought up before. They were planning to slowly build their strength up until the fight with the Divine Race came. But now, it seems like it would be impossible due to the recent move of the Radiant Church and the Dragon Race.

The Radiant Church had some relations with the Divine Realm, and it was certain that they also knew about the Dwarves' participation in the last Great War. Therefore, it was impossible for the Radiant Church to just let the Dwarves off this time. It was for certain that the Dwarves would get affected with the recent development.

While he was ruminating on his thoughts, word suddenly came, informing him of Zhao Hai's arrival. This made Billy glad, he needed Zhao Hai to talk about this matter. And Zhao Hai's arrival was too timely.

Just as Billy was about to meet Zhao Hai, Zhao Hai had come inside Billy's office. Seeing his visitor, Billy couldn't help but smile and said, "Little Hai, good, you came. Come, sit down."

Zhao Hai nodded, and he sat opposite Billy before he said, "Patriarch, you should've known about the recent move of the Dragon Clan and the Radiant Church. How is everything going?"

Did the Dragons come in contact with you?”

Billy shook his head and said, “Not yet. Their move was very sudden this time, so they might not have the time to deal with us. How about you, what do you think we should do now?”

Zhao Hai nodded and then said, “You don’t have to worry too much, just do what you’ve been doing. However, you should be alert and be ready to fight. I think that the Radiant Church and the Dragon Clan not going after you meant that they had some other matters to attend to. However, you should still be careful.”

Billy nodded then he looked at Zhao Hai and said, “What about the Dragon Race and the Radiant Church, will you just be watching from the sidelines?”

Zhao Hai sneered, “They think that they had everything. It seems like I need to use my real strength. I must destroy the entire Dragon Race, after all, keeping them for long will just lead to more disaster!”

Billy couldn’t help but stare upon hearing Zhao Hai, then with great enthusiasm, he said, “Do you really want to eliminate the Dragons? Then count us in, we Dwarves are never afraid to fight.”

Zhao Hai looked at Billy and then smiled faintly “You don’t need to participate at this time. However, I do have something that needs your help. Sign this thing, having the mark of the Dwarf Race would suffice.” Then Zhao Hai got a beast skin scroll and handed it over to Billy.

Billy looked at the scroll and then read the contents. He couldn’t help but stare at it for quite some time before he nodded and said, “Alright, then I shall give our mark. I think it would be better to take this out a few days after the Dragon Race’s matter. At the same time, I shall also send word to the Elves. I believe they just won’t stay quiet this time. I just can’t understand why it would take them so long to respond.”

Chapter 650 – Seeing Their Reaction

Zhao Hai was going in good graces with the Elves with him wanting to repair their Divine Artifact. But how about them? After waiting for a long time for their reply, they were still quite silent about the matter. This made Zhao Hai speechless.

However, Zhao Hai would still want to have a proper response from the Elven Race. Therefore, he nodded and said, “Alright, then we’ll wait for the Elves’ response while I head to the Beastman Prairie. I’ll also have the Beast King sign this scroll, the same with the Fishman Race. As soon as the Elves send word, then use this to inform me.” Then Zhao Hai took out a Messenger Fish and gave to Billy.

Billy looked curiously at the fishes, he had never heard of such a thing before. He continued to look at the swimming fish inside the bottles, then he turned to Zhao Hai and said, “This thing can directly speak to you?”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “Right, but not just me. It can also make you speak with other people. I don’t have a lot of Messenger Fishes, but here’s ten. You can give them to your people so that you can more conveniently communicate with them.” Then he took out ten more bottles and handed them over to Billy, who received it with great happiness.

Zhao Hai also discussed some things with Billy. They weren’t something important, he just told Billy to not make any other moves and just keep doing what they were originally doing. However, he also made them get more alert to their surroundings. After that, Zhao Hai left the Dwarf Mountain and headed to the Beastman Prairie.

Zhao Hai went directly to the Beast King Palace. After Zhao Hai left, the people in the Palace were already instructed by the Beast King, Zhao Hai wouldn’t need to wait for approval in visiting the

Palace, just have him enter immediately. However, Zhao Hai didn't want to neglect standard procedure. So he went to the reception first before he was immediately escorted into the palace.

The Beast King didn't hear much news from the continent. After all, the Prairie was too remote for information to quickly come through. Therefore, the Beast King was very surprised by Zhao Hai's sudden appearance. However, he still greeted Zhao Hai and sat with him in the living room.

After having sat down, the Beast King looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Why did you come? Did something happen?"

Zhao Hai nodded, then he sighed, "Something significant just happened. Yesterday, the Ocean Waves Dynasty suddenly announced that they would be handing the throne over to the Radiant Church. Now, the Dynasty no longer exists and was replaced by the Radiant Church. It is now called Radiant Empire and is fully controlled by the Radiant Church's officials. At the same time, the Dragons suddenly came out of Accra Mountain and extinguished the Lyon Imperial Clan. After that, they founded the Saint Dragon Empire and had formed an alliance with the Radiant Church."

The Beast King stared for a moment before his expression changed. He immediately understood what this meant. As if by habit, he stood up and walked back and forth two times before he turned his head to Zhao Hai and said, "The Dragons must be destroyed. Their name is too famous that it instills fear to the people. If this continues, we wouldn't be able to fight."

Zhao Hai stared at the Beast King, he didn't expect him to understand the core of the matter. Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Right, I was planning to do exactly just that. I only came here to inform you of this matter while also reminding you to be alert. The Radiant Church might come and deal with you. Now that they have the help of the Dragons, they can come and attack you at any moment. Therefore, you must strengthen your defenses."

The Beast King nodded and then he looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Do you want us to dispatch some troops to deal with the Dragons?”

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “No need, I can deal with them myself. However, I need your help to sign this.” Then he handed the beast skin scroll over.

The Beast King read the scroll before marking it with the brand of the Beastmen. There’s nothing special in this scroll, it just mentioned the relationship between the Radiant Church and the Divine Race. It also contained the story regarding the Divine Race as well as the Demon Realm. This was something that Zhao Hai planned to show the Emperors of the nations as well as the Patriarchs of various Great Clans. He planned to have the signatures of the Beastmen, the Dwarves, the Fishmen, and the Elves before showing this scroll to the others. They needed to understand that they were currently facing the same enemy!

The Beast King approved of Zhao Hai’s procedure. He’s a King therefore he knew that since the Radiant Church and the Dragons have begun, it was also time for Zhao Hai to make his move. Therefore, Zhao Hai prepared this scroll ahead of time so that when he goes to the Humans, they would immediately unite against the great tribulation that was coming.

After the Beast King signed the scroll, Zhao Hai immediately took out a Messenger Fish bottle and handed it over to the Beast King while explaining its function. Then he took out 10 more bottles for the Beast King to use. This made the King very happy. Although the Beastmen had hawks for communication, they still fell quite short compared to the Messenger Fish.

After handling the matters of the Beastmen, Zhao Hai immediately returned to the Space. Laura and the others were also waiting for him inside. To be honest, they were still shaken dizzy by the news that they didn’t know what to do.

Seeing that Zhao Hai had come back, Laura and the others immediately went to him and said, “Brother Hai, what do we do now? Will we go and extinguish the Dragons?”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “That’s the only thing we could do in order to keep the damage at the minimum. Their bodies are too tough while they have huge strength. They shouldn’t have appeared in the continent, but they had actually sided themselves with the Divine Race. In the Fishman records, these Dragons had become the vanguard of the Divine Race’s war. One could say that the Dragons would do the brunt of the work while the God would move once in a while. It was only because of the Divine Artifacts injuring the God that the war had ended. With this information, it would be impossible for us to just let the Dragons roam free while waiting for the attack from the Divine Race.”

Laura nodded, she also knew that in the previous war, the Divine Race had only sent one person to do the job. The main force of the combat came into the hands of the Dragons and their Lesser Dragon subordinates along with some rebels from the Ark Continent’s side. The moves that the Divine Race God had done was actually quite a few. Therefore, Zhao Hai’s plan to eliminate the Dragons was quite understandable.

After she gave a nod, Laura asked, “So when do we begin?” At this point, Laura was very confident. Zhao Hai had a lot of 9th rank undead, several millions of them. With this number of 9th ranks, even if the Dragons were formidable, they still couldn’t stand a chance against Zhao Hai’s force.

Zhao Hai thought for a moment and said, “Let’s not be too quick about this. Let’s have the Dragons savor their victory for a few days. We’ll wait after we get the Elves’ signature before beginning. Hmph. The Dragon Clan and the Radiant Church had just obtained their countries, so they still need to stabilize their situation. We still have time.”

Laura nodded. Although the Dragon Race and the Radiant

Church didn't take too much work in usurping the two nations since they had the support of the nobles, the countries still had a massive amount of commoners that needed to be appeased. Although the countries haven't experience war this time, they were still susceptible for rebellion. It will still take quite some time before they fully stabilize their situation.

If other forces were to suddenly extinguish the Lyon Empire, then the Rosen Empire and the Buddha Empire would certainly dispatch their army. And even if they couldn't defeat them, at the very least they could still get some profits off of them. However, since the new rulers of the Lyon Empire were Dragons, the Buddha and Rosen Empires have chosen to refrain from sending troops and instead just recognize the Dragons' sovereignty over the Empire.

This was also the reason why Zhao Hai chose to eliminate the Dragons!

The reputation of the Dragons in the continent was just too big. They were basically synonymous with invincibility, every race were afraid of them. This reputation was exactly what was left of their conquest in helping the Divine Race. The Human records have been changed severely that the strength of the Dragons was the only one that was left written down.

Zhao Hai saw this as something that the Radiant Church had done. They had changed the history of the Humans while leaving behind the legend of the Dragon Race. This was to control the mindset of the future generations whenever they decide to deal with the legendary beings in Accra Mountain.

All of this caused Zhao Hai to think about extinguishing the Dragon Race. First was to avoid further disaster, second, to break an arm of the Divine Race, and third, to let people understand that Dragons aren't invincible.

Naturally, if Zhao Hai didn't exist, then the Dragons would surely be close to being invincible. After all, in addition to their

innate strengths, their bodies were quite tough as well. Most importantly, they were capable of flight. This was something that the continent would deem as a nightmare.

But unfortunately for them, Zhao Hai had appeared in the continent. Even if the Dragons were quite close to being invincible, Zhao Hai would still make sure to break their reputation.

Although he had decided on his action, Zhao Hai was still carefully calculating his moves. He didn't want something to suddenly happen and undermine his plans.

After carefully thinking about everything, Zhao Hai started to feel relieved. In fact, Zhao Hai also understood that even if the Divine Race would make a sudden move, he could still get all of the people in the continent to transfer to his Space. In addition to the main world, Zhao Hai also had an additional 20 backgrounds to live in. More importantly, security wasn't a problem while inside the Space.

It was because of this assurance that Zhao Hai dared to go against the Divine Race. As long as he had the Space, Zhao Hai believed that he would be able to defeat them.

After resting for one day, Zhao Hai said his farewells to Luo Ying before riding the blade scale whale and heading towards Mermaid Island. Zhao Hai didn't use his Space to go there since he wanted to use this time to wait for the response from the Elves. At the same time, he also wanted to know how the Fishmen respond after hearing the recent news.

Chapter 651 – Startling the Mermaid Queen

Zhao Hai wasn't worried about the Beastmen and the Dwarves. He had fixed their Divine Artifact, making them grateful to him. Because of this, Zhao Hai told them his plans as soon as he can.

However, Zhao Hai was still in deep suspicion towards the Elves. He didn't know if this was really their nature, or there was a hidden plot happening that made them delay the matter. Because of this, Zhao Hai plans to wait for their reaction. Zhao Hai wasn't afraid that the Elves would tell the Dragons about his inquiries, after all, he was already unmatched in the whole of Ark Continent.

As for the Fishmen, Zhao Hai didn't worry about them at all. The Fishmen had great enmity with the Divine Race, which also transferred to the Dragon Clan and the Radiant Church. Zhao Hai was extremely comfortable with them being in his side.

However, Zhao Hai also knew how careful the Fishmen were. Otherwise, they wouldn't have founded the Sea God's Merchant Union in order to get news from the continent. And it was for certain that the Mermaids had already received the news about the Radiant Church and the Dragons. Zhao Hai wanted to see their response upon receiving this information.

One must know that for these big races, there was no enmity that can't be solved. Anything can happen in the name of benefit. If the Fishmen really did think that the Divine Race was powerful, then they may stop their alliance with Zhao Hai.

The Beastmen and the Dwarves have their own Divine Artifacts, so they already knew that their races were also hostile to the Radiant Church's patrons. This made it impossible for them to side with the Radiant Church for benefit. Therefore, they sided with Zhao Hai to deal with the Radiant Church.

On the other hand, the Fishmen might not know about the relationship between their Sea God and the Radiant Church in the

Divine Realm. This was due to them not being in the records of the Dwarves during the past great war. Therefore, Zhao Hai had some doubts about their actions and wanted to see how they would respond when faced with the current situation.

Zhao Hai proceeded onward, he didn't rush in the daytime and he rested properly during the night. At the same time, he was also paying attention to the situation on the continent through the Space. Now that Kun and the others were in possession of the Messenger Fishes, Zhao Hai was able to have a dialog with them in the past few days.

What Zhao Hai didn't expect was the fact that his popularity among the Fishmen had become quite high. In the eyes of the Fishmen, the conclusion of their recent rebellion was only reached due to Zhao Hai's actions. So no matter which Fishman Tribe he meets, all of them were extremely hospitable towards Zhao Hai. They were quite polite and even brought him some gifts. At the same time, some of them even agreed to having a business cooperation with the Buda Clan.

Although the Fishman Race were mostly self-sufficient, they still want to have other things. Of course, Zhao Hai didn't decline these offerings. Almost every Fishman tribe can offer him with unique things to trade for, this made Zhao Hai very glad when forming his business partnerships.

The Fishmen liked Human bottles, ironworks, wooden furnitures, cotton fabrics, and many more. Although things in the sea might get reduced by trading with Zhao Hai, it was still fine since Zhao Hai only needed common marine products. For the Fishmen, these things can basically be seen everywhere, there was no need for them to exert so much effort in acquiring them.

Zhao Hai certainly didn't think that he would have this good of a reception among the Fishmen. One must know that Dark Mages in the continent never did have a good reputation. Those who were calm in front of Zhao Hai were only those who had come in contact

with him face to face. As for the other people, all of them would be terrified by the mere mention of Zhao Hai's name. After all, this was a person that can turn several hundred thousand people into undead.

Three days later, Zhao Hai had finally arrived at Mermaid Island's region. But when he arrived, he was actually stopped by a group of Swordfish tribesmen, it seems like they weren't able to recognize Zhao Hai. However, Zhao Hai can also see that they didn't come with unfavorable intention. So he went out of the Blade Scale Whale and gave a slight bow before saying, "Might I know why I am being blocked?" The leader of the Swordfish group immediately gave a salute to Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, the Queen has something important to discuss with you. We ask mister to please head towards Mermaid Island."

When he heard this, Zhao Hai nodded and then said, "Can I know why Her Majesty is looking for me?" Naturally, Zhao Hai knew why the Queen was looking for her, he was just asking for formality.

The Swordfish tribesman shook his head and said, "I'll be unfair to mister, but I really don't know. Her Majesty didn't tell us, she just gave instructions to invite you over to the island."

Zhao Hai nodded, "Alright, then I'll be troubling you to lead me there." The Swordfishes immediately turned their mounts around and swam towards mermaid Island. Behind them, Zhao Hai urged the Blade Scale Whale to follow.

The Blade Scale Whale wasn't known for its speed, however, Zhao Hai's Blade Scale Whale was a 9th rank undead. So how could it be any slower? It was able to comfortably keep up with the speed of the Swordfish group.

This startled the people from the Swordfish tribe. They were famed for their speed, so how could Zhao Hai's whale be able to keep up with their speed, this was something unexpected.

After advancing for two days, Zhao Hai had finally arrived at Mermaid Island. There were no changes in the island, the Whales were still in charge of guarding it. When they reached the island, the Swordfishes left Zhao Hai and handed the task of leading Zhao Hai over to the Whales.

After entering the island, Zhao Hai stepped on the back of the turtles as he went through the pillars and arriving in front of the Mermaid Palace.

When he arrived at the Palace, Zhao Hai can already see Lola waiting for him. When she saw that Zhao Hai had come, Lola stepped forward and greeted him, “Mister, please come with me. Her Majesty is already waiting for you.” Zhao Hai nodded and then followed Lola towards the inner hall.

The Queen was already in her throne when Zhao Hai came in. When she saw Zhao Hai, she couldn't help but move. Her tail vanished and turned into feet, at the same time, her throne had turned into an ordinary chair.

The Queen stood up and said, “Mister, have a seat.”

Zhao Hai gave a bow and replied, “Thank you, Your Majesty.” Then the group saw inside the hall.

The Queen opened her mouth first “Mister, you've helped us greatly this time. The rebellion wouldn't have ended this soon if not for your help.” Then she gave Zhao Hai a bow.

Zhao Hai stood up to return the courtesy before he quickly said, “Your Majesty is too polite. It's just a little effort, it's not worth mentioning.”

The Queen didn't delay the matter as she looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Mister, are you aware of the recent developments in the continent?”

Zhao Hai knew that the main topic had come. He didn't hide anything from the Queen, so he nodded and said, “I do. The

Dragons and the Radiant Church made their move and controlled two big Empires of the Continent. At this time, they should be stabilizing their rule over their subjects.”

The Queen didn't expect Zhao Hai to already be aware of the news. One should know that as soon as the Queen heard the news, she immediately sent people to look for Zhao Hai. He should be unaware of this news since he had always been in the sea. Zhao Hai already knowing this information gave the Queen an estimate of Zhao Hai's resources.

So she just nodded and said, “Right, its that. May I know what Mister thinks? Do we need to make a move?”

When he head the Queen, Zhao Hai's worries had completely vanished. He smiled faintly and said, “Your Majesty doesn't need to worry much about this. I already have a plan.”

The Queen stared, she was confused at what Zhao Hai meant, “What I just wanted to know is what plans Zhao Hai has already made.”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “I also need Her Majesty's help for this plan. I'm prepared to deal with the Dragons, and I want Your Majesty to keep the Ocean Waves Dynasty away from supporting the Lyon Empire. As for the other things, leave everything to me.”

The Queen thought for a moment before she nodded and said, “This isn't difficult matter. However, is Mister confident with dealing with the Dragons? They're title of invincibility isn't without proof.

Zhao Hai just smiled faintly and said, “Your Majesty can rest assured, I have complete confidence in my strength. The reason why I still haven't attacked them was because I needed to discuss the matter of the Ocean Waves Dynasty with Your Majesty. At the same time, I am also waiting for the response from the Elven Race. As long as information arrives, then I will immediately head to the

Elven Forest. And after that, I will then go and deal with the Dragon Race.”

The Queen stared for a moment before she nodded, “Alright, then we shall wait for mister’s word. When the time comes, we shall fully coordinate with you.”

Zhao Hai gave a nod and said, “I’ll have to thank Your Majesty. Right, I also need Your Majesty to sign this.” Then he took out the beast skin scroll and handed it over to the Queen.

When the Queen received the scroll and saw the marks of the Beastmen and the Dwarves, she didn’t hesitate and also marked the scroll with the Fishman Race’s unique mark.

Then Zhao Hai took out a bottle of Messenger Fish and gave it to the Queen, “Your Highness, this is a Messenger Fish that I have specially bred. As long as Your Majesty has this fish, you can speak to it directly and I shall immediately hear your message.”

The Queen received Zhao Hai’s Messenger Fish. Naturally, she was very familiar regarding these creatures. However, she didn’t think that Zhao Hai would also have them. Moreover, it seems like Zhao Hai’s breed was more advanced. This startled the Queen, the Mermaid Race had been religiously doing research on marine life. Because of this, they had more understanding with regards to beings of the sea than anyone in this world. The mere fact that Zhao Hai was able to produce a more advanced Messenger Fish made the Queen freeze from shock.

Chapter 652 – Buddha Empire

The Queen looked at Zhao Hai, she was very clear about what this change in the Messenger Fish represented. It was not just a mutation, this was an entire evolution of the Messenger Fish, making it more advanced and giving it much better function.

The Messenger Fish was a small and common marine beast. However, this small magic beast has a unique ability. The difficulty of making such a beast evolve several times more than evolving any common magic beast.

To put it bluntly, even if the Fishmen were people, their differences compared to the marine beasts weren't that huge. The reason why the Mermaid Clan was researching marine magic beasts was for them to be able to develop a method to make the Mermaids or the other Fishmen more perfect people.

This might sound simple, but once one does this for quite some time, they will discover how difficult it actually was. Each type of magic beasts might have their own unique characteristics, but the Fishmen also had their own unique properties. Gathering these strong points and matching them was easier said than done.

It wasn't only the task of gathering strong points that was difficult. Even improving magic beasts was a difficult matter all on its own. One might see something great in a magic beast, however, improving them might result in a futile effort. Even if it succeeds, there are still more issues along the road, it was still far from being called successful.

The Mermaids were aware of these difficulties since it takes into account genetics as well as other advanced matters. However, it was impossible for them to use these matters in order to evolve magic beasts.

On the other hand, the Space can digitize beings, making it very easy for it to upgrade these beings. It was just like when one plays a

game and finds a skill book that they can learn in a matter of minutes. However, reality was just too far away from this.

The Queen wasn't aware of the existence of the Space, so when she saw Zhao Hai's Messenger Fish, she couldn't help but express her shock.

Billy and the Beast King didn't understand the Fishmen and the significance of the Messenger Fish. Therefore, even if they felt strange, they weren't startled like the Mermaid Queen.

The thought of the Messenger Fishes caused the Mermaid Queen to think about Zhao Hai's unusual undead creatures. Although Zhao Hai had reduced their strength, they were still quite extraordinary in the eyes of the Queen. Large-scale summoning as well as impressive fighting prowess, all of these made the Queen extremely curious towards Zhao Hai.

The Queen knew that Zhao Hai had a lot of good things based on what she had heard from the Continent. It seems like Zhao Hai's unique things aren't only limited to the Messenger Fishes. This made the Queen think that Zhao Hai might have discovered a way to improve a being's biology.

Zhao Hai was confused at the Queen's surprised expression. Was it because of the Messenger Fish? Aren't there a lot of variant beasts in this world? So why was she especially surprised this time?'

Zhao Hai looked at the Queen and asked, "Your Majesty, is there something wrong?"

The Queen looked deeply into Zhao Hai without saying anything. Then she handed the Messenger Fish over to Lola before turning her head back to Zhao Hai and said, "There's no problem. Once Mister decides to act, don't hesitate to let us know."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Then I shall thank Your Majesty in advance. I shall say my farewells first, I'll be leaving for the

continent tomorrow to continue with my plans.”

The Queen nodded, “Alright. Mister can rest assured, this is an important matter to every race. So my Fishman Race would surely give you our full cooperation.”

Then Zhao Hai stood up and gave the Queen a salute before turning around to leave. Once Zhao Hai was out of sight, Lola immediately turned to the Queen and said, “Your Majesty, haven’t we been looking for a way to make the Mermaid Clan stronger? If Mister Zhao Hai can improve the Messenger Fish, then he surely has the means to help us. Why didn’t you tell him about this matter earlier?”

The Queen sighed and then said, “Now is not the time to say it. Mister Zhao Hai has been busy with dealing with our own matters, but we still haven’t contributed to Mister Zhao Hai’s cause even if we are allies in dealing with the Divine Race. But I’m sure that this method is Mister Zhao Hai’s biggest secret. If we want to get this method at his time, the only thing we could do would be to threaten Mister. However, we naturally can’t do it. So this matter can only be postponed to the future.”

Lola nodded, then the Queen sighed once again before she said, “Our Mermaid Race can be seen to as quite a perfect race in the continent. We can survive in the sea as well as on land, as long as there is a body of water nearby. We also have good control over water as well as being able to use various water element magic. At the same time, our combat capabilities are also quite formidable, not very different compared to any ordinary warrior. Our only downside compared to the other races is the fact that we Mermaids have the least members in the Divine Realm. Perhaps this is the drawback for our Mermaid Race.”

Lola sighed as well, she didn’t know what to say. The Mermaids were indeed unique, they had long lives, great strength, good population, and were generally 9th ranks at maturity. However, it was close to impossible for them to become God-ranked experts.

All previous Mermaid Queens were aware of this point and worried about it for a long time. They sought for a solution all this time but was unable to actually succeed.

But seeing Zhao Hai's messenger fish made the current Queen see hope. However, just like what the Queen said, they hadn't done much for Zhao Hai yet. If they were to open this matter up to Zhao Hai, then he might develop some misunderstandings. And misunderstandings were something that they didn't need at this moment in time.

Zhao Hai was currently listening to Lola and the Queen's conversation while inside the Space. He didn't think that his messenger fish would evoke this reaction from both the Queen and Lola. No wonder the Queen had a strange expression earlier.

However, it would not be difficult for Zhao Hai to make the Mermaids God-ranked experts. Now that the the Space had reached level 65, plants that would allow the creation of God-rank potions can now be planted in the farm. As soon as the plants become ready, then Zhao Hao would surely take some potions out. After all, their enemy this time was the Divine Race who had a lot of God-ranked experts in their fold. Only then can the Ark Continent truly resist the Divine Race.

Zhao Hai took a deep breath, then he changed the monitor towards the Buddha Empire's Royal Palace. He wanted to see the response from the Buddha Empire's side.

The Buddha Emperor surely wasn't a fool. He knew the implications of the Radiant Church and the Dragons being in control of the Ocean Waves Dynasty and the Lyon Empire, respectively. He knew what they would be facing, and he was currently looking for the key to resisting both the Radiant Church and the Dragon Race.

Zhao Hai carefully looked at the Buddha Empire's situation for a few days. The Buddha Emperor was certainly not a fool, his

response was exactly what Zhao Hai expected. The Empire had sent some envoys towards the Rosen Empire, in hopes of establishing an alliance against the Saint Dragon Empire.

The Buddha Empire's worries were completely justified. In the past, the Buddha Empire held a stronger army compared to the Ocean Waves Dynasty, but they were still lacking when it came to naval power. On the other hand, the Lyon and Buddha Empire was separated by the Accra Mountain, making the Lyon Empire unable to send troops towards the Buddha Empire. Also making the Empire completely safe against the attacks from the Lyon Empire army.

However, the current situation changed everything. The Dragons have gotten control of the Lyon Empire, establishing the Saint Dragon Empire. And since the magic beasts in the Accra Mountain were subordinates of the Dragons, an avenue to attack the Buddha Empire had appeared. If they were to send a force towards the Buddha Empire, then the Saint Dragon Empire can now use the Accra Mountain as a path. When that time comes, the Buddha Empire would then be placed on its back foot.

Since they knew about this, the Buddha Empire immediately sent envoys to the Rosen Empire in order to form an alliance. The Rosen Empire was the continent's most powerful nation, so they should have no fear towards the Dragons. Being an ally to the Rosen Empire would surely make the Dragons think twice about their further actions.

While the envoys were on the way, the Buddha Empire had also entered a state of preparation. Zhao Hai's constant supply of magic beasts also gave the Buddha Empire some courage to hold on.

However, courage and confidence were two different matters. The Dragons' reputation of invincibility had placed a huge pressure on the Buddha Empire. The Emperor as well as the Great Nobles were constantly on talks as to how to deal with this matter. However, after hours and days of discussion, they still haven't

reached a good enough resolution.

Naturally, the Hurricane Family was aware of this matter as well. And since Juno had a close relationship with Billy, he also wanted to know how Zhao Hai plans to deal with this matter. Zhao Hai had not hidden the truth from him, he told the Hurricane Patriarch about his plan to completely eradicate the Dragons. At the same time, he also gave Juno a messenger fish.

It can be said that the thing that Zhao Hai was waiting for was the response from the Elves. Whether the Elves were willing to cooperate or not, Zhao Hai still needed their response in order to plan for his further actions. If the Elves agree to ally with him, then he would immediately head to the Elven Forest to repair their Divine Artifact while also discussing their matter of alliance along with having them sign his beast skin scroll.

If the Elves don't agree to dealing with the Divine Race, then Zhao Hai would not care about their word any more. He would then go and deal with the Dragons. And if the Elves were to side with the Divine Race, then Zhao Hai would have no choice but to be impolite.

Zhao Hai continued to look at the situation of the Buddha Empire. However, there wasn't any special change in the Empire. Like the previous days, they were still trying to figure out ways in order to deal with their current situation.

At this point, it was impossible for the Buddha Empire to side with the Radiant Church. They saw what just happened to the Ocean Waves Dynasty as well as the Lyon Empire, so how could they side with them? The Radiant Church was like a beast that eats people along with their bones. Sooner or later, the Buddha Empire would get swallowed up. So the Buddha Empire can only hold on for as long as they can. They couldn't make any agreements between the Dragons and the Radiant Church.

Chapter 653 – Visiting the Elves

The next day, Zhao Hai said his farewell to the Mermaid Queen before he got onboard the Haven. Zhao Hai planned to ride his ship towards the continent, this was also to give the Elves more time to send their response. After all, there wasn't anything significant that he had to do at this time.

Once word arrives from the Elves, then Zhao Hai would begin with his action. He didn't plan to tell the Rosen Emperor about any of these. Even if the Rosen Emperor was Zhao Hai's father-in-law, he was still an Emperor of a nation, making it difficult for him to keep secrets to himself. Who knows if the Radiant Church had set up some shadows in the Imperial Palace. If Zhao Hai reveals his plans to the Rosen Emperor, then he might risk having it known to the Radiant Church. When that time arrives, all of Zhao Hai's plans would be placed into trouble.

Although Zhao Hai was not anxious and was just slowly sailing towards the continent, he was still paying close attention to the developments in the continent. Through the Space, he was looking at the Calci Family while also listening for information from the Crook Family. This made Zhao Hai updated with regards to the matters of the Continent.

Rosen Empire's response was also in line with what Zhao Hai expected. Although the Rosen Empire recognized the existence of the Saint Dragon Empire, it also entered a state of war preparation. They were preparing to go against the Dragons.

On the other hand, the Aksu Empire's response was far from what Zhao Hai thought. Although they were implicated in the conflict between the Radiant Church and the Beastmen, Zhao Hai still thought that the Aksu Empire would reignite their relationship with the Church after hearing the news. But instead, they actually formed an alliance with the Rosen Empire.

This was way out of Zhao Hai's expectations to the point that he doubted them. But after observing the Aksu Empire for a few days, Zhao Hai found out that he was wrong. This time, the Aksu Empire did want to deal with the Radiant Church.

The way the Radiant Church handled the past matter caused the Aksu Empire to dislike the organization. Even if the Radiant Church conquered the four other nations, the Aksu Empire would still resist them. This wasn't only due to the current ruler, Boris, this sentiment was shared by all the Nobles of the Empire as well, not to mention the commoners.

This response from the Aksu Empire made Zhao Hai glad. For Zhao Hai, this was the best outcome that could happen. An enemy of an enemy is a friend, so even if they had a past matter, Zhao Hai would still consider them as friends as long as they plan to deal with the Radiant Church and the Dragon Race.

Two days after Zhao Hai left Mermaid Island, Billy had finally brought some news. It was said that the Elven Queen wanted to meet with Zhao Hai.

To be honest, Zhao Hai wasn't satisfied with this answer. The Elf Queen only wanted to see him and didn't express their intention to form an alliance. However, Zhao Hai would still want to see the Elf Queen. After all, this was also an opportunity to win the Elves over to his side.

Zhao Hai appeared inside the Dwarf Mountain through the Space. At this point, the Dwarves aren't startled by his sudden appearances anymore. When they saw Zhao Hai, they immediately sent people to inform Billy.

Billy also knew that Zhao Hai was coming. Therefore, he was already waiting for him. When they had sat down, Billy looked at Zhao Hai and said, "I told the Elves about the Radiant Church, this prompted them to send an answer. You should go and see the Elf Queen, it seems like they are quite hesitant."

Zhao Hai coldly snorted and said, “I don’t understand why they would hesitate now that the Divine Race are almost at the tip of our noses. I’m actually surprised. How can this race survive to the present?”

Billy can understand Zhao Hai’s complaints. To be honest, he also couldn’t understand the response from the Elves. But Billy didn’t complain, instead, he urged Zhao Hai, “Just don’t mind it. The Elves just haven’t had a conflict for many years. Moreover, their archery and swordsmanship are very well suited for the jungle. Almost nobody can defeat the Elves in forest combat.”

Zhao Hai nodded, he didn’t doubt this point. If the Elves didn’t have any special means, then they would’ve already become slaves a long time ago. One must know that Elves were the most valuable slaves for the Humans. However, there weren’t any Elven slaves that had been caught in the long time.

Billy looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Maybe the reason why the Elves aren’t willing to see you is because you are a Dark Mage. Elves hate Dark Mages. And since you are the most famous Dark Mage in the continent, it would be understandable if they don’t want to see you.”

Zhao Hai couldn’t help but smiled bitterly. The Elves were advocates of nature and respected life. And for the Elves, the act of resurrecting the dead that Dark Mages do was the most blasphemous act towards their belief. It would be strange if they were to immediately like Zhao Hai.

Moreover, the Elves were also quite famous for having more tenacity than the Dwarves. Although the Dwarves can be tenacious sometimes, they can still be accomodating. Otherwise, the Dwarves wouldn’t have done business with the Humans, and Billy wouldn’t have been Juno’s good friend.

The Elves were completely solid to their beliefs. They were people who completely disliked failure and were more strict to

themselves than to others. This was the reason why all of the things that the Elves produced were all works of art. They destroy everything that they deem embarrass them.

It was because of this that Zhao Hai couldn't help but bitterly smile. He didn't know what to say upon meeting such a race. These people seemed to be paranoid and weren't some people that would accept an outsider's words.

Billy looked at Zhao Hai and sighed, "No matter what, you still need to see the Elves, there's no other way. Take a rest here first, then I shall accompany you to the Elves first thing tomorrow. Although they dislike Dark Mages, I don't think they would go far this time."

Zhao Hai coldly snorted and said, "If they don't agree to be allies with us, then I won't care about them anymore. If the Divine Race decides to eliminate them, then I won't be lending them a hand. As long as they don't cooperate with the Radiant Church, then I will leave them be."

Billy knew that Zhao Hai was quite angry. To be honest, Billy was somewhat annoyed as well. The Radiant Church and the Dragon Race were still holding back since they were waiting for word from the Divine Race. Time was quite precious, but the Elves were actually wasting it. Zhao Hai waiting for their response was already giving them face.

Billy didn't say anything more as he arranged a room for Zhao Hai, making him rest well. When Zhao Hai got settled in their room, they immediately went to the Space and sat inside the living room.

Laura and the others looked at Zhao Hai's expression and knew that he was quite unhappy. To be honest, they were in a foul mood as well. Laura boiled a cup of tea and then placed it in front of Zhao Hai. Then with a soft voice she said, "Brother Hai, you shouldn't get angry. After all, we'll be hearing the Elves' side

tomorrow.”

Zhao Hai slowly opened his eyes, then he sighed and said, “I really want to know what is inside these Elf leaders’ heads. They had dragged such a simple thing for too long. If not for the Radiant Church and the Dragon Race making their move, i reckon that they would have dragged this matter for a longer time. What were they thinking?”

Laura forced a smile and then said, “The Elves are more closed off compared to the Beastmen and the Dwarves. Even the Fishmen had their own merchant union in order to listen to the situation of the continent. The Elves essentially had no contact with the outside world. They might come in contact with the Dwarves sometimes, but that’s it. This is the only race that had done it in the entire continent.”

Lizzy sighed, “There’s nothing strange as to why the Elves are like this. They are different from the Mermaid Race, who can just change their appearance to that of a Human, allowing them the chance to trade with the continent. The Elves simply aren’t able to do this. And whenever an Elf was spotted, people would then make them their slaves. It isn’t strange that the Elves chose to refrain from having contact with the Humans.”

Zhao Hai also sighed with a heavy heart, he was also aware of this matter. Any race would do the same if they were subjected to the same fate as the Elves.

After resting inside the Space, Billy went to look for Zhao Hai to have a meal. Zhao Hai has been very tired in the past few days. It wasn’t fatigue of the body, but it was a fatigue of the heart.

Zhao Hai’s rest in the Dwarf Mountain that night was very good. The next morning, Billy led Zhao Hai to the Elven Forest along with ten other Dwarf warriors.

The distance between the Dwarves and the Elves wasn’t short. Moreover, there was also the Accra Mountain in the middle.

However, the Dwarves have developed their own methods. After countless years of effort, they had finally made a system of underground rivers to get through Accra Mountains. This gave them the capability to pass through the mountain and come out to an area close to the Elven Forest.

This was a very large project. Although they used the underground rivers, it wasn't something that can solve everything. It was impossible for the river to deliver the Dwarves directly to the Elves. So after about 200 years of development, the Dwarves had finally made a passage that would take them quite closer to the Elves.

In order to make it more convenient to come in contact with the Elves, this route was composed of different underground rivers, allowing them to travel by boat. But even if one were to go fast, they would still need about five days before they arrive at the forest.

However, in order for the travel to become more comfortable, the Dwarves had set up some resting points all along the route. These resting points had supply of liquor and grain. All of these just to establish a good relationship with the Elven Race.

Chapter 654 – Voiceless Soundbird

The Dwarf Race's boat wasn't big, so Zhao Hai always found himself sitting together with Billy. Naturally, he had no chance to return to the Space, therefore, he can just stay in the ship and chat with Billy.

To be honest, he was quite bored these past five days. However, even if the boat was small, there was still space for him to lie down, so Zhao Hai was able to fully rest in these five days.

Five days came by quite fast, the boat was now stopped at a pier. Billy led Zhao Hai down to the pier and walked out from the big mountain. When Zhao Hai and the others came out of the mountain, they had discovered that they were already in the forest.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but marvel at the scenery outside the mountain. The scene in front of him was just so beautiful.

The thing in front of him was a rainforest, one with lush trees everywhere. There were shrubs under the trees as well as some plants that Zhao Hai was unable to recognize. Most importantly, the place was so primitive, he can't find a single artificial intervention here. It seems like it was a kingdom for plants, it was very attractive.

At this time, a sound suddenly came from the forest. Zhao Hai stopped, then he turned his head only to find a small magic beast. This small beast looked like a small monkey, but it was really small. It looked very cute, it had fluffy fur, two round ears, bright eyes and a look that would seem like it was just a toy,

This small monkey was also curiously looking at Zhao Hai and the others. There was no fear that was found in its face. Zhao Hai came to like this creature more and more as time passed by. He turned his hand and took out an apple before throwing it to the direction of the small monkey.

The beast was startled, it immediately whizzed towards the opposite tree. It lashed its tongue and showed its teeth towards Zhao Hai. However, Zhao Hai didn't move, he only looked at the small monkey and laughed. This left the monkey with a confused expression. Then when it found the red apple on the ground, he immediately disregarded Zhao Hai and the others as it slowly jumped down from the tree. It ran towards the apple and smelled it. It expressed excitement on its face before taking a nib out of the apple, and before long the whole fruit went into its belly.

Then the small monkey turned its head to Zhao Hai, zhi zhi, it sounded, it seems like it wanted more. Zhao Hai smiled faintly before throwing another apple towards the monkey. After eating a few more apples, the small monkey made a face towards Zhao Hai before it went up the tree and squatted on a large branch, then it just slept there.

Upon seeing the small monkey's action, Zhao Hai couldn't help but laugh. This little thing was too lovable. Billy and the others who were right by his side were also smiling. They saw how the monkey gave Zhao Hai a grin before going to the tree and then went to sleep, not caring about Zhao Hai anymore. This made everyone laugh.

At this time, a shadow suddenly flashed from the forest. Zhao Hai stared for a moment before he became alert. Then a green figure appeared in front of them.

Zhao Hai stared, but he didn't make any moves. He noticed that the green figure in front of him was a person, a blonde man wearing a green robe.

This person was very handsome, he had a face that would make even women jealous. He had golden blonde hair that was draped freely behind him, tied by a grass rope. In his hand was a harp, and most importantly, Zhao Hai noticed that the person's ears were longer than that of the humans. It looks quite sharp, but it didn't hinder the man's beauty.

On the other hand, this effeminate man looked at Zhao Hai's group with a stern expression. Zhao Hai knew that this person was an Elf. But he didn't speak, he knew that the first contact was Billy's task.

Billy knew about this, therefore he immediately took a step forward and bowed to the Elf, "Elf friend, hello. I am the Dwarf Race's Patriarch Billy, we came here to visit the Elf Queen."

The Elf returned the bow, and then looked at Billy and said, "I have seen Patriarch Billy, come with me, the Queen is already waiting for you." After that, he turned his head to Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai didn't delay, he also bowed to the Elf and said, "Hello, friend. I am the Buda Clan's Patriarch, Zhao Hai. I came here to pay a visit to the Elf Queen."

Zhao Hai was aware that this harp bearing man had a unique occupation. The harp in the Elf's hand wasn't only for decoration. The strings of this harp were made of special Elven material. This not only allowed the harp to play beautiful music, it also made it possible for the user to make magical arrows from it.

Most importantly, the Elves can cast a specific magic that can give additional reinforcement to their arrows, increasing their lethality. This was something that made Elves famous in the continent.

However, not all Elves can have a harp as a weapon. Those who do were their most formidable warriors.

In addition to music and arrows, the harp also had another function, and that was to produce a barrage of agic beads.

This barrage of beads was a special attack of the Elves. It wasn't like the arrow that contains penetrative force, the beads were things that can store up magic and exhibit various effects like explosion or other magics.

Using this function was very unusual. The elves would place

their harps to the ground, and then the fingers on their both hands would alternate in stroking the instrument. With each string that was plucked, a raindrop sized bead would eject from the harp that would cause a lethal blow towards the enemy.

When the Elves waged war with the Humans, these magic beads had become a nightmare to the Human army. Ten harp-bearers working together could decimate a thousand man army almost instantaneously.

But when Zhao Hai heard this, the only thing he could think about was a machine gun, a machine gun that had explosive ammunition.

The harp-bearing Elf returned Zhao Hai's bow and said, "We welcome the arrival of Patriarch Zhao Hai. Her Majesty is already waiting for all of you. Please come with me." Then he turned around and led Zhao Hai's group through the forest.

During the journey, Zhao Hai was fully convinced that the Elves were invincible in this forest, they were indeed formidable. Animals in the forest, even the most efficient predators, would still produce a sound every time they make a move. On the other hand, the Elves were completely silent. It seems like they had melded themselves to the forest, it was very astonishing.

The group ran along with the Elf as they progressed through the forest. Then all of a sudden, the Elf stopped, he played a gentle note on his harp which transformed into an beautiful melody. Then the group suddenly heard a cheerful cry from atop the tree. While Zhao Hai was still in a daze, several shadows suddenly fell down in front of them.

Zhao Hai and the others fixed their vision towards the shadows and what they saw were a group of big birds. These birds looked like cranes, but their claws were something that should belong to a hawk. Zhao Hai hadn't seen a magic beast like this before. Moreover, these birds also have big builds, it wouldn't be a

problem for them to have a person sitting in their back.

After playing his harp, the Elf turned to Zhao Hai and the others and said, “Patriarch Billy, Patriarch Zhao Hai, please ride these Voiceless Soundbirds. Our Tree of Life is quite far from here.”

Then the Elf rode on the back of a Voiceless Soundbird. After seeing the Elf, Zhao Hai and the others didn’t delay and also rode on the backs of the other birds. Then the harp-bearer played another tune before the birds whipped their wings and flew off into the sky.

Zhao Hai already has experience with flying due to his Blood Hawk, so he didn’t feel anything in this ride. On the other hand, Billy and the others were still inexperienced in air travel. This made each and every one of their faces quite pale.

While the Elf lead the group of Voiceless Soundbirds across the forest, Zhao Hai examined the birds as he sat on the back of one of them. These birds had a mouth that was longer than the average bird’s, but not longer than a crane. Their claws were similar to those of the hawks. The Birds were two meters high and they had wings of five meters each. Moreover, even if they were carrying a person on their backs, their flight was still quite smooth, it was clear that these birds were also quite strong.

Most importantly, the cries of these birds were very clear, it was very serene and was like a melody in itself, very interesting to listen to. It might be possible that the name of Voiceless Songbird came from this.

But what made Zhao Hai feel strange was the fact that he hasn’t heard of a Voiceless Songbird in the continent before .Why was this?

One must say that the Elves had waged multiple wars with the Humans. If these birds were used by the Elves at those times, then they should’ve already been written in Human records. And even if the Radiant Church had modified the history, they wouldn’t have

an incentive to eliminate the mention of these birds. Were these birds a recently tamed beast by the Elves?

In truth, Zhao Hai had guessed right. These Voiceless Soundbirds were indeed recent additions to the Elven Race. These Voiceless Soundbirds were extremely rare in the past, and they were also quite vigilant. Only Elves with affinity to these birds were able to tame them, otherwise they wouldn't come in contact with an Elf. Also, the Voiceless Songbirds weren't as big as they were now.

However, just more than 300 years ago, a nest of Voiceless Soundbirds suddenly fell down from the Tree of Life. This nest of eggs soon hatched and bore large Voiceless Soundbirds, two meters in height. Most importantly, these Voiceless Soundbirds weren't vigilant towards the Elves and were even the ones to go and come in contact with them. And slowly, as time went by, these Voiceless Soundbirds had become the mounts of the Elves.

Chapter 655 – Elf Queen

After studying the Voiceless Soundbird for a while, Zhao Hai found himself to have nothing else to study. He shifted his gaze towards the scenery of the Elven Forest.

Beautiful, it was too beautiful. If you gaze at the forest, you would feel that you were in a magical world. The forest was just too dazzling for him.

This green landscape was completely different from the green lands of the Prairie. The Beastman Prairie was flat, as if there was a green carpet on the ground. But here, you will be subjected to a green world. There were all kinds of trees with leaves of all shapes and sizes. If the greenery in the Prairie was like a calm sea, then the greenery here was like a raging sea.

Although this kind of sea was static, it didn't undermine its beauty at all. It wasn't any worse than gazing at the endless sea. Zhao Hai was quickly absorbed into the scenery of the forest.

After Billy's discomfort passed, he was also attracted to the scene around him. His mouth opened from time to time as he expressed his admiration.

Then suddenly, a huge tree appeared in their line of sight. This was the biggest tree that Zhao Hai had ever seen. It was so huge that the Bread Trees back at Ape Island looked like saplings.

The only plant that Zhao Hai can compare to this tree would be Cai'er. The scene of Cai'er enveloping a city was completely similar to this tree, it was a shocking sight.

Zhao Hai and the others stared blankly at this tree. Then they could faintly spot a few black spots coming out of the forest. Before long, these black figures appeared in front of Zhao Hai. They were a group of Elves that were riding on top of Voiceless Soundbirds.

All of these Elves were wearing long green robes. The robes were

beautiful and looked very elegant, Zhao Hai couldn't think of the material that these robes were made of.

The one on the lead was a female Elf. The people going along with this female Elf were all harp-bearers. On the other hand, the female Elf was actually holding a magic staff, evidently, she is a Mage.

Then the one who escorted Zhao Hai spoke to the female Elf. "My lord, Patriarch Billy and Mister Zhao Hai has arrived."

The Elf woman nodded, then she turned her head to Billy and Zhao Hai before giving a small bow and said, "Gellar has seen Patriarch Billy and Patriarch Zhao Hai."

Zhao Hai and Billy immediately returned the bow, they don't dare to be arrogant in front of the Elves. The arrogance of these Elves were quite well known. It wouldn't be good if Zhao Hai and the others were to be rude. At the end of the day, there was no need to offend the Elves.

Zhao Hai knew that even if these Elves have been quite hard-headed, their fighting power was still significant. It would be good if he had them as his allies.

Gellar nodded to the two men, "Please come with me, Her Majesty is already waiting for you." Then she turned her mount around and flew towards the big tree.

To be honest, Zhao Hai wasn't expecting this reception from the Elves. He knew that the Elves were already aware of him being a Dark Mage. For them to give him this welcome was something that was out of Zhao Hai's imagination.

Before long, Zhao Hai and the others entered the forest and into the big tree. Compared to the tree, the Elves who were busying themselves looked as insignificant as an ant.

Then with a command from the leader, the Voiceless Soundbirds fell on top of a branch of the tree. The diameter of this branch

alone was ten meters, and it definitely wasn't the largest branch.

After Zhao Hai and the others came down from the birds, Gellar went to them and said, "Everyone, please come with me." Then she waved her hand and turned around. Zhao Hai and the others immediately followed her to walk along the branch.

While walking along, Zhao Hai also took the time to look around. This tree was really too big, he didn't know how high it was. The only thing that he knew was that when he was at the back of the Voiceless Soundbird, he wasn't able to see the top of this tree. The tree seems to have broken through the sky.

The stems of the tree were also quite thick, Zhao Hai didn't have the capacity to measure it. In any case, Zhao Hai can assure that the trunk of the tree was comparable to the size of Golden Island. And almost the entire Elven population was living on this tree.

Then Gellar led Zhao Hai and the others into the trunk of the tree. The inside of this tree looked just like the interior of Dwarf Mountain. There were densely packed caverns inside with each cavern occupied by an Elf household. The inside of the tree's trunk was very spacious, one couldn't see the bottom of this space. At the same time, Zhao Hai can also see that there were some Elves that rode some Voiceless Soundbirds to navigate the inside.

Gellar took Zhao Hai's group to a cavern inside the tree. This cavern had an area of more than 50 meters. It had a living room as well as a smaller caverns for bedrooms. Gellar then turned to Billy and Zhao Hai and said, "Patriarch Billy, Patriarch Zhao Hai, please take a rest here while I go and inform Her Majesty the Queen."

Billy and Zhao Hai simultaneously gave a salute to Gellar and said, "Thank you for the trouble." Gellar returned the salute before turning around to leave.

After Gellar left, Zhao Hai and Billy sized up the room that they were in. The chairs and tables in the room were all made of rattan. Every single one of them were a work of art. It seems like the Elves

had merged the pursuit of art with their own lives.

After Billy looked around, he went to the a chair and took a seat. He let out a long sigh and said, “This was the first time that I flew in my entire life. It actually feels very good.”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “I actually ride a Hawk, but I really can’t feel anything special with them. On the other hand, the cries of these Voiceless Soundbirds are very pleasant to hear.”

Billy smiled and said, “I forgot that you have these flying Phantasmal Beasts. How about giving us some?”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “That’s not a problem, I can give you as many as you want. However, those who ride these beasts need to have training. Otherwise, you won’t be able to fly even if you have them.”

Billy nodded and said, “That’s great. Give me some of them when we get back. Those Phantasmal Beasts would make Dwarf transportation much better.”

Zhao Hai nodded as well, then he looked at Billy and said, “Patriarch, why did you think the Queen called for us? I’m quite worried.”

Billy stared, then he comforted Zhao Hai, “Don’t worry, it’ll be fine. Our trip this time is related to the whole continent. We’re only here to convince the Queen to join our cause.”

Zhao Hai sighed and then he said, “I really hope that the Elves would form an alliance with us. It would be best for the continent if all non-human races unite against both the Demons and the Divine Race. When that happens, I can then take the beast skin scroll to the Buddha Emperor, my Father-in-law, as well as Boris. As long as they agree to deal with the Divine Realm, then we would have nothing to fear.”

Billy looked at Zhao Hai, and then with a serious tone he said, “Rest assured, we can certainly deal with all of our enemies.

Whether it be the Demons or the Divine Race, everyone who wants to enslave our races shall be eliminated.”

Zhao Hai replied, “I also believe that we can defeat them. I just hope that the Elves would be on our side. Otherwise, when the Divine Race comes, we couldn’t just accept them as allies. And with no point of retreat, the Elves would be placed in a dangerous position.”

Billy nodded, then said, “This time, whether we succeed or not, we should go and deal with the Dragon Race. Their reputation alone is causing huge problems. Moreover, their current arrangement divided the continent in half. This wouldn’t be a good thing for us when the Divine Race arrives.”

Zhao Hai nodded, “I’m aware of that. That is why I immediately thought of eliminating them. After I head back, I shall start to deal with the Dragons. We can’t afford to wait anymore lest more problems pop up.”

While the two were talking, a female Elf had come in from outside. She brought a bottle of wine as well as some fruits. After placing the food on the table, she looked at Billy and Zhao Hai and said, “Please have a taste. These fruits and wines are special products of our Elven Race.”

Naturally, Zhao Hai and Billy didn’t decline. After thanking the Elf, they immediately tasted the fruit and wine. There was no need to mention it, the fruit and wine were extremely good. This was especially true for the wine, it had a variety of fruit aroma as well as a very special taste.

When the two had drank a glass of liquor, Gellar can in. Upon entering, she gave a salute to the two and said, “Patriarch Billy, Patriarch Zhao Hai, Her Majesty has invited you in.” The two immediately stood up and followed Gellar out.

After walking round and round the tree for who knows how long, they finally came out from a hole in the trunk. Then they went on

further outside and arrived in a thick branch. This branch was very large and had twigs that formed a platform with an area of about 10 thousand meter squared. And erected on this platform was a palace.

The palace wasn't very big, its body was completely made out of wood branches. Moreover, these branches were still alive, as seen from the green leaves that can be seen here and there.

There were no guards in this palace. What can be seen on its huge entrance were Elves that were continuously going in and out. Before long, Gellar took the two into the palace. While walking along, Zhao Hai couldn't help but look at the ground. The floor of the palace was made out of leaves that were carefully cut and arranged into very beautiful patterns.

Then Gellar led them towards a Great Hall that had 'Life Temple' written on it. It seems like this temple was named after the God that the Elves worship, the God of Life.

When the three people entered the temple, Zhao Hai and Billy couldn't help but stare. Inside the temple wasn't only the Elf Queen. There were chairs inside the hall where Elves can be seen sitting. The hall was packed, it had an audience of no less than a hundred people.

In the innermost part of the hall were three chairs. The chair on the middle was more elevated from the other two and there was a female Elf sitting on it. This elf doesn't look old, she wore a green robe and had a magic staff on her hand. She also had a crown made out of vines on top of her head, giving her a noble aura. It seems like this person was the Elf Queen. On the left side of the Queen was another female Elf, she looked quite old due to the wrinkles on her face. However, her eyes was shining, and the seriousness on her face made people feel like she wasn't a person that was easy to get along with.

On the left side of the Queen was a tall and handsome man. Even

if one were to consider the other Elves around him, he still stood out. His figure was quite tall and he had a very symmetrical build. He had a neat small beard that didn't make him look less attractive, instead, it actually made him exude a more manly charm. On his left hand was a sword while on his right hand was a harp. Unexpectedly, he was an Elf who was an expert in both sword and harp.

The Elves commonly studied either magic, swords, or the harp. There were almost no Elves who had both Martial and Magic cultivation. However, there were people who can actually study both the sword and the harp. However, these people were in the extreme minority. This was because studying both fields can cause a person to divide their attention, making their progress mediocre. But at the same time, there were still people among the Elven Race that were referred to as 'Heavenly Gifted' in their childhood. These people are extremely gifted in both sword and harp. When these people finish their study, they would be called Great Warriors. These Great Warriors are amongst the fewest of the few in the entire Elven Race.

Gellar brought Zhao Hai in front of the Queen before she stopped and bowed, "Reporting to Her Majesty, The Great Elder, and the Prince. Patriarch Billy and Patriarch Zhao Hai has arrived!"

This was a special characteristic of the Elves. Their ruling body not only comprises of the Queen, they also have the Elder's assembly as well as the Prince's Palace. This Elder's Assembly was composed of Elf Elders that were chosen, majority of them were women, the other men were part of the Queen's courtier's, men who follow by her side. The Prince's palace was generally the hall of the Queen's husband. The Prince's men also held some sort of authority. These three group were the core body of the Elf community. Once something related to the whole race comes up, these three would convene and vote for it.

Zhao Hai and Billy quickly took a step forward and gave a bow to

the Queen, Great Elder, and the Prince and said, “Zhao Hai(Billy) has seen the Queen, the Great Elder, and the Prince.”

The Queen nodded and said, “In behalf of my Elven Race, I welcome Patriarch Billy and Patriarch Zhao Hai. Please have a seat.” The Queen’s voice was very nice to hear, it had a certain magnetic charm to it. Although her voice wasn’t loud, one could still hear every single word very clearly.

Chapter 656 – Anger!

After Zhao Hai had sat down, he immediately felt countless amounts of gazes targeted towards him. Some of these gazes even held great hostility, while some were loathing.

Zhao Hai was very clear about why he was receiving such gazes, it was either because he was Human or he was a Dark Mage. Both conditions were enough to make Elves look at him in a negative way.

It was needless to say that the Elves might even hate Humans much more than the Divine Race. After all, the hatred between the Elves and the Divine Realm happened too long ago. Even if the lifespans of the Elves were more than the Humans, not even them can live for longer than 10 thousand years. Moreover, it was also impossible to remember matters of tens of thousands of years ago.

On the other hand, their hatred for the Humans was quite recent. Although it had happened in about less than a thousand years ago, there were Elves who were still alive from back then. Therefore, the Elves still held a huge grudge against the Human Race.

Additionally, Zhao Hai was a Dark Mage. Dark Mages were the deemed by the Elves to be the most repugnant profession there is. The Elves respected life and loved peace. Although they were quite fastidious about art, they were even more fastidious when it comes to peace and preservation of life, it was to the point of extreme obsession.

Because of this, the summoning magics of the Dark Mages were seen to be the biggest disrespect to the Elven beliefs. Reanimating a person who was already dead was an insult to life. Therefore, Zhao Hai was not confused about the gazes that were thrown his way.

After they had sat down, the Queen looked at Billy and Zhao Hai, “Patriarch Billy, Patriarch Zhao Hai, I want to know, is Patriarch Billy really telling the truth? Patriarch Zhao Hai, do you have any

proof to back your claims?”

Zhao Hai looked at the Queen in annoyance. He didn't think that the Elves would still be doubtful this far into their contact. However, he still took out the beast skin scroll that was signed by the Dwarves, the Beastmen and the Fishmen. Then he stood up and said, to the Queen, “Read this and you will know.”

The Elf Queen nodded, then she beckoned her hand as an Elf received Zhao Hai's beast skin scroll and handed it over to the Queen.

The Queen opened the scroll and carefully read the contents inside. She noticed Billy's and the others' mark, her face couldn't help but show surprise.

The Dwarves, the Beastmen, and the Fishmen were huge groups of the Continent. In the past, the Elves also had contact with these races. Only when the Radiant Church instigated the Humans to break the relationships with these races did the Elves come in contact with the others races fewer and fewer times. Only when the Dwarves had dug their tunnel did the Elves have in contact with them.

Although it had been a long time since contact has been made, the Queen can still recognize the unique marks of the other races. These marks were simply unable to be forged. Additionally, Billy was sitting right there, which proves that these marks were indeed real.

After looking at the scroll, the Queen handed it over to the Great Elder before turning her head to Zhao Hai and said, “It seems like Mister is telling the truth. Also, did the Radiant Church and the Dragon Race really occupy the Ocean Waves Dynasty as well as the Lyon Empire?”

Zhao Hai just nodded since there was no need for useless words. He really couldn't understand why the Queen refused to believe in him. He and Billy had time and time again displayed their

sincerity. But after all this time, the Queen was still doubtful, this annoyed Zhao Hai very much.

The Great Elder also looked at the scroll before she handed it over to the Prince. At this time the Queen asked, “And does mister have any plans?”

Zhao Hai nodded and then said, “I do. I don’t think that the Dragons’ action this time was due to pure coincidence. It was possible that they had received a message from the Divine Realm. Therefore, as soon as I leave the forest, I shall go and deal with the Dragons. Their race needs to be eliminated from the continent. Otherwise, we would be placed in grave danger once the Divine Race arrives.”

The Elf Queen looked at Zhao Hai, her eyes shone with interest, making her more attractive than before. The Queen expressed her noble aura as she asked with a serious tone, “Is mister confident in dealing with the Dragon Race?”

Seeing the look on the Queen’s face, Zhao Hai knew that she was thinking about how invincible the Dragons were. It was no wonder that the Queen had her current expression when she heard that Zhao Hai was going to eliminate the Dragons.

Zhao Hai didn’t become polite, he just nodded and said, “I do. I have no choice, after all, the Dragons had controlled the Lyon Empire, essentially halving the entire continent. If we don’t deal with the Dragons, then when the Divine Race comes, they would be able to establish a base in Lyon Empire. Then, along with the Ocean Waves Dynasty, the two of them would quickly take care of the Buddha Empire. After that, they can then focus on attacking the Rosen Empire and the Aksu Empire. And most importantly, the Lyon Empire separates the Dwarves and the Elves. The elimination of the Dragons is required for the future cooperation between the Dwarves and the Elves in dealing with the Divine Race.”

The Elf Queen nodded. At this time, the Prince had also read the

beast skin scroll, he curled it and then passed it over to an Elf and had it returned to Zhao Hai.

The Prince looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Then what does Mister require of our Elf Race?”

Zhao Hai shook his head and replied, “You don’t have to do anything. I just want the Elves to know this so that when the Divine Race comes, we could stand side by side in resisting and fighting back.”

But then the Great Elder suddenly said, “And how can you assure our safety? How can we feel relieved when fighting together with you? How can we make sure that you’re not doing this just to enslave us?”

Zhao Hai had already thought about this issue, so with a serious tone he answered, “As long as the Elves is our ally, I, Zhao Hai, shall assure your race’s absolute security. I have the strength to back this up.”

The Great Elder coldly snorted and said, “Do you really believe that the Elven Race would ally with you with just those few words? Aren’t you being too naive?”

At this point, Zhao Hai had gotten angry. Every since him and Billy started their contact with the Elves, the latter had always been dragging its feet. And now, he had come with sincere intent, but the other party was still being like this, not trusting him. This made Zhao Hai fume with anger. He looked at the Queen, the Prince, and then the Great Elder before he said with a cold voice, “I came here in the hopes of forming an alliance with the Elf Race. I was hoping that you would know that your race wouldn’t be excluded from being targets when the Divine Race comes. I’m only here to propose an alliance and not to beg for help. If you ally with us, then only good things would happen to the Elves. When the Divine Race arrives, you would have allies to share the burden of battle with. Moreover, if the Divine Race comes, do you really

think that we would be in the mood to enslave the Elven Race?”

Billy was similarly incensed. The Elves might be clueless, but Billy was aware of what Zhao Hai had done in the past few days. He had kept going back and forth to different races just to unite them all. His effort alone was already worthy of respect. The Elves' completely distrustful attitude truly lit the fuse of this Dwarf Patriarch.

Billy stood up and then looked angrily at the Elf Queen as well as the others, “What do you mean? You still don't trust Zhao Hai? I had already told you before, besides being a Human, he had become a Foreign Elder to the Dwarves. At the same time, he is also a Foreign Prince of the Beastmen. Moreover, he is also in extremely good graces with the Fishman. Is this status still not enough for the Elves? Are you looking down on us?”

Dwarves have their own temper, and it was not easy for them to hold back for a long time. Zhao Hai has been regarded well by Billy. In this case, how could Billy tolerate the Elves' distrust of Zhao Hai? This was akin to the Elves being distrustful to the Dwarves.

The Elf Queen frowned, she also thought that the Great Elder's words were somewhat improper. In fact, the Elves had already investigated the words coming from the Dwarves and the Queen was already willing to form an alliance with Zhao Hai. However, she didn't have the means to make a decision because the Great Elder has been opposing to it all this time. This was the reason why this matter has been dragged on for so long.

The Queen understood why Zhao Hai and Billy would get angry at the Great Elder's words. She already trusted Zhao Hai and Billy. Even if she had doubts about the Human, her suspicion didn't extend to the Dwarf. The Elves had been in contact with the Dwarves for a long time, so the Queen was aware about their temperament. The Queen can affirm that the Dwarves wouldn't just help the Humans to deal with an enemy if the reason was not

fully investigated through.

But at this time, the Great Elder once again coldly snorted and said, “And why would I trust a human? Even if he is the Foreign Elder of the Dwarves as well as a Foreign Prince of the Beastmen, he is still a Human. Also, the Dwarves have been living easy because of the Elves. And you count yourself as our equal? Completely laughable!”

When he heard the Great Elder’s words, Billy’s face expression turned completely dark. “So it turns out that the Elves are the saviour of the Dwarves? Hahaha. This is the most ridiculous joke that I had ever heard. We have it easy? Just from those artworks that you make? Our Dwarven ironwares are famous all over the continent. At the same time, we Dwarves also have no problems when it came to food and clothing. On the other hand, you Elves have been using your products in order to trade for supplies from my Dwarf Race. Now, I must ask the Great Elder, what days did the Elven Race have before we came in contact with you? Now, after we Dwarves came, how much did your quality of life improve?”

Chapter 657 – A Suspicious Great Elder

Billy wasn't incorrect, the reason why the Dwarves were living well even until now was their ironware. And with how the Buddha Empire exhibited their prowess, Dwarven ironware has been known to be the best all around.

On the other hand, even if Elven wares were expensive, their rate of production was just pitifully low. If it weren't for the Dwarves, the Elves wouldn't have ample living materials. After all, there was no way to get in contact with the Elves, nor was it easy to interact with them. Among the races in the continent, it was the Elves that were the hardest to approach.

When the Great Elder heard Billy, he didn't know what to say, but this also made her angry. The Elder had always thought that the Elves were the most noble race in the continent. This was because the Elves were the most beautiful, had the longest lifespan, and were able to make the best artworks. This fact made the Elves very proud, to the point that they looked down on the other races. In fact, the Dwarves were too crude in their eyes. If they didn't need to trade for living necessities, then they wouldn't have come in contact with the Dwarves.

The main reason of this thinking was the fact that they were not in contact with other races. They had always thought that they were the most noble while always staying inside their kingdom. They were like frogs inside a well, thinking that the sky was the only one that existed.

At the current time, there were still a lot of Elves who had this mentality. After all, they hadn't come in contact with the outside world. This cause them to gradually have this attitude of self-importance.

The Queen was aware of this quality, but she didn't have the means to change it. This was because the Elves cannot come in

contact with the Humans. At the same time, they also see the Beastmen to be quite dangerous. In all honesty, the Queen was feeling quite helpless with regards to this matter.

One shouldn't see the Queen as the one who managed the entire Elven Kingdom. With both the Prince and the Great Elder to decide matters with, the Queen felt powerless. It was just unfortunate that the Elves always had this type of governance.

Normally, the Queen and the Prince should have a more intimate interaction with each other, after all, the Prince was the Queen's husband. However, the Queen's current situation was a bit special. Although they were husband and wife, the Prince was actually the son of the Great Elder. That is to say, the Queen was actually the daughter-in-law of the Great Elder. Since the Prince grew up in the care of the Great Elder, everything was done in accordance to the Great Elder's decision. Therefore, when a matter arrives, it was always the Great Elder and the Prince who would come into a unanimous decision. If it weren't for the Great Elder, the Queen wouldn't have allowed Zhao Hai's matters to reach this point.

When the nearby Prince saw that Billy was berating the Great Elder, he immediately became angry, he stood up and pointed to Billy and said, "Rude! How dare you disrespect the Great Elder! Apologize immediately."

Billy turned his head to the Prince, he coldly snorted and said, "Me, being rude? Isn't that something that I should say to you? Don't forget, I am the Patriarch of the Dwarven Race, a position that is equal to your Queen. Meanwhile, you're just a Prince, what gave you the authority to scold me? Who do you think you are?"

The explosive temper of the Dwarves was quite famous in the continent. At this point, Billy couldn't stomach the Elves' attitude of always having their noses turned to the skies. Billy's politeness had already run out.

Zhao Hai looked at the Great Elder and the Prince, he couldn't

understand how the matter reached this point. Why were the Great Elder and the Prince having these reactions?

They came to the Elves this time to offer an Alliance, not to ask for anything. Moreover, it was an alliance to fight shoulder to shoulder when the Divine Race came. In this case, why was the Great Elder in opposition to this? What exactly was he thinking?

Zhao Hai was frowning while looking at both the Great Elder and the Prince. It might be an illusion, but Zhao Hai saw that when Billy and the Prince quarrelled, the Great Elder had a flash of happiness in her eyes.

An alarm suddenly sounded inside Zhao Hai's heart. He can remember the time when the Beastmen were being brainwashed by the Radiant Church. Was it possible for the Church to brainwash an Elf? Was the Great Elder brainwashed by the Radiant Church?

But Zhao Hai changed his mind. If this was really the case, that the Great Elder was a person of the Radiant Church, then she would've already told the Church about their plans. But from the response of the Church, it seems like they still weren't aware of his plan. This made Zhao Hai doubt his initial suspicion.

When the Prince heard Billy, his handsome face turned red. He unsheathed the sword on his waist and pointed it towards Billy, "Apologize, otherwise, face death!"

Billy looked at the Prince coldly and said, "Letting me apologize? Keep dreaming. If you want to fight me, then bring it on! Let's see who survives to the very end."

Since he came to see the Queen, Billy didn't bring any weapons. However, Dwarves were never afraid of a fight. Even if they were killed, they wouldn't just go down that easily.

The Queen frowned and said, "Gaye, that's enough. Don't forget, Patriarch Billy came here politely. Don't be disrespectful."

Just as the Queen finished talking, the Great Elder suddenly said, “How could it be disrespectful? We still haven’t formed an alliance with them. They just want us to be in an alliance with them so that when they can slowly enslave our race once again.”

Zhao Hai looked at the Great Elder, he was still quite suspicious towards her, but he didn’t express it. He just turned to the Great Elder and said, “I’ll have to disagree with that, Great Elder. After all, your combat prowess won’t reduce when you become our allies. At that point, how could we possibly enslave you? Moreover, are you confident in resisting the attack of the Divine Race? Will you be safe by yourselves?”

The Great Elder coldly snorted and said, “Even if we surrender to the Divine Race, at least we won’t be treated as slaves.”

When Zhao Hai heard the Great Elder, his pupils couldn’t help but shrink. His eyes flashed a cold light and said, “How can the Great Elder be sure that the Divine Race wouldn’t enslave you? If the Divine Race was not planning to enslave you, then why did the Elves joined the war against them a long time ago? How can the Great Elder make her current judgement? Has the Great Elder been in contact with the Radiant Church?”

After hearing Zhao Hai speak, the entire hall suddenly turned quiet. All the Elves present were looking at the Great Elder.

The Elves weren’t stupid, in fact, they were more intelligent than the Dwarves or the Beastmen. It was only because of their beauty as well as the plot of the Radiant Church that they were unable to come in contact with the Humans. One must know that in the past, during the time where the Elves were still in contact with the continent, there were a lot of big Merchants who were Elves. At the same time, there were even some Elves who held high-ranking position in the various nations. This was ample evidence for the Elven intellect.

Zhao Hai’s question immediately made the Elves inside the hall

find something wrong. Zhao Hai's trip was done in pure sincerity, he didn't even make the Elves leave their forest. He also didn't say that the Elves would have to listen to his command. He only came to propose the alliance to the Elf Queen, and to express his idea of fighting together against the Divine Race. In this case, the Great Elder's reaction was truly overboard. Especially when she said that they would just surrender to the Divine Race, this made the Elves doubt her words.

The Great Elder also discovered that her mouth had slipped, but she didn't surrender and steeled her resolve, "Correct, a person from the Radiant Church came. They were very sincere in their visit and told me that as long as the Elves help the Divine Race control the continent, then they would guarantee the safety of our race. They also assured me that the Elves would continue living inside the Elven Forest."

Zhao Hai looked at the Great Elder and said, "How come the Great Elder believed their promise while doubting mine? I am a Foreign Elder of the Dwarves as well as a Foreign Prince of the Beastmen, my status should be a match for the Radiant Church. May I know then why?"

The Great Elder looked at Zhao Hai and then sneered, "That's an easy question, did you realize who you are Zhao Hai? You're a Dark Mage. How could you be credible when you don't even respect the dead? I would never believe you. I might as well believe a Light Mage than a Dark Mage."

When the other Elves heard the Great Elder, humming discussion was suddenly heard inside the hall. It was clear that they approved of the Great Elder's view.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but couldn't smile and said, "Being respectful to people? Great Elder, can you really be this naive? Do you know the reason why the races became like this? Do you know why the Elves were turned into slaves by the Humans? Do you know why the Humans suddenly loathed the other races when

they were initially peaceful with them? May I know whether the Great Elder had thought of these questions?”

The Great Elder coldly snorted and said, “It is because of how greedy the Humans can be. Therefore, they suppressed the different races of the continent. What further thinking does this need?”

Zhao Hai sneered, “The reason why I claimed that the Great Elder is being naive was because the Great Elder seemed to not have recognized the core of the matter. The reason of the current situation was due to the fact that the Human records have been changed. In the past, history books of the Humans depicted the Dwarves and the Beastmen with a positive light. Although the Beastmen loved to fight while the Dwarves had shallow temper, they were still written to be good people. On the other hand, the Elves were also regarded quite well. Nor only are Elves seen as gentle, they were written to be intelligent as well as people who loved art. All these descriptions were worthy for the readers to respect the races.

The Elves in the hall couldn't help but nod, even the Great Elder nodded. Then Zhao Hai looked at everyone and said, “But later on, some people revised the contents of the Human books. In this revision, the Beastmen turned from being brave to being ruthless barbarians. The Dwarves had turned into being with unreasonable temper. But since the Elves had zero negatives to their attitude, they were written to be races who had nothing else but beauty. The Humans were slowly influenced by these books and suddenly changed their attitude towards the other races, and before long, they were suppressing them. Does the Great Elder know who revised the records?”

Chapter 658 – Rebels

The Great Elder couldn't help but stare when she heard Zhao Hai. Although they have their own records, the Elves' history only recorded how the Humans have suppressed them, it didn't record the reason why. Because of this, the Elves had always blamed their suppression and enslavement to the greed of Humans. Now that Zhao Hai expressed this matter, things suddenly seemed to be not so simple.

The Great Elder looked at Zhao Hai and said, "And do you know who did it?"

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Yes, I do. The Humans aren't like the Elves or the Dwarves who always had peace with each other. Due to the ambitions of the Humans, they weren't able to unite internally and even had multiple cases of war. This made it hard to preserve Human history and extremely easy for someone to slip in some revisions. And there is an organization that can easily do it in the past, and it was the Radiant Church."

It was not only the Elves who were startled with Zhao Hai's words, Billy was the same. All of them stared at Zhao Hai, waiting for him to back his own words.

Zhao Hai looked at everyone and said, "The Radiant Church had existed way before all of us thought. They were just being extremely low-key, only becoming slowly formidable in the recent several hundred years. Before the church officially rose, they were sending their priests to various battlefields in the continent and offering help to injured soldiers as well as affected commoners. This allowed the Radiant Church to accumulate universal praise from everyone. Some time after that, the nations in the continent started to trust the church with the responsibility of being in charge of the Human records. It was at that point that the Church started to revise the history books of the Human Race. Humans suppressing the various races was caused by this revisions by the

church. In their edition of Human history, the other races of the continent were lesser beings, they made Humans feel disgust in interacting with these lesser races.”

Everyone stared at Zhao Hai, they have not heard about this before.

Then Zhao Hai continued, “In the Radiant Church’s revision, the Dwarves, Beastmen, and Fishmen were lesser beings that were diseased and should not be mingled with. It was said that anybody that came in contact with these races for too long would turn into the same lesser being. This made the Humans stray away from the other races. However, the Radiant Church came into a problem when it came to the Elves. The Elves were perfect in Human standards, there were no negative things to pin on them. Therefore, the Radiant Church wrote that the Elves were historically high-quality slaves. In this way, the Humans would enslave the Elves, which in turn, made the Elves loathe the humans. And now, Great Elder, you actually believed such words from that organization. Hahahaha. This should be the funniest joke that I have ever heard.”

When she heard Zhao Hai, the Great Elder’s expression suddenly changed. With a paled face, the Great Elder retorted, “This is only based on your own words, who knows if they are true or not.”

Zhao Hai gave the Great Elder a cold look before saying, “The Great Elder still doesn’t believe me? Right, I forgot to ask, I believe Patriarch Billy had included the matter where I repaired their Divine Artifact in the letter that he sent. I can repair your Divine Artifact as well. The Artifact Spirit of the Dwarves already told us the reason why they fought with the Divine Race, this was not only because they want to enslave you, but it was also because the God that you worshipped is in opposition to the God that the Church idolized. For the Church to rule this continent, the God that needed to be worshipped should only be the Radiant God, not the individual Gods of the races. Once everyone believed in the

Radiant God, the other Gods would lose spiritual support, which would allow the God of the Radiant Church to eliminate them. Oh Great Elder, trusting the Radiant Church is akin to trusting the Radiant god, this also meant that you are betraying your God of Life. I don't know if the Great Elder is aware of this."

The Great Elder's face turned dark when she heard Zhao Hai, she couldn't bear sitting still as she stood up and glared at Zhao Hai, "Nonsense! Complete nonsense! Do you really think that we'll believe you just because you told us that you can fix our Divine Artifact? You're completely talking nonsense!"

Zhao Hai looked at the Great Elder and coldly snorted, "I can fix your Divine Artifact. There's no need to deceive you with this, just hand me your Divine Artifact and you'll know then whether I can fix it or not."

With a berating tone, the Great Elder shouted, "And why would be hand our Divine Artifact over to you? Who knows, maybe you'll steal our Divine Artifact away."

Zhao Hai looked at the Great Elder's reaction and became sure that the Great Elder was a chess piece that the Radiant Church had sent inside the Elven Race. Otherwise, she wouldn't have these responses. He had always spoken with sincerity. If one weren't a person of the Radiant Church, then they wouldn't have reacted like this.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but sneer at the Great Elder's claims, "Great Elder, your accusations are not very pleasant to hear. Moreover, if I really intended to steal your Divine Artifact, then there's no way for you to stop me. And there would be no need for me to do about it in a roundabout manner."

At this moment, the Prince who hadn't spoke for quite some time, loudly said, "Complete nonsense! And for daring to snatch my Elven Race's Divine Artifact, you deserve to die!" Then he stabbed his sword towards Zhao Hai.

Nobody thought that Gaye would act like this. After seeing Gaye's action, the Queen immediately shouted, "Gaye, stop!" However, it was already too late, Gaye's thorn sword was already close to reaching Zhao Hai.

One must know that Gaye was an Elven Great Warrior who was outstanding in both the harp and the sword. There was no need to mention about his strength, Gaye was a talented Elf, being peak 8th rank strength despite being relatively young. In addition to the emphasis of speed in Elven sword techniques, Gaye's attack was no less than a sneak attack. Gaye wasn't far from Zhao Hai, so a short time after his words just fell, his sword was already at Zhao Hai's throat.

Billy's face changed completely, although he was near Zhao Hai, he still couldn't block Gaye because of his lack of weapon. But even so, Billy still roared as he aimed his fist towards Gaye's head. He wanted Gaye to abandon his sword strike in order to dodge the punch.

However, it seems like Billy had underestimated Gaye's strength. Gaye's sword was extremely quick, so he didn't care about Billy's punch since he knew that he could still dodge the punch right after he killed Zhao Hai.

But at the same time, Gaye also had underestimated Zhao Hai's strength. While the sword was heading towards his throat, Zhao Hai didn't even move an inch. Instead, he looked at Gaye with a contemptuous gaze. Gaye felt that something was wrong when he saw this gaze, but it was already too late to retract his attack. Gaye hardened his resolve as he accelerated his stab towards Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai didn't make a move as Gaye's sword reached his sword. Upon seeing that the sword was about to puncture through the other party's throat, Gaye revealed an elated expression. He thought that Zhao Hai was dead. But it didn't take a long time before Gaye noticed that there was no stabbing feeling on his sword. Instead, he heard a 'ding' sound before his sword stopped

moving further.

Gaye stared, then he saw that Zhao Hai's throat had turned into a crystal. While Gaye was in a daze, Zhao Hai had grasped his sword, which turned it into a crystal as well. Then when the sword crystallized, Zhao Hai made a small twist, shattering the blade into pieces.

Gaye was startled, he immediately loosened his grip on the sword as he used his toes to propel him backwards, dodging Billy's punch as well. Then he returned to his chair as he grasped hold of his harp.

But at this moment, Zhao Hai made a move. He appeared in front of Gaye and grasped his neck. He raised Gaye with only one arm as he coldly looked at him and said, "You want to kill me? Is it because I have spoken the truth?"

Gaye's throat was seized by Zhao Hai, making it hard for him to breathe as his face turned red. He looked frightened at Zhao Hai. He didn't think that Zhao Hai would be this strong. Moreover, he had expected that Zhao Hai was a Mage, he didn't imagine that Zhao Hai was also a very formidable Warrior.

At this time, the Great Elder and the Queen responded. The Great Elder angrily shouted as she wielded her Magic staff and began casting a spell at Zhao Hai. Then Zhao Hai coldly snorted as an incredible pressure began to burst out from his body. Although Zhao Hai cannot use his God-rank strength, his 9th rank power was still something that the Great Elder couldn't endure. This was when the Great Elder discovered that Zhao Hai was actually a 9th rank expert.

Zhao Hai looked at the Great Elder with a cold gaze, "Great Elder, I'm afraid that the situation isn't as simple as you being approached by the Radiant Church. I think you are a person of the Radiant Church itself."

The Great Elder's face was struggling right now, it seems like she

was holding on with all she had, “You talk nonsense. Don’t think that since you are a 9th rank expert, you can tell anything you want. Don’t think that my Elven Race doesn’t have a 9th rank expert as well.”

Zhao Hai actually smiled faintly and said, “Elf friend, you had been observing for quite some time. Why don’t you come out and see me.”

Then just as Zhao Hai’s voice fell, an old sigh was heard, “My Elven race has truly been unfortunate, we’ve made a joke out of ourselves in front of Mister. I’ll be honest to Mister, I had also just recently discovered that she is actually a person from the Radiant Church. Mister, rest assured, I already snatched her letter for the Radiant Church. I just wanted to see what moves they’ll do next. I just didn’t think that she would betray her own race. Sigh, this is really a huge misfortune to my Elf Race.”

Along with this sound, an old Elf walked into the hall. After this Elf appeared, every single Elf in the room stood up and bowed to the Old Elf, “We have seen the Supreme Elder.”

The Old Elf nodded and then turned to Zhao Hai, “Mister, I ask you to please put him down. We will surely provide you with a satisfactory response.”

Zhao Hai loosened his grip on Gaye, then he turned to the Old Elf and bowed, “The Supreme Elder is too polite. This is an internal matter of the Elves, and since I’m a Human, then I will surely hand this matter over to you. I just came here to offer an alliance. How about we resume this matter tomorrow?”

The Old Elf returned the bow and said, “We apologize to Mister. Then, Mister, please.” Zhao Hai and Billy gave a salute to the Old Elf before they both left the hall.

Chapter 659 – Supreme Elder

After seeing that Billy and Zhao Hai had left the hall, the Old Elf then turned to the Great Elder and Gaye before he lightly sighed and said, “Ever since we received Patriarch Billy’s first letter, I had always been paying attention to the entire Tree of Life. Since I don’t want things to be known to the Radiant Church and don’t want to hinder our chances in dealing with the Divine Race, I have intercepted every letter that came out.”

The Great Elder’s face couldn’t help but get pale when she heard the Supreme Elder. Gaye’s face was quite ugly as well, this was because they had indeed been sending letters to the Radiant Church all this time.

The Supreme Elder looked at the Great Elder and Gaye, “Although I always thought that doing this was nonsense, our records pertaining to the Divine Race was indeed too terrible, so I still made an effort. However, I just didn’t expect to find those letters addressed to the Radiant Church. And even if they were encrypted, I can still make sense of some of those words. I didn’t think that there would be traitors in my own race.”

Then the Supreme Elder stared coldly at the Great Elder, “So what made you betray your own race, your own beliefs? Tell me.”

The Great Elder looked at the Supreme Elder, her eyes flashed with fear. However, this fear was immediately replaced by fanaticism, she loudly declared, “The God’s will is everywhere, and you all should surrender to the Radiant God. It is your privilege to serve under him. God is omnipotent, God is all powerful. God will lead us to the shining light!”

The Supreme Elder looked at the Great Elder’s expression and his face sank. Then a ray of light came out of the hands of the Supreme Elder and entered the Great Elder’s body. The Great Elder pitifully groaned out before her body collapsed on the floor.

Then the Supreme Elder turned his head to Gaye and did the same thing, Gaye cried out before collapsing. Then the Supreme Elder turned his head to the Queen and said, “I have crippled their cultivation, take them away.” The Queen nodded, then she immediately had people drag the bodies of the Great Elder and Gaye away.

At this time, everyone in the hall was paying attention to the Supreme Elder. Similarly, the Supreme Elder scanned the hall and then said, “Our race’s history is divided into two parts; one part is accessible to everyone while the other can only be read by our race’s 9th rank experts. In the records, the Ark Continent had been subjected into a war against the Divine Race. Our Elven race is a main force during that war, the Dwarves and the Beastmen were main components as well. There was also the Mermaid Clan and some Human 9th ranks that joined. However, a lot of the Human 9th ranks were also on the side of the Divine Race along with the Dragon Race. The war was incredibly fierce, and in the end, the Elves, Dwarves, and Beastman’s Divine Artifacts managed to wound the God-ranked expert, driving him back to the Divine Realm. In that fight the Divine Artifacts of the three races were seriously damaged. The Beastman Race’s Beast God Spear was heavily injured, the Dwarven Race’s Iron Hammer was similarly wounded, only our Elven Race’s Bow sustained light injuries. At one time, the Elven Bow’s Artifact Spirit managed to materialize for a short time, informing our ancestors about the war with the Divine Race. After that, the Artifact Spirit fell into a deep slumber.”

The Elves in the hall were very silent as they listened to the Supreme Elder. They were completely unaware that there was another part in their race’s history.

The Supreme Elder looked at the people present and said, “Just like what Mister Zhao Hai said, the Radiant Church’s God in the Divine Realm is in a hostile relationship with our own God. This

made them send people to deal with us, and wanting to control the entire Ark Continent, enslaving all of the races in the process. They will treat us as livestock, and when our strengths reached a sufficient level, they would send us to the Divine Realm and join their army. Basically, the Divine Race wanted to turn the Ark Continent into a soldier producing factory. Because of this, the major races in the continent decided to resist the Divine Race. Mister Zhao Hai did nothing wrong. And we will establish an alliance with him to deal with the incoming Divine Race.”

No Elf in the hall dared to oppose, all of them simultaneously nodded. The Supreme Elder nodded and then turned his head to the Queen and said, “You have done well all these years. You shall go form an alliance with Mister Zhao Hai tomorrow. Mister Zhao Hai came here in person despite being a 9th rank expert himself, this is already giving us a huge face. Discuss this matter with him yourself. At the same time, deliver the Elven Bow to Mister Zhao Hai and ask him to help us fix it. If Mister can fix our Divine Artifact, then it would be good for our race. I suspect that there are more traitors within our race. When the Divine Artifact gets fixed, finding those rebels would be easy.” Then the Supreme Elder scanned the hall as if looking for the traitors present.

The Elves in the hall felt their backs to be coldly sweating. Even if they haven’t betrayed their race, the Supreme Elder’s gaze alone made them feel guilty.

The Queen immediately nodded in reply. The Supreme Elder also gave her a nod before turning around to leave. After the Supreme Elder left, the Queen looked at the other Elves and said, “Alright, everyone can go back. Make sure to manage your subordinates well. This is a special period in our race. While the Divine Artifact is being fixed, nobody is allowed to leave the Tree of Life.” The Elves nodded before they stood up and left the hall.

After the group left, the Queen found herself weak as she sat on her chair. She didn’t feel great at all. Of the two who were

captured, one of them was her husband while the other was her mother-in-law.

At this time, Gellar walked in and went towards the Queen, “Mother, what just happened? Why were Nana and Father dragged away?”

The Queen looked at her and sighed. Then she told Gellar about everything that just happened. Gellar looked at the Queen, her expression as though she couldn’t believe it, “Mother, are you telling the truth? How could that be possible? Why would father betray our own race? Why would Nana side with the Radiant Church?”

The Queen shook her head and said, “I also don’t know. I have lived for many years with your father, but I still didn’t notice that he is a person of the Radiant Church. At the same time, your Nana has lived here for her entire lifetime yet nobody noticed that she was a traitor. If mister Zhao Hai didn’t come here, then we wouldn’t have known about it for a long time.”

Gellar looked bewildered at the Queen, she didn’t know what to say. There was really no way to explain this matter. The Great Elder had lived with the Elves for her whole life, even to the point of being the Great Elder. She did her best for the betterment of the race and also hated the Humans to the bone. It was because of her qualities that she managed to attain her current position. But who would’ve thought that she would actually be a person of the Radiant Church.

The Queen looked at Gellar and sighed. It wasn’t only Gellar, the Queen couldn’t accept what happened as well. But since there were still matters that needed to be process, the Queen looked at Gellar and said, “Gellar, make sure to take care of Mister Zhao Hai’s group as much as possible. There shouldn’t be any mistakes. I shall deliver the Bow to Mister Zhao Hai tonight. At the same time, I shall also ask him why the Great Elder and Gaye would betray us. I think he knows the reason why.”

When she heard the Queen's instructions, Gellar immediately nodded, then she turned around to leave. In the Elven Race, the children were always more closer to their mothers. This was because the Elves were a matriarchal race. The key positions of the government were mostly handled by women. Because of this, Gellar didn't have much of a connection to Gaye. But no matter what, Gaye was still Gellar's father. This matter made Gellar sad, she didn't understand why her father would do such a thing.

When Zhao Hai and Billy returned to the room that was arranged for them, Billy immediately looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Little Hai, were the Great Elder and Gaye really sent by the Radiant Church?"

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "The Great Elder is for certain, however, Gaye might not be. Gaye is the Great Elder's child, so it was possible that it was the Great Elder who educated him about this since childhood. Therefore, making Gaye exhibit such actions. The Great Elder was brainwashed by the Church while Gaye was brainwashed by the Great Elder."

Billy knit his brows and said, "Maniac, she's really a maniac for doing this to her own child."

Zhao Hai sighed and said, "This is in line with the Church's philosophy. These people were avid devotees of the Church. For the Church, they would give up everything they have."

Billy frowned, "That 9th rank elder clearly saw Gaye attack you. So why didn't he stop it? What happens if you weren't a 9th rank expert?"

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "I don't exhibit my 9th rank aura, so that's why you can't notice it. However, other 9th ranks would surely be able to feel it, so he just let it be. I just didn't expect the Supreme Elder to be so thorough. It was great that he had confiscated the Great Elder's letter when he found out. Otherwise, our plans would've been in trouble."

Billy frowned and said, “Right, we were too careless this time. Fortunately, they did things very carefully. It would be terrible if our plans were to be known to the Radiant Church.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he sighed and said, “I thought that since the Elves have isolated themselves from the world, then the Radiant Church would not have the opportunity to get to them. We weren’t careful enough and underestimated the Church. The Radiant Church has been preparing their plans for countless years, their moves might always be out of our expectations.”

Billy nodded, then he looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Little Hai, is the story about the Church changing history true? Is that the reason why the Humans started to suppress the other races?”

Chapter 660 – Fixing the Elven Bow

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “I also wasn’t aware of this matter before. But when I went to the Fishmen, I discovered that their history was much more complete. It was them who told me about this matter.”

Billy’s expression calmed down as he said, “Radiant Church, truly vicious beings. Up until now, we still haven’t understood why the Humans have suppressed us. As it turns out, it was the Radiant Church’s plan all along. We must completely destroy them, all of them!”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “Patriarch, don’t worry, we will surely have the opportunity to do that, we certainly will. Sooner or later, we will come in contact with the Church, at that time, we will deal with them ourselves.”

Billy coldly snorted, he knew that he couldn’t be anxious about this. In any case, there would be an opportunity in the future. Zhao Hai looked at Billy and said, “Patriarch, what do you think would happen to the Great Elder and Gaye?”

Billy snorted and said, “They shouldn’t be let off easily. Except for the Humans, other races treat treason as a major crime.”

Zhao Hai couldn’t help but sigh. What Billy said was true, whether it be Dwarves or Beastmen, or even the proud Elves punish rebels quite severely. This was something that differed from the Humans. In the continent, there were many Human Empires. And the Humans on those Empires had more sense of belonging to their own Empire compared to the entire Human Race.

At this time, Gellar arrived. Zhao Hai and Billy discovered that Gellar’s expression wasn’t the best, but they didn’t say anything about it. Gellar accompanied the people who delivered them some food to eat. Elven diet was quite peculiar, they mostly don’t eat

meat, giving priority to consuming fruits and vegetables. Therefore, there were a lot of fruits and vegetables in the food that was presented to Billy and Zhao Hai. There was a staple food that seemed to taste like the bread fruit, but it didn't have a hard outer shell, and it was also shaped like a horn.

Zhao Hai wasn't disgusted by the food, but Billy was different. The Dwarves liked to eat meat, so when he saw the spread on the table, he couldn't help but lose appetite.

After the food was set on the table, Gellar gave Billy and Zhao Hai a bow and said, "Please enjoy our food. If you need anything, just shake the bell on the table and someone will come and listen to your requests."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Thank you, Miss Gellar. The food looks delicious."

Gellar gave another bow and then seemed to have some words that she wanted to say. But in the end, she didn't say it and just turned around to leave. Zhao Hai noticed her hesitation so he smiled faintly and said, "Miss Gellar, wait. Do you have anything you want to say? Please, don't hesitate to tell us."

When Gellar heard Zhao Hai, she couldn't help but stop. She turned her head to Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, I just want to ask, why did the Great Elder and the Prince betray the Elf Race?"

Zhao Hai stared, he didn't think that Gellar would ask this question. He looked at Gellar and asked, "Why would Miss Gellar ask about this matter? What relationship does the Great Elder and the Prince have with you?"

Gellar's face paled slightly as she answered, "The Great Elder is my Grandmother while the Prince is my Father. If mister Zhao Hai knows the reason, please do tell me."

Zhao Hai and Billy stared, they didn't expect that the person in front of them was an Elven Princess. While looking at Gellar, Zhao

Hai couldn't help but sympathize with her, he sighed and said, "I have a guess, but it doesn't mean that it's true. It is highly possible that the Great Elder was a spy that was sent by the Radiant Church a long time ago."

Gellar was confused at what Zhao Hai said, this was because Zhao Hai said that the Great Elder was sent by the Radiant Church. This was completely different from the Great Elder betraying the Elven Race.

Zhao Hai looked at Gellar and continued, "There has been a long standing plan of the Church to abduct the children of major races and brainwash them, making loyal believers of the Radiant God. They will transform those children into people who would give everything for the Church's deity. After brainwashing those children, they would then send them back to their races, effectively infiltrating the races. I have come across a similar situation back in the Beastman Prairie. Therefore, I thought of the possibility of the Great Elder being one of these abducted children. As for Gaye, he is the son of the Great Elder, so it is possible that he was educated by the Great Elder from a very young age. But all of these are my guesses, I cannot assure you that it is real."

Gellar's face was quite pale while listening to Zhao Hai, she looked at the other party and said, "So Mister means that the Great Elder was taken away by the Radiant Church when she was young, then they sent her back after brainwashing. All of this just to deal with the Elven Race? However, why does the Great Elder seem extremely passionate in serving our race?"

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "There's nothing wrong about that. Since your race is extremely sealed off, there was no opportunity to send information back to the Radiant Church. Therefore, she did the other method, work hard and gain a high rank. After that, she would then get access to the core of the race and get more secrets to send in an opportune time."

Gellar and Billy nodded, this was a highly probable case. The

Great Elder was in a position above tens of thousands of Elves. If she wasn't discovered by the Supreme Elder, then the alliance would have failed. This was something that made spies extremely scary.

Gellar bowed to Zhao Hai and said, "I thank mister for dispelling my doubts. Then I wouldn't be disturbing Mister's meal any longer." Then she bowed towards Billy before turning around to leave.

After Gellar left Zhao Hai's place, she immediately looked for the Queen. Then she told the Queen about what Zhao Hai had told her. After listening, the Queen immediately thought that this wasn't a simple matter. So she immediately went to the Supreme Elder and told him.

After telling this to the Supreme Elder, the Supreme Elder's expression turned cold, then he turned to the Queen and said, "What do you plan to do next?"

The Queen replied, "I suspect that there are more spies aside from the Great Elder. The Great Elder had been in her position for many years, and she had also gained a lot of loyal followers that we need to deal with. I plan to send the Divine Artifact to Patriarch Zhao Hai today. If Patriarch Zhao Hai can really fix the Elven Bow, then the matter would be taken cared of easily. If he can't, then I'll have to ask the Supreme Elder to act. We must thoroughly check every Elf inside the tree."

The Supreme Elder nodded, "This is truly a matter that needs to be looked at. The Radiant Church's spies in our race need to be completely weeded out. Your Majesty, we should establish our alliance with Mister Zhao Hai as soon as possible. There are only benefits that we can get out of it. At the same time, have the Elves stop making artworks and have them make more weapons. In the fight against the Divine Race, artworks wouldn't be very useful."

The Queen nodded, then she turned around to leave. The

Supreme Elder sighed, he was worried about the future of the continent. The Divine Race has been preparing for tens of thousands of years. Their strike should be as swift as a thunderbolt, will the Continent be prepared for it?

Zhao Hai wasn't thinking about any of these right now. At this point, he was already finishing up the food along with Billy. To be honest, these Elven fruits and vegetables weren't completely unpalatable. However, they weren't very good as well, they were too bland. With no seasoning, there wasn't any taste to be amazed about.

On the other hand, the wine that the Eles made were very good. While the two were sitting and chatting, an announcement was suddenly heard, "Her Majesty has arrived!"

Zhao Hai and Billy stared, but they immediately stood up. At this time, the Elf Queen had her men open the door before she walked in.

The two immediately gave the Queen a salute, then the Queen returned the gesture and said, "Patriarchs, please sit down. I'm here to ask Mister Zhao Hai for help." Then she waved her hand as Gellar brought a longbow in.

This longbow was green, and seemed to be made out of a kind of crystal. It had a vine twining on its body and a single leaf on its top. On the other hand, the bowstring was something that Zhao Hai couldn't identify. It was not thick, and was even fairly transparent. If one wasn't paying attention, then they wouldn't notice its existence.

The Queen extended both of her hands and received the bow, then she lifted it towards Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, this is our Elven Race's Divine Artifact. We ask Mister to try and fix it."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "I will certainly offer my help. I ask Your Majesty to rest assured. However, it would require an evening's time. By tomorrow, Your Majesty would be able to know

if I was able to fix it or not. I also hope that Your Majesty sends word that nobody is to disturb me tonight.”

Naturally, there was no need for the Queen to decline. So she immediately replied, “Mister, don’t worry. I will have people assigned to keep the surroundings peaceful. Patriarch Billy, I have arranged a separate room for you. What do you think?”

Billy understood what the Queen meant, she was afraid that Billy would disturb Zhao Hai. This was a natural worry, so Billy nodded and said, “I understand, then I shall take my leave.” The Queen expressed her gratitude to Billy before she lead the Dwarf Patriarch out of the room, leaving Zhao Hai along inside.

Zhao Hai didn’t immediately head to the Space, he just sat there and carefully examined the Elven Bow. The bow arm was made out of a kind of crystal, and it was evidently quite tough. On the other hand, the bowstring was not only hard to pull, it was also quite sharp to touch. It seems like if one wanted to use this bow, special techniques would need to be learned first.

After examining for some time and finding out nothing, Zhao Hai then took the Elven bow to the Space. The moment he entered the Space, a prompt was heard, “Damaged item detected, proceeding to repair it. Repair has been completed. Subduing the spirit. Unique Crystal has been discovered. Extracting the crystals properties. Improving the host’s crystallization technique.”

Chapter 661 – The Radiant Church’s Backup

When Zhao Hai heard this prompt, he couldn’t help but stare. He didn’t think that the Elven Bow would actually give him some advantages.

However, the surprise didn’t end there. At this moment, another prompt was heard. “Thread made out of special material has been detected. The silk thread was made out of variant spider silk. It is very tough. Extracting the silk’s properties. Enhancing the Host’s combat suit. Cuffs has been added to the suit, these cuffs can spew out web in order to tangle the enemy.”

Zhao Hai was shocked this time, wasn’t this function too familiar? Wasn’t this Spiderman’s ability?

Zhao Hai shook his head and didn’t think about it anymore. In any case, the Space was already quite bizarre, so it would not be surprising for these things to happen. The Space itself has Spiderman’s suit, so it wasn’t strange that its function was added to Zhao Hai’s own suit.

Zhao Hai lowered his head and looked at the Elven Bow. He wanted to see what its Artifact Spirit looked like. At this time, a green light suddenly flashed from the bow as a person slowly floated out of it. This figure was very different from Iron Hammer and Bloody War. The figure was actually lying down, when her appearance completely materialized, she yawned and then slowly sat up, just like how an ordinary person would act after being woken up from sleep.

Zhao Hai was curiously looking at this Artifact Spirit. She wasn’t wearing the traditional Elven Robes, but was wearing a tight fitting suit instead. This gave her a martial aura. At this moment, the Artifact Spirit was also looking at Zhao Hai.

The Artifact Spirit sized Zhao Hai up before she bowed and said, “Green Vine has seen Master Zhao Hai.”

Zhao Hai was sizing her up as well, “You’re called Green Vine?”

The Artifact Spirit nodded, “Yes Master, I was named Green Vine.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Just call me Young Master. What are you made of? Why do you seem to be different from Iron Hammer and Bloody War?”

The Artifact Spirit smiled faintly and said, “Answering the Young Master’s question. Bloody War and Iron Hammer are made in Ark Continent. When their masters became God-rank, they were then brought to the Divine Realm, only then did they become Divine Artifacts. On the other hand, I was made in the Divine Realm, so I was made using the materials there. This made me different from Bloody War and Iron Hammer.”

Zhao Hai nodded, no wonder he didn’t get any benefits when fixing Iron Hammer and Bloody War. So Green Vine was actually made in the Divine Realm.

After this thought passed through his mind, Zhao Hai’s heart was suddenly moved. If Green Vine being made in the Divine Realm gave Zhao Hai benefits, then does it mean that there were materials in the Divine Realm that can’t be found in the Ark Continent? If that was really the case, then it would be great to visit the Divine Realm to take a look.

Levelling the Space in the Ark Continent had become very difficult. The most recent boost of level that it had received was from the lotus, but that thing has some sort of a relationship with the Demon Realm. It seem like if Zhao Hai wanted to upgrade his Space, then he would need to visit either the Demon Realm or the Divine Realm.

Zhao Hai looked at Green Vine and said, “Green Vine, are Divine Artifacts divided into levels?”

Green Vine nodded and said, “We are indeed graded. Iron

Hammer and Bloody Ware are low-level artifacts. I am classified as an intermediate-level artifact. There are also high-level artifacts. High-level artifacts are very formidable, but they were also difficult make. Because of that, there were very few high-level artifacts in the Divine Realm.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he asked Green Vine about the previous war against the Divine Race. What Green Vine said was the same as Iron Hammer and Bloody War’s testimonies, so there was no need to ask for more details. After that, Zhao Hai instructed Green Vine to protect the Elf Race and also to refrain from calling him Young Master when they leave the Space.

Since Green Vine had surrendered to the Space, then she would naturally follow Zhao Hai’s orders. Then Zhao Hai sat inside the living room and opened the monitor. He wanted to see the current developments in the Elven Race.

After having rested inside the Space, Zhao Hai returned to his room in the morning. After opening the door, Zhao Hai noticed that there were people outside. Zhao Hai wasn’t surprised about this since this was just the Queen’s procedure. She was afraid that people would come and disturb Zhao Hai.

At first, Zhao Hai thought that this method was unnecessary. However, when he thought about the situation yesterday, he thought otherwise. There were still some traitors among the Elves. If it weren’t for the Queen ordering martial law, then they would’ve already approached Zhao Hai’s room.

At this point, Zhao Hai was no longer worried about the rebels. Now that he had fixed the Elven Bow, everything would be taken care of.

Divine Artifacts were truly mysterious enough that they can detect traitors among their race. This was something that wasn’t unique to Green Vine. Bloody War and Iron Hammer were capable of doing this as well.

After seeing Zhao Hai open the door, the people outside immediately loosened their expression. Gellar, who was the leader this time, walked forward and gave Zhao Hai a bow, “Mister, you’re out. Was Mister successful?”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and then handed the Elven bow over to Gellar and said, “I’ve succeeded, please take it back to Her Majesty.”

Gellar stared at the bow as it was transferred to her own hands. Then she looked at Zhao Hai and said, “In behalf of the Elves, I express our gratitude. Mister must be tired, please have a good rest. I shall have someone prepare you a meal. When Mister wants to eat, just send words and they will serve it.”

Zhao Hai nodded, “Thank you, Miss Gellar. Then I shall be taking my rest.” He gave Gellar a salute before he returned to his room and closed the door.

Actually, Zhao Hai had already rested yesterday, so he didn’t need any more rest. He just wanted to show that fixing the bow took a lot of effort, so he pretended to be tired and returned to his room. After that he entered the Space and opened the monitor to see how the Elves react to the fixed Elven Bow.

Gellar took the Elven Bow to the hall where the Queen was waiting for news. The Queen went sleepless throughout the night as well. At this moment, Gellar came in, holding the Elven Bow on her hands. The Queen couldn’t help but stand up and looked at Gellar. Gellar immediately gave her report, “Mother, he succeeded. Mister Zhao Hai succeeded!”

The Queen looked at the Elven Bow and then let out a long breath. At the same time, her two eyes shined as she quickly arrived in front of Gellar and respectfully received the Elven Bow. Then she turned around to leave the hall, she needed to see the Supreme Elder.

In the Elven Race, the Supreme Elder wasn’t the only 9th rank

expert. There were other 9th rank elders as well, there were more than 20 of them.

Today, all of these 9th rank elders convened. They attached great importance to the news of whether the Elven Bow has been fixed or not.

The Queen took the bow to the cavern where the Supreme Elder and the others were. This tree cavern was very big, but there were no decorations inside, only a large empty space. Inside the cavern were several straw mats where the various 9th rank elders were sat down.

The Queen stopped before these 9th ranks and then respectfully bowed and said, "Reporting to the Supreme Elder, Mister Zhao Hai had fixed the Divine Artifact."

Then the Supreme Elder's voice was heard, "Your Majesty, please come forward." The Queen complied, and she took the Elven Bow forward.

There was a bow frame in the middle of this huge cavern and the Supreme Elder was standing right next to it. After the Queen arrived by the Supreme Elder, she immediately placed the Elven Bow on the frame before she respectfully drew back to the sides.

Among these 9th rank elders, the oldest one of them went forward. She was also wearing the same green robe while she had a magic staff on her hand. She bowed towards the Elven Bow and said, "We request Sir Artifact Spirit to come out!"

Then Green Vine slowly came out of the bow. She looked at the Elves and nodded, "Good, I have slept for many years, it's good to see that the strength of the Elves has recovered. Mister Zhao Hai already told me of what's happening outside. It seems like the Divine Race is planning to attack once again. I also told Mister Zhao Hai that we would be making an alliance with them to jointly deal with this enemy. Does anyone have any other opinions?"

The Elves present doesn't dare to oppose, all of them simultaneously said, "We don't dare, we follow what the Divine Artifact decided."

Green Vine nodded, then she knit her brows and said, "Why do I feel the aura of the enemy in the bodies of our clansmen? What is this all about?"

When she heard Green Vine, the oldest Supreme Elder replied, "Your Grace, this is the Radiant Church's conspiracy. They have brainwashed some Elven children and sent them to infiltrate the Elven Race. We had already caught two spies yesterday. However, we weren't able to find the others. We ask Sir Artifact Spirit to help us in weeding them out."

Green Vine nodded, then she looked at the Supreme Elder and said, "This isn't a problem. But after discovering them, what did you do?"

Then the Supreme Elder hesitated for a moment before replying, "Your Grace, we waster their cultivation. What is Your Grace' opinion on this?"

Green Vine actually snorted and said, "Stupid! These people cannot remain alive. I can feel the aura of the Divine Realm on their bodies. It seems like they weren't just simple spies sent by the Radiant Church. Their bodies have been altered using a special method, sealing God-realm energy within them, something that all of you cannot detect. As long as a Divine Race expert arrives, they can just activate that seal and release the energy inside. That explosion would have the same power as a 9th rank expert. So how could you just leave them be? If the Divine Race came and released that energy, then what would you do? Have you thought about this?"

Green Vine's words made the expressions of these Supreme Elders change. They didn't think that the Radiant Church would have this kind of backup plan. Even if the rebels' cultivation were

wasted, they can still explode, at that point, the Elves would be doomed.

The Supreme Elders were sweating at the thought of this. The oldest Supreme Elder immediately bowed to Green Vine and said, “Sir Artifact Spirit, we know what we should do! ”

Chapter 662 – Preparation Begins

Zhao Hai was currently sitting on a boat while looking at the beast skin scroll on his hand. In fact there was nothing special about the scroll. The only change in it was the Elven Race's mark.

The Elven Race had proceeded with their operation, weeding out more than 100 spies. This made the Elf Queen furious. She didn't think that there would be this much rebels inside her kingdom. The Queen was terrified of the thought of these people exploding with the might of 9th rank experts.

At this point, Zhao Hai had acquired a new status, the Elven Race's Foreign Elder. But Zhao Hai didn't care much about it. Now that the alliance with the Elves have been dealt with, then the next plan can start. It was time to take care of the Dragon Race!

Billy was right by Zhao Hai's side when he read the scroll. Billy couldn't help but laugh and said, "Now you've become a Foreign Elder of the Elves. I believe that you have the most unique status in the whole history of the Ark Continent."

Zhao Hai smiled and said, "All of it was due to the current situation. Otherwise, I wouldn't have been able to gain these many titles. I can say that things have gone smoothly this time. Not only were we able to help the Elves fix their artifact, we also helped them weed out their traitors. Now we can proceed to the next step."

Billy looked at Zhao Hai and said, "The Dragon Race?"

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Right, the Dragons, they need to be eliminated. Their current position is very significant to the state of the Continent. We can't wait for too long, they need to be gone. I have this feeling of dread, it's as if something is about to happen in the continent. You must be careful."

Billy nodded and said, "Be relieved, we will be extremely careful."

The same applies to you as well, be sure to take care of yourselves. After all, you're facing against the Dragon Race."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "I'm going to be fine. I can assure you of this." Billy was also quite aware of Zhao Hai's methods, so he was not that worried about his security.

Five days later, they had finally arrived back at Dwarf Mountain. After resting with the Dwarves for a day, Zhao Hai left. He was ready to deal with the Dragons.

Although Zhao Hai had been with the Elves and Dwarves in the past few days, he was not being idle. He had Cai'er control the Blood Ghost Staff to monitor the Dragons inside Lyon Empire.

Aside from Lyon Empire, Zhao Hai also had the staff fly towards Accra Mountain to see the situation there.

Dragons were claimed to be invincible by the Continent, so Zhao Hai didn't want to just go in without ample preparations. Fortunately, as long as the map has been collected to the Space, then the Space can monitor the Lyon Empire and the Accra Mountain at any time.

For many years, there were hardly any Dragon sightings in the continent. All this time, the Dragons have stayed inside Accra Mountain, treating it like their own kingdom. They also had a lot of magic beast and lesser dragon subordinates. Dealing with them would be as hard as attacking any other Empire.

Zhao Hai's plan was to first head to the Lyon Empire and deal with the Dragons that were stationed there. After that, then he'll go on an attack Accra Mountain.

Zhao Hai didn't inform the other nations about his plans and only revealing it to the Dwarves, Fishmen, Elves, and the Beastmen.

Zhao Hai wasn't afraid of any leaks pertaining to these races, this was because the numbers of the traitors in them were very few.

Moreover, some of them also have their Divine Artifacts that can detect any rebels among their race. At the same time, it would be impossible for the Radiant Church to infiltrate the Fishman Race. This was because their situation was very special. Even if 9th ranks were to go there, then people would immediately spot them. It was impossible for any Radiant Church spy to evade the eyes of the Mermaid Clan.

When Zhao Hai left the Dwarf mountain, he immediately went to the Space. In the past few days, Laura and the others had been paying attention to the movement of the Dragons. Although the Dragons had controlled the entire Lyon Empire, they still needed to get the recognition of its citizens. Although Humans were easily tempted to go against the Lyon Imperial Clan, it was still quite difficult for them to accept the Dragons as their rulers.

The Dragons were truly formidable, but one shouldn't forget that in Human eyes, they were still magic beasts. It was impossible for Humans to accept a magic beast to be their rulers.

But it was clear that the Dragons were prepared for this. They already controlled a lot of Noble clans, and with the help of these clans, even if the people weren't comfortable in being ruled by Dragons, they still weren't able to make a fuss.

There were 40 Dragons in the Lyon Empire's capital. Ten of these 40 Dragons were 9th ranks while the other 30 were just a tad bit below. But even if these 30 weren't 9th ranks, they can still fly, so their threat was no less than the 9th ranks'.

Beside these 40 Dragons, the Lyon Empire's capital also had about 5 thousand lesser dragons guarding it. These lesser dragons also had their own magic beast mounts. The fighting power of the lesser dragons were around 6th or 7th rank while their magic beasts were 6th ranks. This force was also something that one shouldn't take lightly.

In order to ensure his success, Zhao Hai spent some time in the

Space to fully map the territory of the Lyon Empire. He wanted to see if there were other Dragons in other parts of the Empire.

Sure enough, in the Lyon Empire's border with the Rosen Empire and Buddha Empire, Dragons were present inside the towns as well. They might now be numerous, but their lesser dragon army were still able to drive away the attacks of the Rosen and Buddha Empire.[1]

After Zhao Hai returned to the Space, he immediately called Kun and Green over to the Space. Then together they discussed how to deal with the Dragon Race.

Zhao Hai showed the full map of the Lyon Empire, then he turned to Green and Kun, "Grandpa Green, Grandpa Kun, the Dragons have garrisons on these places. Which of them should we attack first?"

Zhao Hai had referred to four spots, these four spots were indicated by green dots on the monitor. They were the Lyon Empire's garrison, the Rosen Empire's border, the Buddha Empire's border, and the surroundings of Accra Mountain where a lesser dragon army of 2000 was also situated in.

Green looked at the map and thought for a moment before saying, "With the number of troops in our hand, I think it wouldn't be hard to attack multiple of them at the same time. I think we should separate our troops and attack the borders of the Rosen and Buddha Empires first. Eliminating those two armies would only take about one evening. Moreover, we need to make sure that those Dragons don't escape. After that, we'll wipe out the Dragons in the Lyon Empire's capital. Lastly we'll have our army charge towards Accra Mountain."

Kun nodded and said, "I agree to Green's plan. Our undead troops are in high enough number that even the Fishmen wouldn't be able to make a move. So it should be fine if we split them up. Moreover, we have the advantage of being able to increase our

numbers the more we fight. The only thing we need to do now is to inform the Fishman and have them destroy the Radiant Church's navy so that they wouldn't be able to send any help towards the Dragons. I'm not too worried about the Dragons in the capital, after all, we have the capability to completely clean them up. At the same time, those loyal to the Lyon Empire has already been eliminated when the Dragons took control. Therefore, those who were left behind were those Nobles that sided with the Dragons."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "It's time to resolve the problem in Lyon Empire. Then it is decided, tomorrow we will act."

Kun nodded. After the Space has been upgraded, it was now possible to place an army anywhere on the map. This made their tactics much more flexible. However, Zhao Hai still wanted to make a quick move. It was necessary to remove the Dragons before the Nobles were able to act. It would be better if they didn't get into a fight with the army of the Nobles.

In all honesty, Zhao Hai really didn't want to fight those Noble armies. In any case, they were still Humans. Later on, when the war happens, they may even be another force that can resist the Divine Race.

After completing the plan, Zhao Hai rested well. However, Green and the others were still staring at the screen. They wanted to see what the Rosen and the Buddha Empires were doing.

Since they weren't aware of Zhao Hai's plans, the Rosen and Buddha Empire didn't have any movements. They were still fully alert against the Dragons. They wouldn't dare take the Dragons too lightly.

The day passed quickly while the people in the continent continued to live their peaceful lives. The army of the Dragons were also stationed in their camp. They weren't afraid of the Rosen and Buddha Empire. In their minds, as soon as their identities as Dragons were revealed, no one in the continent would dare to

attack them.

The Dragons had always been aloof while in Accra Mountain. Even the lesser dragons had found themselves being able to move sideways in the mountain.[2]

Due to being subjected to this environment, the lesser dragons had become quite arrogant. Although their current population wasn't a lot, their status in the Lyon Empire was actually very high. Even ordinary lesser dragons would dare to be disrespectful towards the Nobles of the Empire, they wouldn't even take the effort to give a salute. There was needless to say when they meet a commoner. In the eyes of these lesser dragons, these commoners shouldn't even be considered people. In the few days that they had been in charge of Lyon Empire, there were already several thousand people who were killed for no reason. It was basically a massacre.

Chapter 663 – Taking Two Cities at Night

Aya was a lesser dragon. He is a descendant between a Dragon and an 8th rank shadow leopard. He can also assume the form of a Human, but his strength was in his shadow leopard form.

Shadow leopards were the best assassins of the jungle. There was hardly anyone who can discover them when stealthed. Even Dragons admired their might.

When Aya is in his shadow leopard form, then his fighting strength would be on par with genuine shadow leopard, maybe even more. This was because he wasn't only carrying the genes of a shadow leopard, he had the genes of a Dragon as well.

However, Aya's status wasn't very high among the other lesser dragons, he was only a Junior Captain. At this moment he was guarding the Lyon Empire against the Buddha Empire's army.

Aya's cavalry unit was stationed in the Lyon Empire's most important fortress that faced the Buddha Empire. The Buddha Empire had stationed 50 thousand people here while the Lyon Empire used to station their 50 thousand magic cavalry unit as well.

Now, it was Aya who was assigned to this post. But he wasn't here mainly to defend against the Buddha Empire's attack. Aya believes that the Buddha Empire wouldn't dare to attack them. Aya was stationed here mainly to defend against the original army of the Lyon Empire as well as those civilians that wanted to escape towards the Buddha Empire.

Aya's recent days have been good. Although the original cavalry of the Lyon Empire was very strong, their magic beast mounts were all acquired in Accra Mountain. And since these magic beasts were under the rule of the Dragons, the Lyon Empire's mounts would naturally listen to the Dragons' words. Because of this, the Lyon Empire's army had found themselves to be cavalries without

mounts.

In addition to the Dragons stationed here, Aya and the others were descendants of Dragons as well. So their status was much higher than those magic beast mounts. When those magic beast mounts saw them, they immediately wore smiles on their faces, turning extremely polite. It can be said the Aya's life here was very much the same back in Accra Mountain.

Tonight, it was Aya's turn to become the night watch. But Aya thought that this was unnecessary, there simply was no need to do this. Aya didn't believe that the Buddha Empire would actually dare to attack them. He also didn't think that there would be any Lyon Empire rebellion. But since this was an order from the higher ups, he didn't have any other choice but to listen.

Besides his first night, Aya always had a pot of liquor with him in his succeeding night shifts. There were side dishes present as well, so he was living quite an easy life.

Aya was very happy with his current situation. The Dragon Race had endured living in Accra Mountain for all these years. And this time, they had finally took control of a Human nation. Now, people were serving them every day. It was comfortable, nothing can compare to this bliss.

In Aya's mind, the Dragons should have already come out of the mountain and took control of the continent a long time ago. There was no need for them to endure in the mountain for many years.

Just after taking a sip of his liquor, Aya suddenly stopped. He raised his own ear, it seems like he had heard something. One must know that a shadow leopard's hearing was very strong. And since Aya had the genes of a shadow leopard, his hearing would naturally be strong as well.

Aya placed his wine glass down and quietly listened. He was right, there were very strange sounds. This sound wasn't the whistling of the wind, nor was it the rustling of leaves, it was a

sound that was made by people hurrying along.

Aya stared for a moment before he slowly stood up and looked towards the city, this was because the source of the sound was inside the walls. There was a night curfew, and every person that was caught would be executed for the crime of conspiracy.

Because of this, Aya felt strange, who would dare run in the middle of the night? He didn't think that it would be the Lyon Empire cavalry, they wouldn't dare since they knew that there was a Dragon in this city. This was equivalent to having 9th rank experts, so how could they rebel?

If it weren't the garrison, then was it commoners? Even them wouldn't dare. There was a restriction placed on the city, disallowing civilians to hold weapons. Even the act of hiding one would merit execution. These civilians were weaponless, so they wouldn't dare to rebel. So to which people do these footsteps belong to?

Aya decided to look at the direction of the sound. In addition to their superior hearing, shadow leopards were also gifted with the ability to see in the dark. Aya was sure that he could spot who it was.

Before long, shadows appeared on the streets of the city, and there were a lot of them. Aya's calm face immediately changed because these people were holding weapons in their hands. Aya knew that these people were enemies. Just as he was about fire an alarm, Aya suddenly felt a pain in his throat. Aya looked down and saw that a dagger had stabbed him on the neck. Before he blacked out, Aya can see blood spurting out of his neck. It was then that he knew that he was already dead. From start to finish, Aya wasn't able to see what the enemy looked like.

An undead assassin appeared behind Aya and supported his body. After placing Aya back on his chair, the undead immediately turned to look at another person.

Just as the undead assassin turned around, Aya, who was about to fall off of his chair, disappeared. Then he appeared once again. Aya moved his hands and feet to pick up his own swords before going back to his position on the wall. By now, Aya had become expressionless, his eyes stared straight and he wasn't breathing. Naturally, he had been turned into undead.

Zhao Hai's main goal was to deal with the Dragons, therefore, he didn't want to touch the original Lyon Empire cavalry. However, those lesser dragon cavalry weren't spared. All of the lesser dragons, magic beasts, as well as Dragons had become undead!

With the 9th rank strength of his undead, the sneak attack was completed without a fuss. If one were to ask the Lyon Empire garrison, then they would just tell you that the night went strangely smooth. Even the Dragons weren't able to respond before dying. Everything was silent, the magic beasts, lesser dragons, and Dragons had all disappeared.

The same situation happened on the border between the Lyon Empire and the Rosen Empire. The Dragons didn't place too much defenders on these two cities. Zhao Hai only sent 200 thousand undead to kill the defenders in silence. Zhao Hai's undead didn't even need to make any significant effort in order to succeed.

The night passed by with no issues. The next morning, the civilians and the garrison had found out that all magic beasts, lesser dragons, and Dragons had disappeared. Only blood can be spotted on the ground, the bodies were nowhere to be seen.

The garrison on these two cities were terrified. The blood on the floor were clearly from the magic beasts and lesser dragons. Even in the place where the Dragons rested, blood can be seen. However, there were no bodies anywhere, this made them very confused.

Among the garrison and the civilians were veterans in battle. From this scene, they can infer that there must have been a huge

army attack last night, targeting these magic beasts, lesser dragons, as well as the Dragons. From what they can see, it seems like the enemies were quite ruthless.

The garrison troops immediately got anxious, no matter which party did it, the garrison still wouldn't be able to escape taking the responsibility. They weren't in the Lyon Empire anymore, they were in Saint Dragon Empire. It was a nation that was ruled by Dragons, beings who didn't tolerate shortcomings and were very ruthless. Once they came to know that their subordinates had vanished, how could they be merciful to the garrison troops that survived?

The garrison had experienced first hand how cruel these lesser dragons and Dragons can be. Both the lesser dragons and Dragons simply don't see them as people. A lot of them had already died because of the indiscriminate slaughter that the Dragons had done. It would be strange if the garrison were to remain alive after all of this blows off.

The garrison was left not knowing what to do, some of the small soldiers had already sneaked away. On the other hand, the officers had no choice but to stay. They had their complete information in the capital. From their hometown to the names of their families were known. It was impossible for them to escape.

Of course, not all officers chose to stay. There were some who already had left their family behind to die. After all, they wouldn't be returning to Lyon Empire, they planned to live a whole new life in the Buddha Empire or the Rosen Empire.

Because of this, there were nobody in those two cities that reported what happened to the Dragons back at the capital. While they refrained from sending word, they were also buying Zhao Hai some time.

Zhao Hai had already sent word to the Fishmen the moment he attacked. While the Saint Dragon Empire's army asked for

reinforcements from the Radiant Empire, they would be delayed to the point where by the time they come back, the Dragons would have already been extinguished.

Zhao Hai, who had already cleaned two cities, didn't celebrate. This result was within his expectations. On the other hand, it would be impossible to do the same thing to the Lyon Empire's capital. There were just too many experts within the capital, and the Dragons haven't been able to control it for a long time, so everyone in the capital was on high alert. Faced with careful Dragons, the method of sneak attack was just impossible. Therefore, there was only one way to attack the capital, it was by storming it with an army!

But attacking the Lyon Empire's capital was not that easy. The Lyon Empire's capital was similar to the Rosen Empire's capital. On the outskirts of the city, noble castles had been erected. Gathering all of the soldiers here would amount to no less than 200 thousand people. At the same time, the capital's garrison would number to be 500 thousand. Among those 500 thousand were 200 thousand elite troops as well as 300 thousand heavy armor infantry. Additionally, there were also 5000 lesser dragons as well as 40 Dragons.

If this was just the case, then Zhao Hai can be assured that he would be able to take the capital in a short period of time. However, there were two bumps that Zhao Hai can see. First was the huge magical formation that protects the Lyon Empire. This formation had been in the capital for hundreds of years. If the Dragons didn't have people from the inside, then they wouldn't have been able to take the capital in such a short period of time.

Chapter 664 – Dark Creatures of the Underworld

The second reason was very simple. Near the Lyon Empire's capital city were four fortresses. These fortresses stand guard near the capital city. They weren't very far from the capital, it would only take a day for their troops to arrive by horse. In other words, Zhao Hai needed to take the capital in one day. If he failed to do so, then he would have to face both inside and outside attacks.

The four fortresses around the capital had 100 thousand troops each, all of them were cavalry. Although they weren't the most elite cavalry of the Empire, they were still quite problematic to face.

Naturally, Zhao Hai wasn't afraid of these cavalry units. He just didn't want to face them in combat. To be honest, Zhao Hai didn't have any good impression for these cavalry. When the Dragons attacked the Lyon Empire, they didn't do anything. After the establishment of the Saint Dragon Empire, they still remained as is while enjoying the same treatment as before. This shows that these people had already sold themselves to the Dragons.

Zhao Hai really wanted to kill these people, but the reason why he held back was the fact that these soldiers were only common soldiers of the Lyon Empire. Moreover, they weren't just born out of stone, they had their own family members. If Zhao Hai killed these soldiers, then these family members would definitely hate him. When the time comes, a chain reaction would happen, causing chaos in the Lyon Empire, adding trouble to the current situation.

Because of these conditions, Zhao Hai didn't want to get in a fight with the Dragons for a long time. It would be best if he were to take care of things fast.

This time, the method of sneak attack wouldn't work. This was

because ever since the Dragons had taken over the capital, they had enacted a curfew every night, and they also activated an alarm magic formation on the whole the capital during those times. This made it impossible for Zhao Hai to sneak in some assassins. Therefore, the only thing he could do was wait for the daylight before storming the capital.

After attacking the two fortresses, Zhao Hai prepared himself to attack the Lyon Empire's capital on the next day. However, since he still wasn't confident in his plans, he had decided to delay it for another day.

Zhao Hai and the others discussed what they would do and finally thought of a plan that Zhao Hai felt to be feasible.

After having rested for a day in the Space, Zhao Hai immediately began to prepare the attack. Him along with Green and the others were in the Space's living room, looking at the Lyon Empire's capital on the monitor.

The Lyon Empire's capital was not much worse than the Rosen Empire's capital. After all, the Empire was still the second strongest in the continent. At this moment, there were 40 Dragons in the capital altogether. However, these Dragons weren't grouped up, they were scattered all throughout the city. It might seem like they were dispersed in order to protect the populace, but they were doing this so that they can maintain control.

These Dragons weren't weak, even if Zhao Hai wanted to use his previous method then it would prove impossible. There was a warning formation in place.

The Lyon Empire's capital always had its warning formation enabled, however, the formation wasn't as strict in the day compared to at night. It would only be activated in places where the Dragons were staying. This was exactly why Zhao Hai cannot attack in the night. Zhao Hai wasn't worried about the Lyon Empire's protective shield at all since the Space can just place the

undead directly inside the city. However, these warning formations were the annoying ones, they simply cannot be bypassed.

At this moment, the sun had just risen, so the gates were still shut. Those commoners that wanted to do business in the capital were still barred from entering. This was also the best opportunity for Zhao Hai to attack. If these people were already in the city at the time of the attack, then they might become victims of the crossfire. But if Zhao Hai attacks before they enter the gate, then these civilian could still run in the opposite direction.

Zhao Hai looked at the time, it was close to the moment where the city's gates would open. He turned to Green and said, "Grandpa Green, it's time to start."

Green nodded and said, "Let's begin. We need a total of 50 cubes. Young Master, be careful in controlling them."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he waved his hand and launched his attack! At this time, the skies of the Lyon Empire's capital had suddenly turned dark. Then a large patch of dark cloud appeared. The black clouds kept rolling, making it seem like rain was going to pour soon.

But what confused the people in the city was the fact that they couldn't hear the sounds of a thunderclap. They also didn't feel any kind of wind that would be associated with such a cloud.

It was the garrison troops that felt something wrong first. They knew that this wasn't any simple dark cloud, so they couldn't help but grab their weapons.

At this time, in the middle of the cloud, a thunderous voice can be heard, "Shameless Dragon Race, since you dared to attack a Human city, then you shall be paying your sins with blood!"

As this statement fell, the dark cloud suddenly moved, turning into 50 smaller dark clouds. At this point, even idiot would notice

that something was wrong about these dark clouds. Before long, the entire capital had turned into chaos. Those people who were about to leave for work immediately abandoned everything as they ran back home with the quickest speed before locking themselves up inside.

The soldiers immediately became nervous, at this time, a garrison commander suddenly shouted, "Quick, inform the generals. Open the protective formation! Sound the alarm! Give way for the Mages!"

Along with the commander's orders, the city's magical formation was immediately activated. Fortunately for them, the formation had just been retracted, so it was very convenient to activate it once more. When the formation came into life, a ray of yellow suddenly flashed as a hemispherical dome covered the entire capital.

However, only after the formation was placed did the soldiers notice something wrong. The formation had indeed been activated, but the dark clouds were actually included inside. This must be the reason why the garrison felt strange, the dark clouds were actually very close to the ground.

Seeing that the protective formation became useless, the soldiers didn't panic immediately. At this time, the Mages that guarded the city had arrived at the wall. When they saw the dark clouds, a Light Mage's face suddenly paled as he shouted, "Light Mages of all ranks, use light magic to attack. This is a Dark Mist spell of the Dark Mages!"

When this Light Mage shouted, the other Light Mages immediately took their stance and started to cast light magic towards the dark clouds.

Now that the Radiant Church and the Dragon Race had made an alliance, the Radiant Church had sent a lot of Light Mages to help the Dragons. Therefore, there were a lot of Light Mages defending

the capital city right now.

As expected, the Light Mages had become useful. When their magic hit the dark clouds, they immediately started to slowly disappear. This made the garrison troops cheer.

However, the Light Mages actually think that there was no point in celebrating. They were people who completely understood Dark Mages. They knew that the Dark Mist spell was just a 1st rank magic, it had zero attack power. Its biggest use was in blocking the enemy's sight. Therefore, dispelling the dark clouds wasn't something remarkable.

As the dark mist slowly dissipated, the cheering garrison suddenly found themselves to be like ducks who were caught by the neck, they were suddenly jolted into silence.

This was because they saw battle formations in place of the dark clouds. This battle formation was very strange, it was because it was structured into a cube and was floating in mid air. It looks like every single cube floating in mid air is the same. The peculiar thing was that every unit in these cubes were composed of undead creatures.

Just as the Dark Mist vanished, the battle formations suddenly moved. Their gradually accelerated as they went straight to specific points in the city.

When they saw these flying formations, the garrison troops' complexion suddenly changed. This was because those points were places where the Dragons were resting in. It seems like the other party came completely prepared.

At this time, the voice came once again, "To the garrison troops, listen. I came this time to deal with the Radiant Church and the Dragons. Since they shamelessly united to usurp the Lyon Empire, I am going to eliminate all of them. I hope you won't participate in the battle, otherwise, you will definitely be killed."

The garrison troops looked at the flying figures in the sky. Although they weren't that strong, as long as they are from the Ark Continent, then they are aware what being able to fly meant. Aside from flying magic beasts, all other flying beings were 9th rank experts. Even if they haven't heard of flying undead before, they knew that these undead were going to be trouble if they were provoked. Their ability to maintain a formation alone was enough to convince the garrison of how formidable they were. Additionally, those who commanded these undead were even more frightening.

At the same time, the garrison also found out that the voice wasn't lying. Those flying undead were indeed specifically targeting the Dragons. Their flight direction was towards the places where the Dragons were resting in or the places where the lesser dragons were. None of the flying undead were heading towards the place where the garrison troops were.

The lead Light Mage who commanded the other Light Mages was very pale right now. To be honest, even he couldn't remember reading about flying undead. In the history of the continent, the strongest undead that was spotted had the strength of 6th rank. The strongest creature summoned by a Dark Mage was not an undead, but instead it was a creature of the dark that came from the Underworld. This creature was extremely powerful. If one was a high-level Dark Mage, they can use a method of sacrifice in order to summon these 9th rank creatures. However, the requirements to summon such a creature was extremely high as well. After the summoning, their life force would be heavily affected. Moreover, there were also cases where the summoned dark creature turned against its own summoner.

Chapter 665 – Easily Accomplished

Although he had never heard of flying undead before, this didn't hinder his judgement. He was sure that the strengths of these undead were surely extraordinary. Because of this, he decided to fight, the other party already stated that he was here in order to deal with the Dragons and the Radiant Church. It was for certain that Light Mages like him weren't going to be let off.

When he thought of this, the Light Mage immediately commanded loudly, "Don't be afraid of them. Their display is no more than deception. There is no way that they are 9th rank undead. Everyone, attack!"

But just as he shouted, he suddenly felt a pain in his chest. He lowered his head to look only to see the tip of a sword that was slowly being pulled back. With great difficulty, he turned his head and saw a black-clothed undead. As the undead slowly withdrew its rapier, the Light Mage can swear that the undead was grinning at him.

Bang! A noise suddenly sounded at the side of the Light Mage. He took effort in turning his head and found out that all of the Light Mages on the wall had an undead right behind them, and that those Light Mages were killed as well.

"We're finished!" This was the Light Mage's last thought.

The defenders on the wall were all startled when they saw these undead that just suddenly appeared. They wanted to attack but found themselves shaking. Even their weapons seemed to be shaking, not wanting to make an attack.

These undead assassins turned to look at the soldiers, then with a flash, their bodies floated in the air where they drifted towards something. Before long, more and more undead floated up from the walls before forming a cube, then it turned around and flew towards the city.

The soldiers on the walls were relieved. At this moment, the previous voice sounded once again, "I'm saying this again. We only came to deal with the Dragons and the Radiant Church. For the others, as long as you don't make a move, then we won't hurt you. If you resist, then we will execute you immediately."

The soldiers looked at one another and didn't make a move. To be honest, these soldiers didn't have a strong sense of belonging to the Dragons. They still take themselves as people of the Lyon Empire. After all, the Lyon Imperial Family had been ruling the empire for more than a thousand years.

Since nobody took the lead, nobody made a move. Even the officers didn't dare to make a move, they don't want to suddenly get stabbed by a rapier. So they decided to behave themselves.

At this moment, a roar was suddenly heard inside the city. Along with this initial roar, more Dragon roars can be heard from other parts of the city. The garrison troops knew that this was the sign that the Dragons have awoken. Their faces couldn't help but pale, they didn't know what to do. The Dragons were extremely formidable in their eyes, but the strength of these undead were terrifying as well. They didn't know which side to pick.

With the roar of the Dragons, all of them immediately took to the skies, covering the skies of the capital with their hulking figures. Those who were timid couldn't help but kneel on the ground, shaking.

But the garrison soon discovered that although the Dragons have appeared, they were immediately met with an attack from the flying undead. Although the group of undead formed a cube, they were still smaller than the Dragons. But at the same time, the cube of undead was more flexible than the Dragons, so when the Dragons appeared, all of them immediately went to clash with flying beasts.

In their process of flight, the formation immediately changed.

Every cube formation transformed into a giant scorpion as it clashed with the Dragons.

The Dragons were also keen to meet the enemies. In the eyes of these Dragons, the undead were just like ants. They were thinking that the undead would just need to be slapped a few times before they were taken care of.

However, the moment they exchanged blows, the Dragons immediately found their mistake. They thought that the Undead were just flying because of a special spell by their Dark Mage, it was impossible for these undead to have 9th rank strength. This was because a 9th rank Undead hasn't been spotted in the continent before.

But in this exchange, the Dragons discovered that the undead weren't pretending, they really had 9th rank strength, they were 9th ranks!! This startled the Dragons.

The bodies of the Dragons were tough, an 8th rank Dragon can be compared to a Human 9th rank. At the same time, 9th rank Dragons had bodies that were extremely close to being invincible. This was exactly why the Dragons were known to be invincible.

However, even Dragons would find it impossible to withstand the attacks of several hundred 9th ranks. 9th rank Dragons might be able to withstand it, but those 8th ranks certainly couldn't. Just as those 8th ranks clashed with the undead, they began to fall one by one.

The first dragon to fall cried out pitifully before it was knocked down by the undead. Then a clump of dark mist wrapped the Dragon before it turned into a Bone Dragon. After that, the Bone Dragon rose to the sky and joined the fight to slaughter the remaining Dragons.

The garrison troops that were on the wall saw everything that happened. They couldn't believe what they were seeing. The almighty Dragons were actually taken down and even turned into

undead. This development was completely out of their imagination. The weapons of some of them had unconsciously fallen to the ground, however, none of them were able to notice it at all.

Forty Dragons, ten of them fell first and became Bone Dragons who joined the slaughter. Before long, the 40 Dragons had been reduced to 10. These ten Dragons were the strong 9th ranks. However, their situation had turned dangerous. With the addition of the Bone Dragons, the defenses of these 9th rank Dragons began to crack.

The suddenly, among the ten 9th rank Dragons, one of them screamed and fell from the sky. This scream smashed through the hearts of the garrison like a huge hammer. At this point, any rebellious thought that they had were completely erased. Those who still had weapons on their hands immediately threw them away as though they were venomous snakes. All of them were staring at the skies with a pale complexion.

But these garrison troops were completely unaware that in the city's lesser dragon compound, a massacre was happening. All of the lesser dragons and magic beasts were eradicated. At the same time, Undead were also blocking the exits of the army barracks, killing all those who wanted to resist. Additionally, when these soldiers saw that the Dragons had started to fall, their thoughts of resisting were gone. Unexpectedly, the capital had calmed down after only a short time. On the other hand, an army had formed outside the capital. There were Nobles who wanted to enter the capital in order to help. However, all of them were blocked by the city's protective formation. The Nobles even shouted to the garrison, ordering them to deactivate the formation. But at this time, there was no garrison soldier that would dare to make a move. They just witnessed the Dragons being slaughtered as though they were chickens. If these people needlessly moved, then they would be like cockroaches that would be stepped on.

Zhao Hai calmly witnessed the battle outside. Laura and the others were sitting right beside Zhao Hai. This time, the battle plan was left to Lizzy, Megan, Green, and Kun. They had found out that the strength of the undead would be expressed to its full potential when it was in the Fishman's cube formation. They planned to deal with the Dragons and the lesser dragons at the fastest speed. Once the Dragons fell, the other people in the Lyon Empire would naturally stop their actions.

This time, if they wanted to kill the Dragons, then they needed to do it in front of the soldiers. Only in this way can they stand up and go against the Nobles of the Lyon Empire. At the same time, it was also to inform the Nobles that the Dragons weren't the invincible beings that the legends had stated.

From the time where the black clouds appeared up until the end of the battle, no more than three hours has passed. Forty Dragons, 5 thousand lesser dragons, nearly 100 thousand magic beasts, nearly 1 thousand people from the Radiant Church had fallen. Additionally, there were also 10 thousand defenders, 30 nobles, and 20 generals who participated in resisting. All of them were promptly killed by Zhao Hai and turned into undead. Although they were turned into the undead, their blood still flowed in the streets, painting it blood red. Especially the blood of the Dragons, there were whole residences that were turned red just by being splashed by draconic blood. The residents didn't dare to come out of their house or even take a single step out of their door.

The fight also ruined about 200 private residences. It killed about 87 civilians while injuring 302. But these ruined residences were immediately fixed by the undead. The injured civilians were also healed by some undead Light Mages. The undead also visited the houses of those who were affected and gave each of them a bag of coins containing no less than 1000 pieces of gold inside.

After three hours, the entire Lyon Empire's capital had turned calm. There were no fights that happened nor was there any other

disturbance. The garrison stayed in their own barracks, nobody dared to take action.

At this time, the undead that just slaughtered the dragons were forming a huge cube in the air. The Dragons, lesser dragons, and the others that were killed had also become a part of this formation. Some courageous citizens opened their windows and looked at the huge formation in the air. They were waiting for their unknown fate.

Then suddenly, the formation suddenly gave way to a red mansion. This red mansion was shackled to a Dragon as it slowly appeared in front of the formation. Then the mansion's door opened as a man came out of it.

This person was very young and wore a Dark Mage's robe. He looked extremely ordinary along with his average looking face. However, nobody dared to underestimate this young man. Everyone knew that this person was the one who controlled the undead!

Chapter 666 – Officially Declaring War

Ritchie was a Lyon Empire Merchant and was a marine trader. His business was quite well known in the Lyon Empire.

However, in the recent days, Ritchie had come to find that the changes in the Lyon Empire was beyond his understanding. First, there were the Dragons, who, with the cooperation of the Nobles, suddenly broke through the Empire and slaughtered the Lyon Imperial Family. Then the Dragons titled themselves to the the Royal Family of the Lyon Empire, renaming the Empire to Saint Dragon Empire.

Ritchie thought that the matter can only continue on like this. Everyone knew what the Dragons were. Moreover, the Buddha Empire, Rosen Empire, Aksu Empire, as well as the recently changed Radiant Empire, approved of the Dragon's rule of the Lyon Empire. In this case, the Lyon Empire would have to be ruled by the Dragons from here on out.

In Ritchie's mind, there was nothing wrong about this. Everyone knew how powerful the Dragons were, and at the same time, they had also allied themselves with the Radiant Church. Although Ritchie didn't agree to this alliance, he was just a Merchant, he didn't have any power to speak at all. And even if he did have the ability to voice his thoughts, he still wouldn't do it if he wanted to live under the rule of the Dragons.

In the beginning, he didn't find anything wrong. However, it didn't take a long time before Ritchie knew that being ruled by the Dragons was not a good idea. The Dragons think of themselves too highly and looked down on all the Humans. In the eyes of the Dragons, Humans were just like ants. Even the lesser dragons held the same mindset. In the recent days, the Empire had already lost thousands of innocent civilians. These civilians didn't do anything wrong, they just forgot to salute to the lesser dragons or even worse, killed just for fun.

Such overbearing attitude makes it impossible for the Dragons to gain popular sentiment. Ritchie had noticed that there were fewer and fewer people who did business in the capital. Even small Nobles didn't dare to go out of their houses. Feasts and ballrooms disappeared, nobody was in the mood of merrymaking.

The ones who gained the most with this situation were the Great Nobles. Although the Dragons ruled the Lyon Empire, they were still foreigners and were unfamiliar with how the Empire runs. Therefore, everything was handed over to the Great Nobles, giving them power that they had never experienced before.

This also made Ritchie scorn these Great Nobles. To be honest, Ritchie didn't like the rule of the Dragons. They were too tyrannical, and in addition to being foreign, they also treat everyone as their slaves. In order to gain more benefits, these Great Nobles prostrate themselves in front of the Dragons. This really made Ritchie feel shame in their behaviours.

But he was just a Merchant, famous and rich yet powerless. In fact, Ritchie was afraid that the Great Nobles would do something to him. But fortunately, Ritchie had friends among these Great Nobles, so he still managed to avoid their gaze.

This day, Ritchie was prepared to go on board his ship and go out of the capital. This was because he needed to take a trip at sea, heading towards Golden Island. He was a marine trader, and which marine trader would not head to Golden Island to do business? However, just as he was about to go out, something occurred.

Ritchie's courage wasn't small, he had been in the sea for many years. He has seen magic beasts, pirates, and people who died on the water. Naturally, he wasn't as afraid as the other people. This allowed him to look at all that happened with his two eyes.

It took some time after the battle until Ritchie had recovered his senses. He didn't think that the invincible Dragons would get taken down one by one. Moreover, they were also turned into Bone

Dragons after they fell.

Ritchie was standing inside the attic of his own residence as he looked out a small window and into the cube formation outside. His heart was beating loudly, he was so afraid. One must know that there were only very few individuals who were unafraid of the undead, especially powerful undead like these ones.

At this time, the undead formation suddenly moved as a Bone Dragon with a red mansion appeared in the sky. This mansion was completely red and seemed to be made out of a special crystal. Then a person walked out of the mansion. This person looks quite young and had a very average appearance. However, this person made Ritchie quite shocked, he knew who this person was!

This was the Lord of Golden Island, the Buda Clan's Patriarch, called to be the Continent's most powerful Dark Mage, the most romantically fortunate man, the richest Merchant, strongest Patriarch, and more strings of titles. This was Zhao Hai Buda!

Since he had been doing business in Golden Island, Ritchie was also given the opportunity to attend Zhao Hai's wedding. With his own two eyes, he had seen Zhao Hai get married to his wives. Ritchie was also quite awed by Zhao Hai's liquor. Therefore, how could he forget Zhao Hai's face.

Seeing Zhao Hai appear stunned Ritchie. He never thought that this powerful undead army was actually commanded by Zhao Hai.

Then Zhao Hai's mansion suddenly turned into his Staff as he walked out. He stood on the Bone Dragon's head as he looked calmly at the Lyon Empire's capital before he said, "Friends from the Lyon Empire, hello. I am Zhao Hai Buda, Buda Clan's Patriarch. The reason why I came with force this time is to deal with the Dragons. The Dragons are quite shameless to usurp a Human Empire and enslave the Human Race. For me, this act is simply unforgivable. Today, I, Zhao Hai Buda, in behalf of my Buda Clan, officially declare war against the entire Dragon Race.

Today, I have eliminated all the Dragons, lesser dragons, and Human traitors in the Lyon Empire's capital. Yesterday, I also eradicated the Dragon Race's forces on the border fortresses. And tomorrow, I shall charge towards Accra Mountains. Friends of the Lyon Empire, don't worry, I will not violate your safety. Do not be afraid!"

With the help of magic, Zhao Hai voice had reached every corner of the capital. Every citizen inside the city were listening to Zhao Hai's words. Many commoners opened their windows and looked up into the skies to see Zhao Hai.

Before long, people started to walk out of their houses, slowly increasing as they filled the streets. Zhao Hai calmly looked at the people and said, "I ask everyone to rest assured, I have no intention of encroaching into your Empire. I only came here to specially deal with the Dragon Race. I hope that the garrison troops will help me in keeping the capital's peace intact. I don't want any chaos to unfold. After that I shall open the capital's protective formation and see the Noble army outside. As for the Noble armies, I hope that you don't do any unnecessary movements unless you want to get hurt."

After that, Zhao Hai commanded his undead and slowly went towards the north gate. He also deactivated the formation as the yellow hemisphere began to disappear.

Then Zhao Hai appeared in front of the capital's northern gate. The Noble armies outside the city were actually trembling. Although the protective formation has been removed, they still didn't have the means to enter the city. Additionally, even if the walls had obstructed their vision, the protective shield couldn't block sounds. This allowed them to hear Zhao Hai's words very clearly. They also heard the noises inside and could vaguely guess what just happened.

After hearing that the Dragons and the lesser dragons were eliminated, the Great Nobles started to be afraid. The reason for

the Lyon Empire's fall had a direct relationship with them. If they haven't sided with the Dragons, then the Empire wouldn't have fallen to its current situation.

Zhao Hai bringing his undead and killing the Dragons meant that the Great Nobles had lost their backer. They were now waiting for Zhao Hai's judgement.

When they noticed Zhao Hai and his sky blotting undead army, the Great Nobles wanted to run away. Upon seeing the Bone Dragon beneath Zhao Hai feet, these Great Nobles knew that the capital's Dragons had already perished.

They understood why Zhao Hai was able to kill the Dragons in such a short time, it was because of those flying undead. However, what were those flying undead? Are they 9th ranks? Are there 9th rank undead? But even if they had their doubts, these Great Nobles still couldn't help but believe that these undead were 9th rank. Otherwise, they wouldn't have eliminated the Dragons in this short timeframe.

The Great Nobles found their own legs to be shivering, all of them were thinking, cr*p!

Zhao Hai stood on the head of his Bone Dragon and coldly looked at the Great Nobles. He couldn't help but snorted coldly and said, "You are traitors to Humanity for siding with the Dragons and helping them suppress our own race. I thought of executing all of you but I don't want to do it right now. I shall head to Accra Mountain tomorrow to have a decisive battle against the Dragons. At that time, I won't be here to manage things. Therefore, I hope that you can manage the Lyon Empire very well. Make sure to do things properly, otherwise, when I come back, I shall kill all of you!"

These Great Nobles didn't dare to say anything right now. They knew that if they resisted for even a small bit, then they would get killed immediately.

They knew what their values were in the eyes of Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai was not short of money, he was the most famous Merchant in the continent. Moreover, he was in control of Golden Island. If he was short on money, then the Continent would have been extremely dirt poor.

At the same time, he does not lack people who would fight for him. He already had several hundred thousand undead behind him right now. And all of these undead were flying on the sky, there were 40 Bone Dragons as well as a lot of magic beasts and lesser dragons. By Zhao Hai's present strength, he can destroy any nation with ease.

However, Zhao Hai was short in people who could manage. Now that Zhao Hai had eliminated the Dragons in the Lyon Empire, he was left with nobody to manage the Empire. If that happens, then the nation would fall into confusion, and Zhao Hai didn't want to see this. Because of this, Zhao Hai decided to keep the lives of these Great Nobles and have them manage the Empire. This was their final value in Zhao Hai's eyes. Nobody dared to resist, all of them nodded in compliance. There were even some Nobles who bowed to Zhao Hai and swore fealty to him.

Chapter 667 – Waiting for a Day

In the minds of these nobles, Zhao Hai's promise to not encroach upon the Lyon Empire was simply impossible. How can a powerful person have no ambitions when placed in front a ruler-less empire?

For these nobles, Zhao Hai was actually a scorpion that wanted an archway. Therefore, the Nobles expressed their loyalty to him. Zhao Hai looked at these Nobles with no expression and said, "Remember my words, don't play any tricks. Don't think that the Dragons would save you. Do you think that the Dragons can deal with my hundred thousand 9th rank undead? You better behave yourselves, don't annoy me. Any plots and schemes that you all are used to doing are all useless in front of absolute strength. If I hear any whispers of rebellion, then your Clans would need to be prepared. Remember my words!" Then with an intention, Zhao Hai vanished along with his undead army.

Zhao Hai didn't plan to stay in Lyon Empire for too long. He wanted to prepare for his attack on Accra Mountain tomorrow. At the same time, he also wants to see the reactions of these Nobles. He knew that it would only take a short time before news of what happened reaches the ears of every Empire in the continent.

The reason why Zhao Hai showed his strength was so that he could prepare for later on. After eliminating the Dragons, Zhao Hai would then approach the Human Emperors and tell them about the Divine Race. If his strength was insufficient at that time, then those people might not believe him. Therefore, Zhao Hai showed his strength, making those people understand that he wasn't joking.

After eliminating the Dragons, Zhao Hai's next target would be the Radiant Church. Once Zhao Hai eliminates the Dragons, the Radiant Church would surely be aware that their plans had been exposed. When that time comes, it may be possible that they would

start their operation immediately. Therefore, Zhao Hai plans to deal with the Dragons quickly before paying a visit to the Human Emperors and explain why he needed to deal with the Radiant Church. If he didn't do this procedure, then the Human Emperors would become a headache.

The Human Emperors wanted to see Zhao Hai deal with the Dragons, this was because the Dragons were too strong, and were going to be a threat to the Emperors' rule. However, the same sentiment would happen to Zhao Hai. Since Zhao Hai had eliminated the Dragons, the rulers would shift their attention to him, dreading his strength in the process. If Zhao Hai deals with the Radiant Church without any explanation, then the Emperors would think that he was trying to conquer the entire continent. When that time comes, they may even think of uniting against Zhao Hai, even the Rosen Emperor would participate. This was because for any Emperor, a threat to their throne needed to be dealt with, it didn't matter if this person was his son or his son-in-law, everything is the same.

Therefore, before dealing with the Radiant Church, Zhao Hai must establish a relationship with the rulers of the nations. He didn't want to have the entire Human Race as his enemy.

Zhao Hai returned to the Space, but then he saw that the expressions that Laura and the others were giving to him had become different. This made Zhao Hai stare, he looked at the women and said, "What happened? Why are you looking at me strangely?"

Laura looked at Zhao Hai and chuckled, "Brother Hai, I didn't expect you having an overbearing attitude. Unexpectedly, an overbearing Zhao Hai is actually really handsome!" Megan and the others nodded, before they all laughed.

Zhao Hai couldn't bear to roll his eyes, then he turned to Green and Kun, "Grandpa Green, Grandpa Kun, have you given the letter to father-in-law?"

The father-in-law that Zhao Hai meant was the Rosen Emperor. Zhao Hai knew that this matter would spread soon, so he had to give the Rosen Emperor prior word. Although he can't explain everything, after dealing with the Dragons, he would give the Emperor a personal visit.

The reason why Zhao Hai did this was due to Lizzy. Lizzy was the Emperor's daughter, and Zhao Hai didn't want her to feel awkward in the future. Therefore, Zhao Hai decided to send a letter to the King in order to calm his mood.

Green nodded and said, "Young Master, rest assured, it has been sent out. On the other hand, the Young Master did a very good job. After you left, not only did those Nobles behave themselves, they also eliminated any thoughts of resistance in their minds."

Kun smiled as well, "That's right. Little Hai, your exit essentially told them that you are someone with a Space Divergent Ability. This gave them confidence in your strength. One must know that Space Divergent Mages aren't only strong in attack, their most powerful weapon is their ability to escape, it was impossible for people to catch them. Therefore, they believed that even if you can't defeat the Dragons, you can still keep yourself quite safe."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "I didn't think of that. Right, no matter what, we still need talk about how to deal with the Dragons. I think the Dragons would be aware of my declaration of war soon. We need to sweep away their troops on the foot of the mountain before we scale it to the top."

Green nodded and said, "I think that the Dragons wouldn't come even if they know what happened here. Their population isn't a lot, and they just lost 40 of their kind in the capital. It would be impossible for them to retaliate. Moreover, even if they do want to take revenge, they wouldn't have the time to do so. Before they leave the mountain, we would have already scaled it."

Zhao Hai nodded, "Right, also, it would be better for us to fight

the Dragons right inside Accra Mountain. That way, we wouldn't have to worry about innocent people being killed or injured."

At this time, Kun sighed and said, "I'm afraid the Radiant Church will have to respond when we eliminate the Dragon Race. It is possible that the Divine Race would come ahead of schedule. We still haven't made proper preparations yet, we don't have enough time."

Zhao Hai sighed as well, "We have no choice, if we don't make our move, then the Dragons would surely get complete hold of the Lyon Empire. That would be more troublesome for us when the Divine Race comes. At that time, it would be hard to reclaim the Lyon Empire."

Kun nodded, then they adjusted the monitor to show Accra Mountain. The mountain was very calm, the Dragons simply didn't expect that someone would actually move against them. In their view, they were invincible existences in the continent and that nobody would dare to provoke them.

It wasn't only the Humans who were affected negatively by this title of invincibility, the Dragons had been dulled by this title as well. The Dragons had become complacent and was convinced that there were no people who would fight them. And that those warriors who dared face the Dragons were just in heroic novels and poems.

Zhao Hai carefully inspected the military barracks on the foot of Accra Mountain. This camp wasn't very big since it mostly housed lesser dragons and magic beasts. However, Zhao Hai thinks that dealing with this military camp would be more difficult than attacking the capital of the Lyon Empire. It's difficult because the camp was backed by the entire Accra Mountain. Although there was still some distance before the home of the Dragons, the magic beasts in the mountain would still reinforce the camp. If one were to ask about the number of magic beasts in Accra Mountain, then nobody would be able to give a confident answer. One must know

that nobody has ever scaled the entire mountain before, all of them either died or retreated.

The magic beasts of Accra Mountain were under the control of the Dragon Race. As for those low-ranked beasts, even if they didn't have any wisdom, they still had the basic animal instinct to obey the command of those more powerful than them. And in the end, the line of command would still fall into the hands of the Dragon Race.

For Zhao Hai, this was very troublesome. But Zhao Hai was not worried, the level of his undead was very high, and it was also impossible for these magic beasts to drown out his undead army. At the same time, as the fight gets longer and longer, the undead's numbers would only get higher and higher.

The Radiant Church would have to do either two things upon receiving news, they can support the Dragons or they can directly call the Divine Race to come down. If they helped the Dragons, then Zhao Hai wouldn't need to be afraid. However, if they were to call the Divine Race, then that would be quite the headache.

Attacking Accra Mountain was different from attacking the capital. When he attacked the capital, he was able to use the might of his undead to scare the minds of the garrison troops, terrifying them so much that they weren't able to move.

On the other hand, the creatures inside Accra Mountain were magic beasts. Although the magic beasts were able to be terrified, they were still magic beasts in the end. Moreover, with their large numbers as well as the command of the Dragons, it would be impossible for Zhao Hai to terrify them into submission. At this rate, it would take a few days before Zhao Hai can scale the mountain, and this was already an optimistic estimate. And in those few days, the Radiant Church would have already made their move.

Zhao Hai was frowning as he looked at the map. He was thinking

about the consequences of this war and how it would affect the entire continent. Green looked at Zhao Hai and knew what he was thinking, so Green smiled faintly and said, “Young Master, there’s no need to be worried. Look, when we attack the Dragons, the people of the continent would certainly not meddle. And if the Radiant Church can really ask the Divine Race to come down immediately, then they wouldn’t have waited until now. As long as we eliminate the Dragons and unite the other four Empires, then even if the Divine Race comes, we would not be caught off-guard.”

Zhao Hai nodded and sighed, “Let’s just hope that the Divine Race would give us some time, allowing us to eradicate the Dragons. Right, Grandpa Green, is there word from the Fishmen?” Green shook his head and said, “There’s nothing. I reckon that the Radiant Church was still unaware of what happened in the Lyon Empire’s capital, so they still weren’t able to react. However, the Young Master shouldn’t worry. The Fishmen are the real hegemony of the sea. Even if the Radiant Church is powerful, they still couldn’t contend with the Fishmen when it came to naval battles. There will be no problem.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he looked at the map on the screen and muttered, “Dragon Race, the day of your extinction has come!”

Chapter 668 – Removed from the Continent!

And just as Zhao Hai thought, the news of his attack on the Lyon Empire's capital had swept through the entire continent, shocking everyone who heard of it!

From ancient times to the present, Dragons were synonymous with invincibility. There might be no need to say it, but what are Dragons? They were the most fearful existence in the continent. Some commoners even think of them as gods. And stories of people slaying Dragons only came up in stories and songs. However, in the history of the continent, there were actually instances where the Dragons were slaughtered.

Of course, among these Dragons slayers were Humans. But this fact had been erased in the Human records by the Radiant Church. This was to ensure that the Humans would forever fear the invincible Dragons. This would made them hesitate to fight these beasts of the sky.

It was like two warriors of the same strength preparing for a duel, one warrior had a normal status while the other was renowned throughout the land. In this case, the first warrior would find it hard to face his opponent. Some might prevail due to their courage, but not everyone had a strong heart and mind.

When the Empires of the continent heard this news, their first reaction was disbelief. This news must be fake, how could someone kill a Dragon, moreover, forty of them? This was completely unbelievable.

But when confirmation came, the Empires had a mixed reaction. The Radiant Empire had become chaotic, they couldn't describe what they were feeling. The Dragons were their ally, but now, their ally had been attacked. This made them stare blankly for a moment.

The first reaction of the Buddha Empire was shock, and after that

was silence. They didn't know how to react to this news.

The Lyon Empire has been destroyed by the Dragons, who then established the Saint Dragon Empire, which itself caught them by surprise. However, because of the Dragons' reputation, they had to recognize their sovereignty to the Empire. But now that Zhao Hai fought the Dragons, and even openly declared war against them, the Buddha Empire caught themselves unaware of what to do. They didn't know whether they would help Zhao Hai and deal with the Dragons, or help the Dragons and deal with Zhao Hai.

The Buddha Empire didn't have the courage to fight the Dragons. But on the other hand, they cannot justify making war with Zhao Hai. After all, Zhao Hai was fighting the Dragons, and they cannot help another race deal with a Human. The Buddha Empire was confused!

And at this moment, there were two things that was on the table of the Rosen Emperor. One was the information about Zhao Hai and the Dragons, and the other was Zhao Hai's letter to him.

The Emperor was just sitting there, reading the report and the switching to Zhao Hai's letter. After some time, he still didn't know what to say or what to do.

The Rosen Emperor had a feeling of loss when it comes to this son-in-law of his. Zhao Hai seemed to be someone with zero ambition. He continued to stay on his own Island and just did business. Even though his relations to the various races in the continent was good, he still didn't express any great thoughts. This made the Emperor quite satisfied with Zhao Hai.

But just when the Emperor thought that Zhao Hai really didn't want to do anything grand, this piece of report came. Zhao Hai had waged war with the Dragons and already slaughtered 40 of them. This made the Rosen Emperor utterly speechless.

And at this time, the Rosen Emperor received Zhao Hai's letter. In this letter, Zhao Hai said that his current action was not to

usurp the Lyon Empire's Domain. And that he has something that he was unable to say right now. Zhao Hai stated that he would pay the Rosen Emperor a personal visit after he had dealt with the Dragon Race.

This letter didn't just contained Zhao Hai's words, Lizzy gave her thoughts as well. The Emperor knew this since he could recognize Lizzy's handwriting.

When the Emperor looked at the letter, he couldn't help but sigh, then with a low voice he said, "What do you think I should do?"

Then a voice was heard that said, "You wait!"

The Emperor sighed and said, "Alright, then we'll wait. It seems like that is the only thing we could do." Naturally, the person that he had spoken to was his Dead Adviser. This was a person that never showed himself and just kept hiding in the shadows.

Under the anticipation of the continent, the day passed by. Everyone was paying attention to Accra Mountain. All of them wanted to know if Zhao Hai would really go to war with the Dragons.

On the other hand, the lesser dragon camp at the foot of the mountain was completely unaware about all of this. All of the influences in the continent had their own means of acquiring information, and this didn't exempt the Dragons. Moreover, the Radiant Church were their allies, so even if the Dragons weren't able to send their scouts, the Radiant Church would surely send word. However, nothing came that night, everything seems to be very normal. The mountain spent their night just like they had in the nights before.

Yesterday, although Zhao Hai was resting in the Space, he actually didn't idle himself. Surrounding the lesser dragon camp was a large net. This net wasn't to monitor the lesser dragons, but this was to intercept any news and information that was heading towards the lesser dragon camp.

Zhao Hai must make sure that the Dragons were unable to get any news. At the same time, Zhao Hai wanted to see which people were sending word back to Accra Mountain.

Zhao Hai's efforts weren't wasted, he had captured 15 people who wanted to report the news to the Dragons. Only five of them were from the Radiant Church. As for the other 10, they were sent by the Great Nobles of the Lyon Empire. It seems like the Nobles were gambling. They submitted to Zhao Hai, causing no trouble back in the capital, but also handing information over to the Dragons so that the Dragons wouldn't be offended. So later on, whether which side wins, they can still find a way to save themselves. But unfortunately for them, their lives were already forfeit, Zhao Hai would never let them off.

After resting for a day, Zhao Hai's mind and body had recovered to peak condition, he felt like he can deal with anything at this time. After having breakfast inside the Space, Zhao Hai and the others went out of the Space and stood on the back of a Bone Dragon. Then Zhao Hai turned his Staff into a mansion before having the undead form a cube formation. Then the massive army started to head towards the lesser dragon camp.

This time, Zhao Hai was not planning on hiding themselves. They exhibited their full might as they slowly pressed forward. And in a war, this display was even more frightening. The pressure that one would feel would be no less than a mountain's pressure.

Currently, there were millions of undead creatures in Zhao Hai's arsenal. Many of them were from the sea, but after becoming undead, all of these marine undead can now fight on land, without even affecting their strength. Zhao Hai released all of them, millions of 9th rank undead started to appear and form a very large cube formation which slowly approached the lesser dragon camp.

The lesser dragons also noticed the millions of undead that was heading towards them. These undead were in a strange formation that they had not seen before, this really surprised the lesser

dragons.

The lesser dragon army was horrified as it stared at the approaching army. Seeing these flying undead in the skies made their whole bodies tremble.

The lesser dragons quickly sent a letter to the Dragons, asking for immediate reinforcements. Then the lesser dragon army started to form a defensive formation. At this point, they had zero confidence in attacking. After seeing this army composed of millions of undead, only stupid ones would have the courage to attack.

Zhao Hai's speed was not fast, they took their time in approaching the enemy camp. Zhao Hai thought that if they were to give pressure to the lesser dragons, then they must make sure to affect them in the worst possible way.

At this time, a loud Dragon's roar was heard from inside the lesser dragon camp. Then ten Dragons appeared as they couldn't bear it anymore and turned into their true Dragon form before flying to the sky. They stopped at the camp's sky as they looked at the undead that were slowly closing in.

And then, a golden Dragon with two long knife-like curved horns opened its mouth and said in a thunderous voice, "What are you doing here, friend? Are you aware that this is the Dragon Race's territory?"

When the Dragon finished talking, the huge cube formation slowly fluctuated. Then a Bone Dragon with a red mansion on its back slowly surfaced. The Bone Dragon stopped about 100 meters away before a young man came out of the mansion. Naturally, this man was Zhao Hai, he looked at the Golden Dragon and sneered, "Of course I know that this is the Dragon Race's domain. If this wasn't the Dragon's domain, then why would I even come. What's wrong, you can't recognize me?"

When the Dragon saw Zhao Hai, his pupils couldn't help but shrink as he said, "Zhao Hai, you are Zhao Hai? You should be dead

at sea. Did you kill the people that we sent to the Sea Dragons?”

Zhao Hai laughed and said, “You Dragons are surely arrogant. Do you think that nobody would be able to kill you? Hahaha, too funny! Not only did I eliminate your people back in the sea, I also eliminated every one of your clansmen in the Lyon Empire’s capital. From this day forward, the Dragons would be removed from the Continent!”

A huge roar suddenly came out of the Dragon’s mouth. He looked at Zhao Hai with red eyes and yelled, “You arrogant ant! You think you are strong just because you killed some Dragons? I want to see how you plan to deal with us!”

Zhao Hai sneered and said, “No need to keep talking, dog of the Divine Race. I am more than qualified to claim my superiority. Come see my recent collection.” Then more than forty Dragons flew out of the cube formation. These Bone Dragons had been lined up by Zhao Hai. All of them had fiery eyes that coldly stared at the still living Dragons.

Chapter 669 – Rout!

When the Dragon saw the Bones Dragons, his eyes couldn't help but shrink before his expression turned into anger. He knew that these Bone Dragons were his clansmen. They were killed and then turned into these undead creatures. For a majestic Dragon to become like this and were used to deal with their own Race, the arrogant Golden Dragon naturally wouldn't be able to tolerate it.

When Zhao Hai saw the Dragon's expression, he couldn't help but laugh and said, "You can't accept your people being turned to these Bone Dragons? Alright, I'll change their appearances. I think you will like it." Then he waved his hand as a black gas slowly engulfed the Bone Dragons. When the gas dissipated, the Bones Dragons looked totally different.

This time, the Dragon's eyes shrunk again, and his anger flared up once more. This was because the Bone Dragons had become real Dragons. One couldn't see any wounds in their bodies, their scales were also shining. They also had bodies that exuded pure strength. The Dragon knew that his people had become zombies, they still had their original bodily functions, but they were still undead.

This was also the reason why the Dragon's anger had flared up. The mighty Dragons had been turned into toys by a Human, this was completely unforgivable!

The Dragon faced the sky and roared out loud before he said, "This is unforgivable! How dare you treat the Dragons like this! Face your death!" Then he flapped both of his wings and charged. The other Dragons behind him roared as well before following the Golden Dragon's lead.

Zhao Hai actually laughed when he saw this and said, "You Dragons had always bathed on your unwarranted reputation. Get ready to become reduced to a mere mention in history!" Then he waved his hand as 40 Zombie Dragons charged, clashing with the

ten Dragons from earlier.

The 40 colossal Dragons that were fighting in the skies attracted the attention of all the lesser Dragons. They didn't think that they would face someone that dared to challenge the formidable Dragons. In the entire Accra Mountain, there wasn't anybody that would face a Dragon. In the continent, there wasn't anyone who would dare claim that the status of the Dragons was fake. The lesser dragons had always thought that the Dragons were unparalleled beneath the Heavens. When the Dragons begin to act, there would be no one who would be able to stop them. And yet, there was this lunatic, a lunatic that actually managed to slaughter Dragons!

There was nothing wrong with this description, in the eyes of the lesser dragons, Zhao Hai was truly a lunatic that wanted to kill the Dragons. But the strength this madman had startled the lesser dragons, the Dragons themselves were quite shocked as well.

How much power can these Zombie Dragons really dish out? How can they be on par with real Dragons? However, when they clashed, the living Dragons had discovered that these Zombie Dragons weren't weaker than them, they were stronger!

What was the feeling of being besieged by forty people that were stronger than themselves? At this moment, the living Dragons knew that the only thing they could do was to defend against the assault of the Forty Zombie Dragons. They were zero chances for them to counter-attack.

Zhao Hai didn't idle, he looked down at the lesser dragons and coldly said, "You don't need to just stand there, you join my undead army!" Then he gave a signal as Megan and Lizzy commanded the undead army to send divisions to assault the lesser dragon army.

The lesser dragons went into a commotion. They were afraid and had felt pressure when the undead came. But since they still had

the Dragons on their backs to assume command, they believed that they can resist any attackers. This was the impression that the Dragons had given them after all these years. In their opinion, Dragons were invincible!

But from what they saw, the ten Dragons had no way to retaliate against the forty assaulting Dragons. It was only a matter of time before they lost their lives. So at this time, the pressure that Zhao Hai's army brought to them have been amplified. They even had a faint sense of panic starting to well up from inside of them.

If this was in the past few days, the Dragons would've come and slapped the enemy two times, and stabilize the army. Unfortunately, those Dragons were being mauled by zombies right now, they weren't in the capacity to calm the lesser Dragons.

Zhao Hai also made arrangements on this matter. In total, Zhao Hai had collected 42 Dragons between the battle in the capital as well as in the attack against the two border fortresses. At this point, 40 of those Dragons were fighting then ten Dragons of the other side. One of the Dragons was carrying his mansion, leaving him with one that was free to use. Zhao Hai sent that remaining Dragon to attack the lesser dragon army!

One has to recognize how ruthless Zhao Hai's move was. These lesser dragons were completely afraid of the Dragons, seeing this one Dragon heading their way didn't help their panic!

When the Dragon charged towards them, many lesser dragons began to scream, threw their weapons away and then turned around towards the mountain. They had completely lost the will and courage to fight.

Zhao Hai who currently sat on his house on the back of the Dragon, actually smiled. His high-profile manner earlier was a preparation for this. He wanted to make the enemy think that he was a madman. Even if one had the resilience of bamboo, they would still be terrified of a lunatic. This was because lunatics were

completely unreasonable.

Slaughter was not something that Zhao Hai loved, he just wanted to achieve his own goals. And sometimes, in order to achieve these goals, slaughter was an unavoidable method. However, there were also moments where slaughter was not necessary.

When an army is afraid of an enemy, deserters would eventually crop up. And when a deserter comes out, more deserters would follow suit. These deserters would form a chain reaction and would finally end in the defeat of the entire army. This was the case for the lesser dragon army right now.

Their sole mental pillar were the Dragons, who gave them the courage to face against any enemy. However, if these Dragons were to disappear, then their mental strength would sharply drop.

The rout of the lesser dragons also affected the Dragons. This was a mental matter, it had nothing to do with strength. These Dragons also wanted to escape, but this kind of mentality further plunges them to the jaws of defeat!

A Dragon was killed, then turned into a Zombie Dragon, who charged towards its own ally. Then another Dragon was killed, which also joined the Zombie Dragons. This cycle continued until the courage of the remaining Dragons reached rock bottom. They had completely lost hope in living.

However, weren't really left with no choice of retaliation. They still have their secret technique. This technique was called Heavenly Tempest. This was a type of sacrificial technique. The Dragons can use their flesh and blood as fuel, along with their souls in order to create a huge explosion. The might of this explosion was extremely strong, when a Dragon decided to self-destruct, it was possible for it to kill ten other Dragons. This technique was passed over to them by the Divine Race.

The remaining Dragons were now inclined to use this technique, but unfortunately for them, they were against Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai

was a very practical person, he didn't like to waste time. If he was against an enemy, he would kill them in one stroke, if there was no need to use tricks. What was the need to play cat and mouse? This game might look like one was playing around with a defeated enemy. But for Zhao Hai, this was just akin to teaching the mouse to the point where the cat doesn't pose a threat anymore.

When one goes against the enemy with the mindset of playing with them, then it was possible that the one who would die was you. An act of desperation wasn't a joke. A cornered rabbit can still bite you. As long as a bamboo was not killed, it can still pose threat to you, not to mention an enemy like the Dragon Race.

After the inferior dragons retreated, Zhao Hai didn't pursue them but instead directed his whole undead army to clean the remaining Dragons. Just as the Dragons were prepared to take their own lives, they were suddenly drowned out by an army of undead before they themselves joined this army.

Zhao Hai and the others had conquered the camp on the foot of Accra Mountain quite easily. The next thing that they needed to do was to head up the mountain and attack the Dragon's den, Dragon Peak!

The main reason why Zhao Hai and the others planned to have all of the lesser dragons rout was because there was a nearby Human settlement. The Accra Mountain was a haven for adventurers. Every single day, an innumerable amount adventurers went here in order to seek fortune. Their main purpose was to hunt and kill magic beasts, at the same time, they were also hoping to come across a dead adventurer's belongings.

An adventurer was high-risk profession, especially for those that were in Accra Mountain. Although they were only on the outskirts of the mountain, there was still a possibility of meeting a high-level magic beast and get killed. Because of their life always being in a precarious state, these adventurers always brought their properties with them. And with the high rate of fatality in the

mountain, there were tales of lucky adventurers coming across the properties of a dead person and becoming rich overnight. Although this situation was rare, it still managed to shake the adventurers of the continent. All of them started in participating in this scavenger hunt.

It was like lottery, everyone thinks that they were the lucky ones when they buy it, but the real prize can only be obtained by very few.

Because of the amount of adventurers going to Accra Mountain, they managed to build a huge community for them in a corner of the mountain.

This town was the closest supply point in Accra Mountain. There were a lot of people who came here every year to try their luck, making the town very prosperous.

However, the adventurers didn't have a great time in the recent days. The Dragons controlled the Lyon Empire in a quick manner and had built a military camp at the foot of the mountain. The camp was not too far from the town, and most importantly, the lesser dragons had prohibited them from hunting magic beasts in the mountain. The adventurers in the town had no choice but to eat their reserve rations every day. At the same time, they were also hoping that the Dragons would revoke this order.

This was because the people that were in the town weren't only those who were seeking wealth, there were also some criminals among them. This was due to the town being close to Accra Mountain, not even the Lyon Empire's army dared to come here. Therefore, this place was also a haven for wanted people wherein they can enjoy their freedom. And even if the army came, they can just run towards the mountain and wait it out. They didn't dare to leave the town and go to another lest they risk themselves being arrested.

Chapter 670 – Being Ruthless

It is for this reason that there were a lot of people in this town. All of these people had seen a true Dragon get slaughtered, this was where the true legend began.

The reason why Zhao Hai intimidated the lesser dragons into retreating was exactly this small town.

No matter who lived in this town, Zhao Hai didn't intend to have innocents die in his war. Therefore, he used methods to collapse the minds of the lesser dragons so that they wouldn't fight and cause a ruckus at the foot of the mountain. After all, a lot of Humans could get caught in the chaos.

Because the small town was quite near the lesser dragon camp, all of the adventurers were fortunate enough to witness Zhao Hai's war against the Dragon race.

To be honest, this cannot be called a war, it was more inclined to be a one-sided slaughter. However, this slaughter was something that made the eyes of the adventurers light up. One must know that what Zhao Hai just killed were Dragons. These were beings that were deemed to be invincible by the continent. On this day, a Human actually managed to eliminate these invincible beings. Along with their bright eyes, their hearts were burning as well.

After Zhao Hai eliminated the ten Dragons, he didn't stay, instead, he commanded his undead army and dashed through Accra Mountain. His cube formation didn't change, the same cube was now climbing up accra mountain.

Upon seeing this, the adventurers in the town started to get daring. When Zhao Hai led his undead army to chase the lesser dragons, these adventurers also went out of the town and followed behind the undead army as they climbed up Accra Mountain.

They didn't have the thought of picking up some cheap things. In

their minds, if they weren't able to see such a magnificent scene, then it would be quite a shame. As long as they can witness what happened in the mountain, then they can brag about it in the capital. And bragging was the most favorite activity of these adventurers.

Zhao Hai didn't care about these adventurers, although he had discovered that they had followed behind him, he didn't have the time to take care of them. If these guys wanted to follow, then they can do what they want. If these guys wanted to die, then Zhao Hai wouldn't stop them.

At this time, Zhao Hai didn't want to divert his attention. What he faces against were the Dragons. He might have been able to defeat a lot of them in the previous battles, but the Dragons were still existences that survived for tens of thousands of years. And they had nested in Accra Mountain in the same amount of time. Zhao Hai had no idea about their full strength. This was the reason why Zhao Hai didn't become complacent when faced with these Dragons, it was not yet time to celebrate.

When Zhao Hai's undead army entered the Accra Mountain, he can immediately feel the difference between here and the camp at the bottom of the mountain. Back in the military camp, there were only lesser dragons and not so much magic beasts. But when they were routed to Accra Mountain, there were magic beasts everywhere. Now, these magic beasts had become frantic, it didn't matter which rank they were, all of them were throwing themselves towards Zhao Hai's direction. In this case, Zhao Hai reckoned that the cube formation was not quite suitable in scaling the mountain. Therefore, Zhao Hai gave a command, collapsing the cube formation and turned it into fine sand as it poured over the mountain.

The crazy battle started, Zhao Hai has also come down from the back of the Bone Dragon and entered into Alien. The Bone Dragons were still flying in the sky since there were also flying beasts that

needed to be taken care of. Those flying magic beasts weren't weak, so Zhao Hai just let the Bone Dragons attract their attention while the main army were dealing with the beasts on the ground.

This was simply a screen killing. In the outskirts of Accra Mountain, there were no high-level beasts. Zhao Hai didn't know what methods the lesser dragons used, but they had made all of the magic beasts in the mountain crazily attack Zhao Hai's army. This made Zhao Hai's movement difficult, very difficult.

However, Zhao Hai didn't turn those low-level magic beasts into undead. It was because there was no need to do so, their levels were just too low and their bodies were too small. Although the magic beasts, blue eyed rabbits, long tailed chickens and the like, were frantically attacking the undead, how could they deal damage with their small strength. Even if the undead just stood there, these beasts wouldn't be able to move them.

These beasts were just too small, and even if Zhao Hai were to make them into undead, they wouldn't be very useful. At the same time, Zhao Hai also left those beasts for the adventurers who were trailing him. He hoped that these adventurers would take those magic beasts and leave Accra Mountain. In this way, the unnecessary casualties would be a little smaller.

Zhao Hai had disassembled the entire cube formation, but this didn't mean that each undead was alone. They were still divided into squads of 500 people, coordinating with each other as they advanced.

Accra Mountain was just too big, and it would be impossible for Zhao Hai to let all of his undead go alone. If they were along and were to suffer multiple attacks by the Dragons, then Zhao Hai's losses wouldn't be very small. Therefore, Zhao Hai had them group into units of 500 each in order to deal with this problem. They would have enough power to block the Dragons then, after all, they were still 9th ranks and the Space's undead were still able to think for themselves and know how to face the enemy.

However, this arrangement slowed their advance. After all, the amount of crazy magic beasts were colossal. Nobody knew how many magic beasts there were inside Accra Mountain, and all of those magic beasts were now crazily charging towards Zhao Hai. It was quite a scary sight, if the opponent wasn't Zhao Hai, then they would've been unable to attack.

Zhao Hai and his army advanced step by step before the corpses of these magic beasts. Whether it be those who were flying, walking, or even digging holes, every single beast was going after the invading army. Zhao Hai had no other choice but to kill them in order to progress. Every patch of ground that Zhao Hai and his army walked on were completely painted with blood.

The adventurers who followed behind Zhao Hai were shocked at the number of magic beasts corpses that they had come across. Although these were common magic beasts of the continent and were things that might not even deserve killing, the sheer numbers present at this time truly made these adventurers startled.

However, these adventurers didn't have any Space Equipments to keep the corpses. And the most important thing in their minds right now was to witness the battle and not to collect beast corpses. Therefore, most of them ignored the corpses and continued to scale the mountain, following Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai didn't have the mood to pay attention to these adventurers. At this moment, Cai'er suddenly thought of something as she approached Zhao Hai and said, "Young Master, since these adventurers don't want the corpses, how about we store them instead? No matter what, they are still meat. We cannot have only grain in the later war, otherwise, the soldiers would be malnourished."

When Zhao Hai heard Cai'er, he turned his head towards the adventurers and discovered that the corpses were left in the ground. Some of them who came across higher levelled magic beasts only took their magic crystal before continuing forward.

After he saw this situation, Zhao Hai couldn't help but sigh and said, "Alright, go send those corpses to the Space where they won't rot. When we run out of meat later, then we'll eat those."

Green laughed and said, "We really don't lack meat, but we might as well get more. What I'm afraid of was the Accra Mountain losing all of its magic beasts and become a dead mountain."

Zhao Hai coldly snorted and said, "These magic beasts are under the control of the Dragons. If they weren't killed right now, then the Dragons can command them to attack the Humans later on. That is the terrifying thing. Just think, blue eyed rabbits and long-tailed chickens blotting out the skies as they charge towards a Human army. That would be very dangerous, so why don't we just use them as food?"[1]

Green and the others nodded, they knew that Zhao Hai was right in saying so. These magic beasts might look harmless but if they were to crazily attack the Humans one day, then they would become terrifying. Just thinking about a rabid rabbit charging towards you and then tearing away your flesh, that thought alone would make people shake.

Instead of waiting for that time, then Zhao Hai might as well deal with those magic beasts ahead of time. After all, they can also gain military rations along the way.

The reason why Green and the others were assured that the magic beasts would be killed was the fact the army that they commanded weren't composed of people, they were all undead. And have you heard of a terrified undead? No. The undead had no emotions, even if they were faced with these numbers of magic beasts, even if they were to rush in front of a Dragon, all they would do was hold on to their weapons properly and then immediately attack, it was that simple.

The undead were undead, even if they were capable of thinking,

they will never disobey their master. Zhao Hai's command was to kill all of the enemies. Whether they be magic beasts or dragons, they will do it. Even if they were intelligent and were capable of rational thought, they still wouldn't interrupt Zhao Hai's order.

A group of people with no fear was terrifying. It was because of this that Green and the others were confident that these undeads could eliminate every beast that came to attack them. If this was a Human army, then it would be an impossible feat. In the face of overwhelming beast frenzy, they will be too scared to use all of their strength. In the end, they would only be drowned by the enemy.

Zhao Hai and the others didn't fly directly towards Dragon's peak but just pushed forward step by step. This was not because Zhao Hai was bloodthirsty and wanted to kill the magic beasts of the mountain ,instead, he was worried.

Zhao Hai had complete confidence in dealing with the Dragons. However, he couldn't say the same if the Dragons were to escape. If Dragons were to escape, then they can just return to Accra Mountain and establish their magic beast army once more. When that time comes, Zhao Hai would have another headache to deal with.

Chapter 671 – Transformation?

This kind of worry was not without reason. The Dragons had been in Accra Mountain for so many years. It can be said that the entire mountain had become their root. They didn't care if people come and attacked the magic beasts, this was because the adventurers can only kill those inferior magic beasts, so it wouldn't really affect their core strength. Moreover, if these adventurers were to come here to hunt and kill magic beasts, then the Empires of the continent wouldn't place their attention to the mountain.

If the Dragons really turn the Accra Mountain into their exclusive place, then the Empires of the continent will definitely pay attention to it. This was because the geographical position of Accra Mountain was too important. The mountain was part of the Lyon Empire, a small region of it was part of the Buddha Empire, it was also bordered with the Dwarves and the Elves. In this case, if the Accra Mountains become a completely different kingdom, then these forces would definitely not agree to it.

Therefore, the Dragons allowed the Humans to enter and kill magic beasts in the mountain. Not only could it not affect their strength, they can also use this opportunity to observe and get information out of them. And they did this very successfully.

In the past, Zhao Hai didn't want to be ruthless towards the magic beasts. But ever since he discovered that even the powerless blue eyed rabbits and long tailed chicken were frantically attacking him, Zhao Hai decided to remove them from the mountain. At the very least, they wouldn't be a threat in the future.

The Dragon race's control over the Accra Mountain was incomparably strong, one can prove this point just by seeing the blue eyed rabbits and the long tailed chickens. This can also be proven when one looks back in time to the point where the Dragons dealt with the Lyon Empire. The Lyon Empire's main

force was their cavalry, and their mounts were all taken from Accra Mountain. When the Dragons made their move against the Lyon Empire, these magic beast mounts rebelled.

However, the Dragons were unable to command the magic beasts of other people, or a magic beasts' beast subordinates. They couldn't just terrify those magic beasts, and even if they were terrified, they still wouldn't frantically attack the Humans. This was also the reason why Zhao Hai didn't fly directly towards Dragon's Peak and just advanced slowly on the ground, attacking each and every magic beast that they had come across.

On the other hand, the adventurers that were following Zhao Hai felt that they were going crazy. Every inch of Accra Mountain was completely red, the blood of the magic beasts already gave the mountain a scarlet color.

Zhao Hai looked at everything with a calm expression. He wasn't killing people this time, so he didn't have much of a burden on his conscience. He felt the same as when a person slaughters a pig. Except for some special people, there weren't a lot of people who would sympathize with the pigs. Most people would just think about how delicious the pork would be.

Although the magic beast attacks were very fierce, they didn't have even a point of coordination. All of them were just rushing over to Zhao Hai. The arrival of these magic beasts only gave Zhao Hai's side more food for the future.

Green looked at the frantic beasts and sighed, "It seems like our decision to deal with the Dragons is correct. If the Divine Race came and the dragons controlled these magic beasts, then the Human armies would certainly suffer huge consequences."

While speaking about it, Green's face couldn't help but turn ugly. He was imagining how that scenario would turn out to be.

Kun sighed and said, "Right, the two seeds that the Divine Race had left behind were indeed terrifying. One was the Radiant

Church, who used religion to control the population. And then there was the Dragon Race, who used their status to control an innumerable amount of magic beasts. If these magic beasts were like the magic beasts in other places, then they surely won't obey the Dragons. But since the Dragons had lived in Accra mountain for too long, they were now regarded by the beasts as gods, even those who had no wisdom had sided themselves to the Dragons. If the Divine Race did come, then they would have an army that wasn't afraid of death. With the strength of the Dragons as well as the logistical might of the Radiant Church, as well as the God-rank expert's leadership, what kind of situation would we be facing?"

Zhao Hai sneered and said, "Even if we didn't come and deal with the Dragons, we can still take care of them in the future, albeit being more costly in our part. But since we will eliminate them right now, this will only hasten the Radiant Church's action, there wouldn't be any major changes in our situation."

Green and Kun both sighed, even if they defeat the Radiant Church and the Dragon Race, they would still suffer some disadvantages in facing the Divine Race. After all, those two forces were seeds that the Divine Race planted in the continent. Their influence and impact had already been felt and applied to the continent from their many years of operation.

Fortunately, Zhao Hai has the Space, which provided him with effective weapons in the form of the undead. Otherwise, whether it be the Radiant Church or the Dragons, they would be able to drown out Zhao Hai's forces.

The speed that Zhao Hai advanced wasn't fast, the magic beasts were just too crazy. It was possible that this flood of beasts wouldn't stop. It was great that the undead didn't get tired and weren't lenient in killing the magic beasts. The cold slaughter was still going on.

While the slaughter was continuing, Zhao Hai and the others were now coming across higher level magic beasts. Compared to

before, when they were mostly getting 1st-ranks, they were now getting 2nd and 3rd rank magic beasts.

While Zhao Hai and the others were paying attention to the magic beasts, they weren't truly focused on the fight. Instead, they were discussing on possible methods that the Dragons would attack them later on.

Zhao Hai was quite worried about the attack of the Dragon Race. After all, this was Accra Mountain, the domain of the Dragons. Even with something like the Space's monitor, Zhao Hai would still need to be careful.

At this time, Zhao Hai felt that the skies outside had slowly become dark. Zhao Hai stared, then was stunned when he figured it out. The sky had turned dark, it meant that a day has passed!

Upon seeing that the magic beast attack was still going on, Zhao Hai couldn't help but breathe in a cold air as he said, "We had been fighting for a day? These magic beasts are crazy. Did the Dragons drug them? Cai'er, what kind of drug is in these magic beasts?!"

Cai'er shook her head and said, "There's no drug, Young Master. These magic beasts didn't ingest anything. I already scanned the corpses that we had acquired before, they were all clean."

Zhao Hai was stunned, he looked at Green and said, "This is too crazy. Can Dragons really control the beasts to this degree? I have to ask what is going on." Then Zhao Hai called a Dragon over and said, "Can you go back to your Human form?"

The Dragon nodded, then his appearance changed and slowly turned into a person. This Dragon was the same as the previous ones that he had seen before. He was also wearing a robe that was made out of their own scales.

At this time, a prompt was then heard from the Space, "Transformation ability discovered in Cyborg beings. Extracting ability. Applying ability to all Cyborg-type beings. Application is

complete.”

Zhao Hai gawked, he didn't think that the Space could actually withdraw the Dragon's ability to transform. At the same time, it also applied it to all the undead. Does this mean that the undead now have a Human form?

After thinking about it, Zhao Hai lost his drive to ask the Dragon about the state of the magic beasts. He took the Dragon and Alien to the Space. Then he came out of the Space and looked at Alien, “Alien, can you change into your human form?”

Alien's human-like eyes looked at Zhao Hai, then he shook his head. It seems like it didn't know how to do it. So Zhao Hai turned to the Dragon and said, “What do you do when you want to go to your human form?”

The Dragon answered immediately, “Young Master, there's no special method. As long as you think that you want to be in your human form, then that would be enough.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned to Alien and said, “Alien, just think that you want to be human. Understood?” Alien nodded, it seems like it understood Zhao Hai.

Then Zhao Hai saw that Alien's figure started to shake, and then it shrank. The bones on Alien's body shrunk as well. In the end, Zhao Hai can see a person with full body armor in front of him. The man was two meters in height, his armor was red and had spikes on them. One can understand at one glance that this person was strong. However, this person didn't wear his headpiece, revealing his skeleton face.

Zhao Hai took a few laps to examine this man in front of him. He had discovered that Alien had turned into a real Human with a human structure. He didn't have any tail or extra appendages. This made Zhao Hai feel quite happy.

However, when he saw Alien's face, Zhao Hai smiled faintly and

said, “Alien, turn into a human, not a skeleton. Do it, quick, I want to see how you look.”

Alien nodded, then a white light flashed. After the light retreated, Zhao Hai saw a warrior wearing red clothes. This guy was very tall and looked quite strong. He had an ugly and terrifying face, he was also bad, he didn't look like good person at all.

Zhao Hai looked at the new and odd Alien and said, “Alien, where's your body armor? You can't wear it in this form?”

Alien looked perplexed as he shook his head, then using spiritual communication, he sent, “I don't know, Young Master. Isn't it fine this way?”

Zhao Hai knit his brows, he was quite confused. At this time, the Dragon opened its mouth and said, “Young Master, it seems like Alien's previous form was just like the Dragon Race's battle form. Maybe this was the reason.”

Zhao Hai stared, then he clapped his hand and said, “So its like that. It seems like the undead can also get into three forms. This is good.”

Chapter 672 – The Dragons didn't Appear

Green and the others were happy as well. Although the strength of magic beasts were formidable, their builds were too big. And in their cramped situation inside Accra Mountain, their performance wouldn't be as efficient as the Human form undead. So now that they had this ability, these undead magic beast would be able to display even more power.

Although Alien was still unable to speak and can only communicate over spirit transfer, this didn't matter. It didn't have any effect on its fighting strength.

Then Zhao Hai turned to the Dragon and then asked, "What is your name?"

The undead Dragon immediately replied, "Young Master, I'm called, Ao Sar."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Do you know why these magic beasts are still listening to the Dragons? What is happening?"

Ao Sar replied, "I do. Young Master, this is actually a secret technique that the Divine Race had left behind. This technique is called Divine Enlightenment. This technique is quite formidable, after being used on a magic beast, this magic would still manage to penetrate its descendants, making the subsequent generations loyal to the Dragon Race. No matter what we order them, they will obey, even if they are asked to commit suicide or slaughter their children. There are many uses of this technique, but it is still useless to magic beasts with high wisdom, and it also has little influence on people. At the same time, this technique uses up a lot of magic each time. But since the Dragons have been in the Accra Mountain for too long, all the magic beasts had been turned into loyal beings to the Dragons. It was precisely because of Divine Enlightenment that the magic beasts were all frantically attacking the Young Master's army."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “So it turns out to be something left behind by the Divine Race. Can you also do this Divine Enlightenment?”

The Dragon nodded, “I can, all Dragons are capable of executing the technique.”

Zhao Hao gave a nod, “Then tell me the how you do it, let me see what this Divine Enlightenment looks like.” Then the Dragon complied, telling Zhao Hai how to execute this technique.

This Divine Enlightenment’s application method was based on light element magic, but it was not entirely light magic. It was a combination between light magic and blood magic.

When using the technique, one would use their own blood first as a guide before one casts the magic. This kind of magic would not only affect the magic beast, it would also manifest on its descendants. One could say that it was a kind of evil control magic.

Zhao Hai didn’t use the magic even though he had learned how to do it. He just wanted to understand the magic that were used by the Divine Race. Now it seems like the Divine Race were indeed powerful, they can actually combine different magic to make completely new spells.

Although the fight was still going on outside, Zhao Hai and the others didn’t rush out. It had continued for the whole day, they were even unaware that night had arrived. At this time, they felt somewhat hungry, so their had their dinner inside the Space.

Even if he left the undead outside, all of them were 9th ranks, Zhao Hai wasn’t worried about them.

While they were eating their dinner inside the Space, Zhao Hai and the others discussed the fight that happened during the day. Green took a sip of his wine and then said, “Where are the Dragons? The lesser Dragons should have already reported what just happened. Why were the magic beasts continuing to attack?”

Kun smiled faintly and said, “It isn’t really strange. The Dragons are unaware of the existence of the Space. In their minds, these undead were controlled by Dark Mages. The Dark Mage might be strong, but they couldn’t sustain commanding these undead for too long. I think the Dragons are trying to drain Little Hai’s magic by bombarding him with those magic beasts. When Little Hai’s mental power gets exhausted, the Dragons can just come and deal with him easily. Unfortunately for them, Little Hai didn’t need to expend energy in commanding the undead, he already has the Space to do that. The undead can fight as long as Little Hai wants.”

Zhao Hai gave a slight smile and said, “If the Dragons think like that, then that would be great for us. If we can kill all the magic beast in the mountain, then we would generally be taking care of the Dragons’ trump card. Even if the Dragons were to escape, they wouldn’t be a threat to us anymore.”

Green agreed, “It would be troublesome if the Dragons were to keep their magic beast army. Moreover, whether or not the Dragons survive this battle, their reputation is now ruined. After this, even the Humans wouldn’t be as scared of the Dragons as before.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “But I think the Radiant Church wouldn’t just be still upon seeing this. They would definitely have the the Divine Race act as soon as possible. Otherwise, the Divine Race wouldn’t have any allies if they were to delay. Our current exhibition has already informed the Radiant Church that they are no match against us.”

Kun nodded, “It looks like we need to prepare for even more battles.” The group sighed, the jovial mood of their dinner was now gone.

After finishing their meal, Zhao Hai and the others went to the Space’s villa and watched the crazy attacks of the magic beasts. At this point, the levels of the magic beasts that they were encountering had already reached 4th to 5th rank. However, even

these levels had no impact to the undead army. It seems like in the eyes of the undead, all of these beasts were of the same level.

Upon seeing the continual magic beast assault, Zhao Hai couldn't help but knit his brows and said, "From day to night, these magic beasts actually didn't stop. At the same time, no Dragons can be seen. What kind of plot do they have?"

Green was frowning as well, "What are the Dragons thinking? Do they want to attack us this way? It seems to be the wrong way of doing it."

Kun shook his head and said, "Don't think about it too much. If they attack, then let them be. In any case, we are here to destroy them, eliminate them for good. There's not much to think about."

Zhao Hai nodded, but he still frowned, "But I still feel that there is something wrong. We can't go on like this. I must make the undead deal with this as soon as possible."

Naturally, nobody opposed to Zhao Hai's decision. The Space had an uncountable amount of magic beast corpses, all of which can be turned into undead.

In the past, the levels of the magic beasts were too low. Although the Space can still make them into undead, their levels were really too low for them to be 9th ranks. After all, the difference was too far. Therefore, Zhao Hai didn't turn those initial magic beasts into undead. However, the beasts that they were killing at this point were 4th or 5th ranks. They were definitely worth turning into undead.

After deciding on what to do, Zhao Hai immediately came out of the Space and turned all of the dead magic beasts into undead, increasing the amount of undead in Zhao Hai's army.

The Accra Mountain was extremely large, and it had many magic beasts in it, much more than Zhao Hai can count. At this point, the Space has about 10 million 1st and 2nd ranked beasts. Adding the

amount of 3rd, 4th, and 5th ranks, the current count would reach 20 million. The lower ranks can be turned to army provisions, however, those with high enough levels were turned into undead. After this fight, Zhao Hai's undead army would be much more powerful. This gave him more confidence in dealing with the Divine Race.

However, the main thing on Zhao Hai's mind right now was his feeling of unease. It seems like something was going on, and he wanted to know about it as soon as possible.

On the other hand, the adventurers that were behind Zhao Hai had become dumbfounded. They can't see any magic beast corpses anymore. However, the battle in front of them was still going on. There were still blood on the ground, the only thing missing were the dead corpses.

Zhao Hai didn't have the mood to think about any of these right now. His army of undead was rapidly increasing. At first, it was the magic beasts who were attacking them, but now, Zhao Hai's army were the ones who did the assault. Aside from the ground, the aerial battles had heated up as well. There were also a lot of flying beasts in Accra Mountain, and these flying beasts were now getting attacked by Bone Dragons, naturally, they didn't stand a chance.

With the increase of undead, Zhao Hai's rate of advancement had also increased. As they got closer to Dragon's peak, 7th and 8th rank magic beasts had started to appear. Although these beasts weren't numerous, their attacking power wasn't something to scoff at. Even if the undead were able to deal with them, they still managed to drive them back for some time.

But still, Zhao Hai was unable to see any Dragons. This made Zhao Hai very surprised. The skies slowly turned to day, and at this point, the mountain had turned quiet. All of the magic beasts on Accra Mountain were dead.

Zhao Hai's undead had now reached more than ten million.

While Zhao Hai was continuing his slaughter up into the mountain, he was still quite puzzled as to why the Dragons still didn't appear.

Before long, Zhao Hai finally arrived at Dragon's peak. This place was the highest point in Accra Mountains. This place was an extinct volcano. However, even if it was extinct, it was still very hot. The place where the Dragons resided in was in the deep crater where a lake was situated in the bottom. On the inner walls of the crater, caves can be seen one after another. Those caves were the residences of the Dragons.

The terrain here had already been scouted by Zhao Hai's staff. Therefore, Zhao Hai was very clear about the place. But what was not clear was the fact that the Dragons were still absent even if Zhao Hai was already at the mouth of their home.

After thinking about this, he immediately flew to the peak along with his undead army. He wanted to see what was going on. Did the Dragons already escape? This wasn't very likely, it was not in line with the nature of the Dragons.

Chapter 673 – Demon!

Green and the others didn't come out, but they were still looking at Zhao Hai through the monitor. Zhao Hai commanded his army to assemble into cube formation as he slowly flew towards Dragon's Peak.

Before long, the group arrived at the summit, however, Zhao Hai still cannot see any dragons. Zhao Hai was met with a completely empty Dragon's Peak. He couldn't help but stare blankly, did the Dragons actually leave?

Since he couldn't see anything else, Zhao Hai immediately turned to look at the monitor to see if he can discover things there. Zhao Hai carefully watched the monitor, the caverns of the Dragons were still there, the things that the Dragons had collected were present as well. The only thing missing in the place were the Dragons themselves.

Zhao Hai immediately searched around using the monitor. He wanted to see whether the Dragons really left or if something else happened. He believed that there should be clues to be seen. Sure enough, Zhao Hai noticed that the lake under the crater was quite special. The monitor couldn't see anything inside it. The same happened in the Devil Trench as well as the Soul Sucking Reef. Every place where a treasure was found seemed to exhibit this property. Was a treasure present in this lake as well?

After thinking about it, Zhao Hai immediately received the majority of his undead. Then he released some marine undead before he sat inside the Blade Scale Whale. Then the group dove into the lake.

Naturally, the monitor wasn't able to see much into the lake. Compared to outside, the range of vision was too low, only about 500 meters.

Looking from above, the lake wasn't very big. After Zhao Hai

released the Blade Scale Whale, he could only release 100 undead creatures. If he had more, then they wouldn't be able to enter the lake.

This 100 undead formed around Zhao Hai in a cube formation. As the slowly dived into the lake, Zhao Hai discovered something strange, the lake was actually very deep.

He was already inside the lake for about ten minutes. And in these 10 minutes, even if they dove slowly, they should have already covered several kilometers. And yet, the bottom was nowhere to be found.

This was just a lake, how could it be very deep? Zhao Hai became more curious as the dove down. He looked at the monitor and occasionally turned its view to all directions, only to see nothing. Zhao Hai didn't care, he just continued to look at the monitor. Then suddenly, Zhao Hai felt something was wrong.

Then Zhao Hai understood, from what he can theorize, the surrounding waters had become much wider. This prompted him to look around much more seriously.

Sure enough, when he entered the lake, it wasn't very big, he can even see the sides of the lake through the muddy waters. But now, he couldn't see the sides anymore. The only reason for this was that the lake had widened.

Zhao Hai stared for a moment before he stopped his dive. Then he commanded the undead to look for the sides of the lake.

After a long time, Zhao Hai had finally figured out the shape of the lake. The area at the bottom of the lake was much wider than the surface. The shape of the lake was like an inverted bowl, with the mouth being the smallest part and it gets wider as it goes down.

Zhao Hai was now more curious about the lake. He commanded the Blade Scale Whale to continue the dive. At this point, Zhao Hai

was convinced that he had already penetrated about 10 thousand meters into the lake, but it seems like there was no end in sight.

But what made Zhao Hai feel even more strange was the mere absence of magic beasts inside this lake. Not only magic beasts, there weren't any plants here as well. This made Zhao Hai careful, this lake was truly out of the ordinary.

Zhao Hai carefully watched the monitor while also paying attention to his surroundings. There weren't any magic beasts in the lake water, there weren't any marine plants as well. The lake had now become quite clear, Zhao Hai can even see further than the monitor just by using his own two eyes.

The suddenly, Zhao Hai spotted something not far under him. There seems to be a layer of black gas. Zhao Hai found out that the monitor was unable to penetrate through that gas. Zhao Hai stopped, then he hardened his resolve as he commanded the Blade Scale Whale to go straight by the layer of gas.

Before long, Zhao Hai was surrounded by the gas. He also discovered that this gas wasn't the bottom of the lake, instead, it seems to be shrouding something.

Zhao Hai knit the brows of his head, he felt that this layer was not simple. It can actually block the monitor, at the same time, it also seems to be concealing something inside the lake.

Zhao Hai decided to explore it by himself. He went out of the Blade Scale Whale and placed his hand on the layer. Unexpectedly, the layer allowed his hand to go through, but it also blocked the lake water from entering.

Zhao Hai felt great, he received the Blade Scale Whale before he entered the layer of gas. The layer wasn't very thick, it was just too dark, making Zhao Hai unable to see anything. But just about two meters away, light can then be seen. Upon coming out of the layer of gas, the scene that Zhao Hai saw gave him a huge surprise.

Inside was a huge space, it might even be as big as the entire Accra Mountain. Inside this huge space was a similarly large magic formation. The formation had mostly occupied the entire space's floor.

This magic formation looked mysteriously exceptional, it comprised of innumerable magic symbols. But what made Zhao Hai feel strange was that these magic symbols were all colored blood red, and it was connected to each other by flowing blood. Inside this magic formation were Dragons, about 10 thousand of them. All of which were in a static position on the formation. Their positions were very strange, it seems to form a strange pattern, something that looked like a devil's face.

On the sides of the Dragons were countless amounts of lesser dragons, which were similarly just lying there. Along with the Dragons, all of them formed a huge devil face. At the same time, Zhao Hai also discovered a detail, both Dragons and lesser dragons were killed with a big wound on their necks. Their blood flowing into the magic symbols on the formation.

Zhao Hai was currently flying up above the formation. The layer of gas looked black when he was back in the lake, but now, it actually changed into the same color as blood. At the same time, red liquid was raining down from the layer of gas. When this red liquid fell to the ground, it immediately fused into the magic formation. It was quite strange because there weren't any places that the liquid could flow into, all of them fused with the magic formations and just vanished without a trace.

Zhao Hai knitted the brows on his head again, he felt that this space was really strange. Although the entire place was bright, he could see upon further inspection that the light was also tinted red. This color scheme could actually make someone feel choked.

Zhao Hai placed his hand out and caught a drop of the red liquid and then placed it on his nose to smell it. Almost instantaneously, the smell of blood assaulted his nose. Zhao Hai's expression

immediately turned ugly, the red rain was actually blood!

Then Zhao Hai turned his head back to the formation as well as the amount of red liquid raining down. He couldn't estimate how much blood this was.

Zhao Hai frowned, then he waved his hand as a clump of black gas came out and wrapped the Dragons and the lesser dragons. Zhao Hai wanted to turn them into undead.

At this time, a sharp screech was suddenly heard, then it was followed by a bellow, "Who dares!" Then a big bloody red hand reached out from a place not far from the layer of gas and blocked the black gas. Surprisingly it actually succeeded in doing so.

Zhao Hai gawked, his expression turned ugly, this bloody hand can actually defend against Zhao Hai's dark magic. This showed that the owner of this hand was quite strong. Zhao Hai turned his head towards the hand and said, "Who's there? Come out!"

"Hahaha!" An ominous laugh was heard, then a person came in from the other side of the layer. Upon seeing this person, Zhao Hai's pupils couldn't help but shrink. This person's body was very tall and big, about 2.5 meters high. It wore beast skin garments but also had scales covering its body. It also had two curved horns on its head, something that looked like an argali's horn. In each of its hand were six fingers, along with long and pointy nails that shone blue. On its back were a pair of big meaty wings that flapped constantly. It also had a tail, it was very long, about five or six meters. On the head of the tail was something that looked like an arrow point. The tail was constantly moving around, just like how snakes slithered.

At this time, Cai'er suddenly said, "Young Master, that's someone from the Demon Realm. Specifically, from the realm's most formidable beings, Demon Clan. In fact, the entire realm was ruled by these Demons."

When he heard Cai'er, Zhao Hai's eyes couldn't help but shrink.

He looked at the Demon and said, “I didn’t think that I’d be able to meet a Demon from the Demon Realm. How can you appear here?’

As soon as the Demon heard Zhao Hai, he couldn’t help but gawk. Then he laughed out loud and said, “I didn’t expect the continent to remember creatures like us. Hahaha. This is interesting, too interesting!”

Zhao Hai looked at the Demon and said, “Why can you appear here? Is there a spatial rift?”

The Demon looked at Zhao Hai and then laughed once again, “You’re quite intelligent. But you’re ruthless as well. You actually killed all of the magic beasts in Accra Mountain. Well, I think I need to thank you for that.”

Zhao Hai was puzzled, so he asked, “What do you mean?”

The Demon looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Well, in any case, you cannot escape, so it doesn’t matter if I tell you. There is actually no spatial crack here. However, the place where the rift was in in the Demonic Abyss. That was where we had set up a crack between the Demon Realm and the Ark Continent.”

Chapter 674 – Blood Void

Although this was already speculated on the continent, hearing it from the mouth of a Demon still shocked Zhao Hai. It turned out to be true.

The Demon enjoyed Zhao Hai's surprised appearance, he laughed and then gnashed his teeth as he said, "When we discovered the crack towards Ark Continent in the past, we sent people in order to investigate it. And we found out that the Ark Continent is much better than the Demon Realm. There is warm sunshine here, clean water, green grass, and endless food. For such a good place to be inhabited by inferior creatures is unforgivable. So we launched a war against the continent."

Then the Demon's face couldn't help but change to hatred, "However, we didn't think that the Ark Continent would have a strange law, disallowing God-ranked demons to come here. In the end, our Demon Race's army got defeated by the lower lifeforms. But before returning to the Demon Realm, we left a spatial rift in the Demonic Abyss."

After speaking about the spatial rift, the Demon's face turned proud as he said, "That spatial rift wasn't big, but it was quite carefully made that it would evade the notice of the Humans. This allowed us to investigate the situation in the Ark Continent. And then, more than a thousand years ago, His Majesty the Demon King decided to launch a second great war. In order to prepare for this war, a large enough spatial rift would need to be prepared. Therefore, for a thousand years, we prepared this Blood Void in order to enlarge the spatial crack. But if we want to use the Blood Void, we would need to have enough blood. Killing Humans would be detrimental to our plans, therefore we decided to use the magic beasts and the Dragons in Accra Mountain."

After speaking up to here, the Demon looked at Zhao Hai and smiled, "For this plan, we dug out a huge space below Accra

Mountain then established the Blood Void in this place. Digging the place up and establishing the Blood Void took us nearly a thousand years. And in the process, we discovered that the Dragons were subordinates of people called the Divine Race. And their purpose was to take the Ark Continent as well. So how could we make them succeed? The Ark Continent is ours, that is certain. We already have plans on how to deal with them, but you came and attacked the Dragons. You really are ruthless, but killing all the magic beasts in the Accra Mountain saved us a lot of trouble. Hahaha. To be honest, you're quite good. If you were someone from the Demon Realm, then you would've gained a high position."

Zhao Hai's expression was quite difficult. He didn't think that his action of eliminating the Dragons would actually help the Demons. Moreover, the Demons hadn't been in the continent for a short time. They had been here for more than a thousand years.

The Demon looked at Zhao Hai's expression, he got more excited as he laughed and said, "With all these blood, the operation has become a success. When the rift opens, an army from the Demon Realm shall arrive in the Ark Continent, killing the lower beings and occupying it for our own use!"

Zhao Hai coldly snorted and said, "Keep dreaming. Even if you can open the rift, what significance would that have? Your God-ranked experts are still unable to reach the continent. Do you want to rely on your army to conquer the continent? You're being too naive."

The Demon coldly snorted and said, "You're the one being naive. Do you really think that your human armies can go against the people of the Demon Realm? We Demons grew up killing, every member of my race is an outstanding soldier. With just your Human army, how could you defend against the Demons?"

Zhao Hai snorted, "Hmph, I alone have an undead army of tens of millions. There's no need for Human armies, I am sufficient

enough to deal with your Demon Race.”

The Demon laughed and said, “Right, right, what you say is true. You really are quite strong. But you underestimate our Demon army. Your undead might be strong, but we have our own strong undead as well, at the very least, they can defend against your undead. Most importantly, you will die today. And with your death, your undead army shall vanish as well. So when our Demon army comes, how can the Humans cope with us, given how disunited they are?”

Zhao Hai snickered, “Are you really convinced that you can deal with me?”

The Demon laughed, “I know that you’re able to do Space Magic along with your undead magic. But what you don’t know is that the Blood Void not only opens spatial rifts, it locks space as well. Even if your undead are strong, you cannot call them over here. And although you are a 9th rank, we are 9th ranks as well. You cannot escape today.”

Zhao Hai coldly smiled and said, “That might not be true. To thank for your information, I shall allow you to be an undead and then join my own army.”

Then Zhao Hai waved his hand as large quantities of undead appeared inside the space. Then they threw themselves over to the Demons.

The Demons present looked at Zhao Hai releasing his undead with shocked faces. The lead Demon looked at Zhao Hai and said, “This is impossible. How can you summon undead? The Blood Void should have imprisoned the space here!”

Zhao Hai sneered and said, “Whether you can imprison my Space or not isn’t something for you to decide. If my Space can easily be locked, then I would’ve already died long ago.”

The Demon looked at Zhao Hai with grief, while blocking the

undead, the Demon said, “Even if you can kill us, the Blood Void had already succeeded. It will show its effects and when our Demon army comes through the rift, you shall die.”

Zhao Hai coldly snorted and said, “I already knew that your Demon army would come. I just didn’t expect it to be quick. It doesn’t matter, the Ark continent is ours, and nobody can take it away.” Then Zhao Hai waved his hand as a clump of black gas flew out and surrounded the bodies of the Dragons and lesser dragons, turning them into undead.

The Demon looked at Zhao Hai’s action and couldn’t help but get more angry. He knew that even if the Blood Void succeeded, it still needs more blood in order to reach its peak. The blood of these corpses were enough to sustain that. If the blood of these Dragons were to get drained into the Blood Void, then the Blood Void would be bigger. But now that Zhao Hai had turned them into undead, the Blood Void would be smaller than expected.

However, the Demons were entangled by the undead, so they couldn’t do anything about it right now. The lead Demon clenched his teeth, he knew this operation cannot fail. Otherwise, the Demons would have no chance in conquering the Ark Continent.

At the thought of this, he gave a command to his fellow Demons. Then the other Demons surrounded him as they continued to block the undead. Then the lead Demon started to mumble a spell.

Zhao Hai knew that the Blood Void needed to be stopped, but the undead attacks did nothing. This formation seems to be invincible, there was no way to damage it. If this Blood Void continues, then the Demons would have an avenue to attack the continent. When that time comes, the Humans would certainly suffer some losses.

Therefore, Zhao Hai decided to move, he has the strength of a God, so he should be able to deal with these Demons.

But through this fight, Zhao Hai also discovered that the fighting strength of these Demons was quite strong. His undead were 9th

ranks, their strength wasn't something that common 9th ranks could endure. But these Demons were able to block the attacks of these undead, and were also able to do it for quite a long time. This was something that Zhao Hai didn't expect.

Zhao Hai knew that he couldn't delay this fight for much longer. His staff changed into a blood red sword, then his body moved and appeared on the side of a Demon. After that, he swung his sword towards its neck. The Demon responded quite quickly, his body immediately went down as the two horns on his head moved towards Zhao Hai. At the same time, the Demon's tail went for Zhao Hai's heart, like a snake with exposed fangs.

Zhao Hai coldly snorted, then he moved his sword and swung downward. This move was too fast that the Demon wasn't able to dodge it at all. The Demon's head was sliced by Zhao Hai, cutting it in half along the middle.

But what Zhao Hai didn't expect was when his sword sliced the Demon's head, it didn't die right away. The Demon moved its hand and caught Zhao Hai's sword, its tail continued on to penetrate towards Zhao Hai's heart.

Zhao Hai gawked, he didn't think that these Demons would actually have this much vitality. Its life force was so strong that it could still move despite already being killed.

However, Zhao Hai wasn't afraid, he moved his hand and shrunk his sword into a shorter one, removing it from the grasp of the demon. At the same time, he also went to the side of another Demon, dodging the tail in the process. Then he went on and swung his sword to the other Demon.

Chapter 675 – Seven Days

Zhao Hai didn't bother himself with those Demons who were injured and were still moving. He believed that those Demons were already dead, they just kept their movements due to their abundant lifeforce.

Zhao Hai's judgement was correct. These Demons were already dead, but since they lived in the Demon Realm all their life, their vitality was just too strong, so these fatal strikes weren't able to kill them straight away. After counter attacking, these Demons should be motionless, this was a common deathrattle for Demons.

The middle Demon didn't stop his incantation as he looked coldly at Zhao Hai. The incantation continued on, he didn't move even a single bit. Even as Zhao Hai stabbed his sword through this throat, the Demon just looked at Zhao Hai. Blood was now flowing out of his mouth, but he still kept mumbling the spell. The Demon smiled at Zhao Hai and then used some of his strength and said, "Your actions are useless, the Blood Void wouldn't stop as long as blood is present. The blood in here is already enough, and with our own blood as a primer, the Demon army will now come and avenge us."

Zhao Hai looked at the Demon and said, "Your spell should be the self-destruct spell right? You're just talking to me in order to pass time and include me in your explosion. Hehe, I know how strong you people are as well as how formidable the Blood Void is. However, you aren't aware of how strong I am."

The Demon's complexion changed, his incantation was truly the self-destruct spell. This spell absorbs the strength of several people in order to create a very big explosion. Everything that he did before was to make Zhao Hai think that he was casting a spell in order to activate the formation. He wanted to use this method in order to kill Zhao Hai.

Actually, he was taking a risk. He knew that he wouldn't be able

to live, so he just planned to use his and the others' blood in order to help power the formation. If he can kill Zhao Hai in the process, then it would greatly benefit the Demon Realm.

However, he didn't know that Zhao Hai was aware of his spell. He also discovered that Zhao Hai was quite knowledgeable about the Demons. One has to know that when the Demons and the Humans fought the last time, the Demons still hadn't invented this spell, so it was impossible for the Humans to recognize it. For Zhao Hai to know about it was truly a surprise for the Demon.

Zhao Hai looked at the Demon and said, "Do you find it strange, the reason why I know this? Well, I'm not going to tell you, think about it for the rest of your life." Then Zhao Hai's went back, leaving the area completely.

Naturally, the reason why Zhao Hai knew about this was Cai'er. Demons completely ignored the fact that plants were ever present in the Demon Realm. And at the same time, they were unaware of the existence of Cai'er.

Cai'er was a plant that had been watching the Demon Realm for many years, she might even know more about the Demon Realm compared to the Demons. Therefore, the Blood Void, as well as the self destruct incantation was something that she knew about.

This Blood Void was a truly powerful Demon formation, its might was quite strong for a magic formation of its kind. However, something unusually strange about this formation was that its power was exerted on someplace else.

This kind of magic formation was called a primary-secondary formation. It was a set of formation that had two parts, the blood formation and the void formation. The blood portion was the energy provider of the formation. It would collect blood and transform it into energy. Then the blood formation would then transfer the energy over to the void formation where the power is fully exerted.

Most importantly, this magic formation was irreversible, it cannot be stopped. In other words, as long as the formation is established and blood was supplied, this formation would start immediately. If the blood supplied was few, then the power would be small as well, otherwise, if the blood was in high volume, then the formation would be very formidable. With how much blood was supplied on this formation under Accra Mountain, Zhao Hai knew that it would be formidable, at the same time, the void formation was surely inside the Demonic Abyss.

After the Blood Void starts, it would take seven days before its full power can be exhibited. If someone wanted to destroy this formation in advance, then the formation would activate in advance as well. This made Zhao Hai decide to refrain from using his Bone Dragons to attack it. If he would destroy this formation, then the Demons would be coming in advance. If he just let this formation be, then he would still have seven days to prepare.[1]

The only reason why Zhao Hai attacked the Demons was to gauge how powerful they were. In the future, when the battle starts, Zhao Hai would have a basis on how strong a Demon army would be.

These Demons were truly fierce, they were 9th ranks, but in Cai'er's words, the status of these specific Demons shouldn't be high. They would at the very most be medium-rank. There might be a lot of these Demons in the Demon Realm, however, their army would surely be mostly comprised of low-ranked Demons, with the worst one being weaker than a Human 6th rank. But in general, a group of Human 7th ranks wouldn't be able to contend with a group of low-ranked demons.

After hearing this, Zhao Hai's heart couldn't help but turn heavy. He thought that he would be fighting the Divine Race, but instead, it seems like he would be facing the Demons first.

But he didn't regret his action in Accra Mountain, killing the magic beasts and fueling the Blood Void formation in the process.

Zhao Hai knew that if he didn't exterminate the magic beasts, then the Demons would still do it secretly just as what they did with the Dragons. The outcome of their method was no different to Zhao Hai's plan to kill the magic beasts.

On the other hand, Zhao Hai was quite happy. He was happy to know about all of these, and the fact that he had seven days to prepare. Otherwise, if the Demons were to suddenly emerge from the Demonic Abyss, then many deaths would occur due to the Humans being caught off guard.

Just as the Zhao Hai left, the Demons exploded as well. However, Zhao Hai casted a protective shield over the formation, otherwise it might get destroyed and activate the formation in Demonic Abyss in advance.

The Demon explosion was quite strong, but since Zhao Hai was now a God-ranked expert, he didn't bother to block. The Demons' bodies weren't spared and their blood fuelled the formation. Seeing all of these, Zhao Hai couldn't help but sigh, he knew that because of this, the void formation would get stronger.

After lamenting on the fact, Zhao Hai's body flashed as he entered the Space. Green and the others' expressions were quite ugly while they were sitting on the villa's living room. They were able to witness what just happened, they didn't expect that the day for battle had come this quickly.

When Zhao Hai entered the living room, he turned his head to Green and said, "Grandpa Green, you should return to the Black Wasteland and prepare. Turn the entire place into something suitable for retreat. When the war comes, I'm afraid a lot of refugees would be forced to flee their homes. You must be ready to accept them."

Green nodded, then Zhao Hai turned to Kun and said, "Grandpa Kun, you should head back to Golden Island and prepare as well. Have all the ships equipped for war. At the same time, have Golden

Island be primed to be a stopover station.”

Kun also nodded, then Zhao Hai sighed as he retrieved his messenger fish. Then he talked to it, “Your Majesty, can you hear me? Please answer if you can.”

Then the voice of the Mermaid Queen was heard, “I can hear mister, is there something wrong?”

Zhao Hai sighed once again, then he reiterated how he discovered the Demons as well as the matter with the Blood Void formation. After telling his story, Zhao Hai said, “I hope that Your Majesty would have her people prepare. Battle would come soon. When the time comes, the Fishman race can enter a channel that I would open that would lead you to the continent. I hope you can provide us with suitable support.”

The Queen didn’t think that the matter would come this fast, however, she still immediately replied, “Alright, Mister can feel relieved. I shall immediately arrange a Fishman army that can head to the continent right now.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he said, “Then I’ll have to thank Your Majesty in advance. I shall go and inform the others, so I need to leave the conversation first. Take care, Your Majesty.”

The Queen replied, “Mister, you take care as well. Your significance to the continent is quite huge. I hope that you can protect yourself well.’

Zhao Hai calmly replied, “Your Majesty can rest assured, I shall take care of myself. Then, Your Majesty, farewell.”

Then Zhao Hai retrieved his Messenger Fish and the took out another Fish. This messenger fish would connect to the Beast King. Zhao Hai immediately talked to the Beast King and told him about the situation, then he had the Beastmen prepare their army to fight at any time. The Beast King didn’t say anything and just agreed. The Beast King already made ample preparations, so he

wasn't too anxious about this matter.

The Zhao Hai called Billy and the Elf Queen, explaining everything to them as well. Then Zhao Hai came out of the Space and appeared inside Rosen Empire's palace.

Zhao Hai didn't plan to delay, he only has seven days to prepare. At this point, the Human nations were completely unaware of what was about to happen. One could say that they had zero preparation. With only seven days to prepare, this time frame was truly very short.

Because of this, Zhao Hai wanted to save as much time as possible. He would first look for the Rosen Emperor, convincing him of the events and then have him sign the beast skin scroll. After that, Zhao Hai would proceed to approach the other Emperors of the continent.

Chapter 676 – Rushing About

The place where Zhao Hai appeared on was outside the Emperor's study. He can just appear inside, but Zhao Hai refrained from doing this in order to save the Emperor some face.

Although the Emperor's study was quite ordinary, there were some protectors hidden inside. Even the eunuch who was guarding the door outside was an expert himself.

When Zhao Hai appeared, these protectors immediately centered their attention to him. The Eunuch outside the Emperor's study looked coldly at Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai knew that this Eunuch was always with the Emperor, the Eunuch might look very ordinary, but in reality he was an 8th rank Assassin.

Moreover, Zhao Hai also knew that the fellow that was always with the Emperor was also a high-level expert. However, all of these matters were unimportant to Zhao Hai. He was not here to assassinate the Emperor, therefore, he bowed to the Eunuch and said, "I ask sir Eunuch to please tell Father-in-law that I needed his audience."

The Old Eunuch naturally knew who Zhao Hai was, but since Zhao Hai appeared suddenly, he couldn't help but get hostile. So when he heard Zhao Hai, he immediately returned the bow and said, "I ask the Emperor's son-in-law to wait for a while."

Then the Eunuch opened the door of the study and walked in. Before long, he came out again and gave a bow to Zhao Hai before saying, "The Emperor invites his Son-in-law inside." Then he opened the door for Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai gave another bow to the Eunuch and said, "Thank You, Sir Eunuch." Then he went inside the study.

The Emperor was standing inside the study with his back facing Zhao Hai. When Zhao Hai entered, he immediately bowed to the

Emperor and said, “I have seen Father-in-law.”

The Emperor turned around and calmly said, “Little Hai, I always thought that you’re quite the discrete person. How come you came in this way this time?”

Zhao Hai understood what the Emperor meant, he was blaming Zhao Hai for being quite crude inside the Imperial Palace. Zhao Hai turned serious as he said, “Something quite sudden happened, so it’s quite urgent. I had no other choice but to use this method, I hope that Father can excuse me.”

The Emperor looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Alright, I know that you’re a sensible child. You wouldn’t do anything without proper purpose. Tell me, what did you come here for?”

Then Zhao Hai took out his beast skin scroll and then handed it over to the Emperor, “I’ll have Father read this first. Then I will explain it to you in detail.”

The Emperor nodded, then he received the beast skin scroll and slowly opened it. With a serious expression, the Emperor carefully read the contents.

After a short while, he placed the beast skin scroll down and looked at Zhao Hai, “Is this the reason why you dealt with the Dragons? Where are they now?”

With a straight expression, Zhao Hai replied, “They’re all dead. Not only them, all of the magic beasts in Accra Mountain has been exterminated.”

The Emperor gently knit his eyebrows and said, “You did all of that?”

Zhao Hai forced a smile and said, “Half of it. The other half is not in my credit.”

The Emperor was confused with this reply, he looked at Zhao Hai and said, “What happened? Tell me everything carefully.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he started the story when he fixed the Divine Artifact of the Dwarves, then it moved to how he retrieved the Beast God Spear, then onto when he helped the Fishmen, then to the Elves, and in the end, the Demons. Everything was said quite carefully.

The Emperor listened to Zhao Hai, and when Zhao Hai finished, the Emperor's face was quite pale, he looked up at Zhao Hai and said, "So you're saying that in seven days, the spatial rift in the Demonic Abyss would be opened and then a Demon army would come and invade us?"

Zhao Hai nodded, then he forced a smile and said, "I'm afraid that is what is going to happen. Moreover, there is no means to stop the Blood Void formation. If we destroy it, then the rift would immediately open. We can't have the rift open ahead of time."

The Emperor stood up, then he walked back and forth inside the study. After some time he looked at Zhao Hai and said, "And the Divine Race? You just said that there's a possibility that the Divine Race would come."

Zhao Hai bitterly smiled and said, "Yes father, its highly probable that the Divine Race would come, otherwise, the Dragons wouldn't have made their move. It is because of this that I needed to deal with the Dragons. Originally, I wanted to come here after I had dealt with the matter with the Elves. Then after that, talk to the Emperors of the continent, having everyone work together in order to deal with the Radiant Church. And making us unite when the Divine Race arrives. However, it seems like that wouldn't work anymore because of the appearance of the Demons as well as the motion of the Dragons. Even if the Demons weren't present, we still couldn't afford to have the Dragons take control of the Lyon Empire. .If that happens and the Divine Realm did come, we would be placed in a much more passive position compared to if the Dragons were eliminated."

The Emperor looked at Zhao Hai, then he sighed and said, "So it

turns out that you had been busy with this for a long time. I really didn't think that the Demons and the Divine Race would take interest in our continent. It seems like a huge chaos is coming. You can rest assured, I shall immediately have my men prepare. Are you going to the other Empires now?"

Zhao Hai nodded, "Yes, the next one that I'll go to is the Buddha Empire. The Demonic Abyss is situated there. I must have them prepare ahead of time. Father, please sign this beast skin scroll. I'm afraid that I won't be able to convince the Buddha Emperor if I don't have your mark."

The Emperor nodded and said, "Alright, then I'll sign it immediately so that you can get on your way." Then he picked up his pen and signed the beast skin scroll. After that, he handed the scroll over to Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai took the scroll before giving the Emperor a bow and then vanished from the room.

After Zhao Hai left, the Emperor talked, "What do you think?"

A chilly voice answered, "Chaos has come."

The Emperor nodded, then he turned his head and shouted a command, "Strike the Palace Drums, ring the Warning Bell!" The Eunuch complied and then left his position.

The Palace Drums and the Warning Bell were symbolic items of the Rosen Empire. Only during life and death situations of the Empire would the drums be used. At the same time, when the Warning Bell sounds and rings for 12 times, all the Nobles and Ministers of the Empire should already be inside the Imperial Palace. If one fails to arrive, then they would have their title revoked and then executed for treason. One could see from these scenarios how important those two items were.

Zhao Hai didn't have the mood to care about this now. He had appeared outside the Buddha Empire's Imperial palace. He didn't appear inside the Imperial Palace, after all, he only had a few dealings with the Buddha Empire. His status here wasn't as high as

back in the Rosen Empire.

Zhao Hai knew that if he appeared inside the Imperial Palace, then the Buddha Emperor would surely come to dislike him. For Zhao Hai, this scenario was extremely detrimental to his cause. Therefore, he chose to appear right outside the palace.

After Zhao Hai arrived, he immediately went towards the reception. The reception was just like the one in Rosen Empire. There were two Eunuchs in charge of registering everyone who came to visit. At the same time, there were also some Eunuchs fluttering in all directions.

When Zhao Hai entered the reception, he immediately bowed towards the two Eunuchs, "This one has seen the Sir Eunuchs. This one is Zhao Hai, I'm here to seek an audience with the Buddha Emperor."

The two Eunuchs knew about Zhao Hai's status, therefore, they didn't dare to ignore him. The two of them stood up and bowed to Zhao Hai as one of them said, "Are you the Buda Clan's Patriarch, Mister Zhao Hai?"

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "I am indeed Zhao Hai. Please do arrange a meeting with the Emperor. I came here for an urgent matter."

The two Eunuchs didn't dare to delay, so one of them immediately said, "Right, Mister can rest assured, we shall take this matter with haste. Please take a seat first, Mister." Then one of the Eunuch wrote Zhao Hai's name in the record as one of them immediately arranged for someone to inform the Imperial Palace.

The response of the two eunuchs wasn't strange. Zhao Hai's status in the Buddha Empire wasn't low, after all, he has established a magic beast business with the Buddha Empire. At the same time, everyone knew that the Buddha Emperor has a good impression of Zhao Hai. He even hosted a banquet to welcome him, the Emperor was even quite happy when talking to Zhao Hai.

And most importantly, rumors has been circulating in the past two days. It was said that Zhao Hai had eliminated 40 Dragons inside the Lyon Empire's capital. Zhao Hai has become the first Human to slay a Dragon in the current history of the Human race.

Therefore, these eunuchs didn't dare to neglect Zhao Hai's visit. Even if they had all the courage of their lifetime, they still wouldn't dare to offend someone who had slain a Dragon.

Before long, a young eunuch came and bowed to Zhao Hai, "Mister, please come with me. The Emperor has invited you over to his study."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he walked towards the Imperial Palace along with that young eunuch. It didn't take a long time before they arrived outside the Buddha Emperor's study. The Eunuch who guarded the Emperor's study immediately bowed to Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, come in. His Majesty is already waiting for you." Zhao Hai nodded and then entered the room.

The Buddha Emperor was already standing inside, waiting for Zhao Hai to come in. When he saw Zhao Hai arrive, the Buddha Emperor immediately laughed and said, "Mister, why did you come? What made you so anxious that you had to make an urgent appointment?"

Zhao Hai bowed and replied, "I have seen Your Majesty. I came here this time in order to discuss about an important matter."

The Emperor smiled and said, "Mister is too polite. Please sit down and then tell me."

After Zhao Hai gave his thanks to the Emperor, he took out his beast skin scroll and said, "Your Majesty, please take a look at this first. Then I will tell you the details."

The Buddha Emperor smiled, then he received the scroll and slowly unraveled it. His response was similar to the Rosen Emperor. He had a shocked expression while he read the scroll.

Then he looked up at Zhao Hai and said, “Mister, are the contents in here true?”

Zhao Hao nodded and said, “This is a crucial matter, so how can I deceive Your Majesty? This information only tells a small part of the story. The reason why I deal with the Dragons was because.....” Then Zhao Hai told the Emperor everything up to the Demon Race’s matter. When the Buddha Emperor heard that a spatial rift would open, and moreover, in the Demonic Abyss, his face couldn’t help but turn pale.

Chapter 677 – Your Excellency, You Have No Choice But To Govern Us

What can seven days make?

If this question was presented to the commoners, then they would surely provide a multitude of answers. However, for an Emperor who would receive an attack on his empire, these seven days was just too short.

This was what the Buddha Emperor was thinking about right now. Seven days was just too short, he was stumped on what to do.

When Zhao Hai left the Buddha Empire, he then went to the Aksu Empire to tell Boris of this information. Although Zhao Hai and Boris had a grudge in the past, Boris was now quite angry towards the Radiant Church. Moreover, this was a Demon invasion, so no matter what, Zhao Hai still needs to tell Boris about it. After all, Boris was also an Emperor of a Human nation.

After he awkwardly told the news to Boris, Zhao Hai went back to the Lyon Empire. Zhao Hai knew what was currently going on in the Lyon Empire. The Empire was now in a state of anarchy. The Great Nobles were currently managing the Empire. However, in the minds of these Nobles, Zhao Hai was the Lyon Empire's current ruler. Therefore, it was Zhao Hai's tasks to manage the things in the Empire.

Zhao Hai didn't teleport towards the Lyon Empire. Instead, after he came out of the Space, he rode on the back of a Bone Dragon and then entered the capital.

Just as he arrived at the capital's skies, he immediately discovered that the place exploded into cheers. Zhao Hai looked downward and saw civilian people standing on the square and cheering at him.

Zhao Hai wasn't expecting the situation, he didn't think that

the Lyon Empire's commoners would like him this much. This made him confused, in his opinion, he didn't do anything. So why would these people cheer for him?

Although the Dragons had ruled the Empire for a few days, but because of how overboard the lesser dragons had become, killing civilians whenever they want, it wasn't strange that the civilians had already hated the Dragons.

But since the Dragons were very powerful, and were quite known to be invincible, the commoners were left not being able to resist. Now that Zhao Hai had eliminated the Dragons, the civilians were naturally very happy.

While riding the Bone Dragon, Zhao Hai flew directly to the Lyon Empire's palace. As soon as he landed on the square, the Great Nobles immediately welcomed him. They originally weren't in the palace, but when they heard that Zhao Hai had come, they immediately went to see him.

Zhao Hai looked at the nobles and then said, "Let's go to the Great Hall, I have something to tell you all." Then he turned to walk towards the Imperial Palace Great Hall.

These Nobles looked at Zhao Hai with no hostility, instead, all of them had a very happy expression. In their minds, for Zhao Hai to go to the Great Hall, this meant that he had accepted his own status, and that he would rule the Lyon Empire.

Moreover, the mere fact that Zhao Hai came back meant that his fight with the Dragons was finished. After seeing Zhao Hai being safe and sound, without a single scratch on his body, it showed the nobles that Zhao Hai did indeed have the overwhelming strength to face the Dragons!

These Great Nobles didn't think that Zhao Hai could eliminate the Dragons. In their opinion, this task was impossible. Not suffering any losses was already good, so how was it possible to eradicate the Dragons.

When Zhao Hai headed to the Great Hall, these Nobles also followed behind him. Zhao Hai looked at the throne in the Great Hall and then sighed. He didn't sit on the throne and just turned to look at the Nobles. These Nobles felt a chill when they met Zhao Hai's gaze. They couldn't help but get startled, they knew that Zhao Hai didn't like them, so they just lowered their heads in obedience.

After scanning the Nobles, Zhao Hai said, "Did you know what you just did? You almost made the Humans fall into an irredeemable place just because of benefits. I really want to kill all of you, I really do!"

The Nobles lowered their heads further. They can feel the killing intent in Zhao Hai's words. If that killing intent was tangible, then they would have had trouble breathing.

Zhao Hai coldly snorted, then he turned his hand over and retrieved the beast skin scroll, then he threw it over to a Great Noble and said, "Look at it yourself and see if I am exaggerating."

The Great Noble caught the beast skin scroll and looked at it. He read the contents of the scroll and when he was finished, he was coldly sweating when he looked at Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai coldly snorted, then the Great Noble couldn't help but bend his waist. Then the scroll was handed over to the next noble who had the exact same reaction as the first one. The scroll was then passed over to the Great Nobles inside the Hall before the scroll returned to Zhao Hai's hands. At this point, the Nobles in the hall were having pale expressions. The word 'frightened' was an understatement.

Zhao Hai swept his gaze across the hall and then sighed, "There's no use in scolding all of you right now. I'm not familiar with the Lyon Empire, so I cannot be the Emperor. With how things are going, I don't have the time to be a ruler. You have seven days to prepare." Then Zhao Hai told them about his encounter with the

Demons back in Accra Mountain.

The mouths of these Nobles were gaped open as their eyes stared straight at Zhao Hai, it seems like they had turned into idiots. They didn't think that a calamity has come. The Demons would arrive to the continent soon. This was the Demons, beings who would kill humans without even blinking. How could this be!

Zhao Hai looked at the expressions of these Nobles and coldly snorted, making these Great Nobles recover their senses. All of them looked at each other, they didn't think that matters would come this quickly. There were seven days before the Demon army arrives, what can they do in these seven days?

Zhao Hai snorted and said, "Seven days, think about what you would do in seven days. It would be impossible for me to stay in the Lyon Empire for all this time. I shall be heading to the Buddha Empire in order to assist them with resisting the Demon Army. As for the Lyon Empire? It would be left to your discretion. Whether you want it to crumble or to return to its former glory before the Dragons arrived, I don't care. All of these shall be left to all of you to take care of."

And just as Zhao Hai finished talking, the Great Nobles knelt in front of him as the oldest one of them said, "Your Excellency, you have no other choice but to govern us. We know that we had made a mistake, but we truly didn't expect the situation to reach this degree. We ask Your Excellency to remain. We want you to be the Lyon Empire's ruler, please stay here."

The other nobles expressed their agreement. When he saw these people, Zhao Hai couldn't help but feel a headache. He does not have the time to manage an Empire at this time. The Demons were about to appear and he needs to be in the frontlines of battle to block them. This would give the Rosen Empire and the other powers to make their proper arrangements.

Zhao Hai looked at the Great Nobles and sighed, "I really don't

have the time to manage the Lyon Empire. The Demons are coming soon, and I need to head towards the Demonic Abyss right now in order to find a way to block the Demons. Only in this way would the continent be able to have a little more time to prepare.”

The Nobles looked at each other, they knew that what Zhao Hai said was true. But at this time, the Lyon Empire needed Zhao Hai. After the matter with the Dragons, the Great Nobles weren't exactly well regarded by the population. No matter which one of them were to become the Emperor, the civilians would naturally disagree. And a chaotic Lyon Empire wasn't what they need right now, seeing that the Demons have come.

At the same time, Zhao Hai also knew that what the old Noble said was true, he couldn't help but have a headache. Zhao Hai was aware that the Great Nobles had already lost popular support. This was because they were largely responsible for the Dragons' quick occupation of the Lyon Empire. The commoners had hostile feeling to these fellows, and if one of them were to get the throne, then the entire Empire would definitely be thrown into chaos. On the other hand, if Zhao Hai were to take the seat of the Emperor, then the populace would surely accept it.

Thinking about these matters did indeed cause Zhao Hai's head to ache, he looked at these Nobles and couldn't help but sigh, “I can be the Emperor and I shall go and announce it outside later. But after that, I shall be heading to the Demonic Abyss. The remaining matters would need to be handed over to all of you. However, I shall have someone supervise all of your actions.

When the Great Nobles heard Zhao Hai, they immediately burst into happiness. Zhao Hai doing this meant that he would just be an Emperor in name, while the nobles had the true power in their hands. However, this happiness wasn't because of the power, it was because of Zhao Hai accepting the throne. If he still declined, then the Lyon Empire would be finished.

Once the Lyon Empire turned chaotic, the ones who would lose

out greatly would be these Nobles. Although they were thousand year old clans, their roots were still in the Lyon Empire. They couldn't afford to have the Empire be in a chaotic state.

Zhao Hai looked at the Nobles of this Empire, then he coldly snorted and said, "Wait a moment." Then his body vanished. Before long, he reappeared along with two other people. One of them was a man with a stature that was tall and big, he was about two meters tall. The other one was a woman, tall and beautiful, but her complexion was quite pale, it seems like she was not quite healthy.

Zhao Hai looked at these Nobles and said, "I'll be heading to the Demonic Abyss. The matters of the Empire shall be handed to all of you. This is Evan and Ruyen. If there's something that you cannot decide on, then ask for their opinion. Understood?"

Chapter 678 – History's Most Unique Throne Ascension

Aside from Evan and Ruyen, Zhao Hai really didn't have anybody else to call over. And since Evan had ruled over a Duchy in the past, he should have some experience in running a country.

Ruyen has done a good job in Aksu Empire all this time. It was impossible for Zhao Hai to see her for a long time so her mood has not been that great. This affected her lifestyle and in turn she looked quite a bit sick.

In fact, Evan was already enough to manage the Lyon Empire, Ruyen wasn't needed here at all. However, Zhao Hai had no choice, if Evan was alone, then these Great Nobles might continue to misbehave. But if Ruyen was here, then those Great Nobles would think that Ruyen was Zhao Hai's woman, so they shouldn't dare show their bad sides to her.

Zhao Hai knew that these Great Nobles didn't want to offend him right now. If it weren't for his strength, then these Nobles would've been shredded by the continent a long time ago. The only reason why the Lyon Empire remained untouched was because of Zhao Hai. Since he was the one who attacked the Lyon Empire, then the other nations gave him face in not attacking. But if Zhao Hai left, then these Great Nobles would meet an attack by almost everyone, dismembering the entire Lyon Empire.

If we set aside the reaction of the other Nobles of the continent, if the civilians were to know something, then the Nobles wouldn't have a good future.

Therefore, these Lyon Empire Nobles can only rely on Zhao Hai. It can be said that if Zhao Hai establishes a country, these Nobles would be the first to flock to Zhao Hai's side. This was because other than Zhao Hai, nobody would want to have them.

The reason why Zhao Hai didn't make Laura manage the Lyon Empire was because she didn't have the experience of running a country. Although Laura had been managing the Markey Family, and even some parts of the Buda Clan, it was still different from the Lyon Empire. Back in the family, there were nobody that could undermine Laura's authority. In Lyon Empire, problems such as these Great Nobles were present, and Laura had no experience in managing these kinds of people.

Additionally, Zhao Hai had things to discuss with Laura, therefore, Laura cannot stay and manage an Empire. Megan and Lizzy can't do it as well since they were needed to command armies when dealing with the Demons.

As for Megan and Ni'er, having them manage a country? This wasn't the time for cracking jokes. Knowledge on management cannot be learned in a day, they weren't any use at all. More importantly, Zhao Hai had Meg and Ni'er manage the Fishmen in the Space's sea. Therefore, Zhao Hai had no choice but to invite Evan and Ruyen over in order to manage the Lyon Empire.

Sure enough, when the Great Nobles saw Ruyen, they immediately thought that she was Zhao Hai's woman. Almost immediately, all of them bowed to Ruyen and said, "We have seen the Madam." Ruyen's pale face immediately turned red, but just as she was about to refute, Zhao Hai waved his hand calmly and said, "This is Grand Duke Evan, Ruyen's father. You can handle everything yourselves later, but if there's anything that needed consent, just approach them. They will find a way to contact me."

The Great Nobles immediately complied, Zhao Hai looked at their faces and said, "Alright, then I'm done here. After I leave, I shall tell everyone that I'll be acting as the temporary Emperor to the Lyon Empire. The overall management of the Empire shall be handed over to Prime Minister Evan. All of you shall help him manage the Empire. After I leave, all of you should do your best to have the Empire prepare for war in the shortest possible time.

Since the Lyon Empire is known for its Magic Beast Cavalry, you don't need to worry about this. I shall release some magic beasts that I acquired back in the lesser dragon camp. You may divide those magic beasts among yourselves. Understood?"

The Great Nobles immediately replied, "Yes, Your Excellency." Zhao Hai nodded and then turned to leave the palace.

Outside the Great Hall, Zhao Hai released his Bone Dragon and then rode on its back. Under the gazes of Evan, Ruyen, and the other Nobles, Zhao Hai flew up.

Zhao Hai's flight path wasn't high, he just flew over the sky of the Lyon Empire's capital. The civilians could clearly see him on the back of the Bone Dragon.

While he flew, Zhao Hai said, "People of the Lyon Empire, listen to me. I have already eliminated the evil Dragons, you don't have to worry about them anymore. However, when I dealt with the Dragons, I had discovered a connection to the Demons. The Demons had made a magic array in order to open a spatial rift between the Demon Realm and the Ark Continent. In seven days, that spatial rift would open, that spatial rift is located inside the Demonic Abyss. I shall be heading there in order to meet the Demons head-on. I shall announce myself as the temporary Emperor of the Lyon Empire. But since I am going to battle, I shall be appointing Grand Duke Evan as the Prime Minister of the Lyon Empire. I hope all of you will cooperate with him in the future!"

This was the most unique ceremony in the continent's history, the most unique speech in history, as well as the most unique throne ascension in history. It was the first time that someone took the throne and just left afterwards.

And along with Zhao Hai's words, the Lyon Empire's capital had erupted into chaos. However, undead suddenly started to appear, stabilizing the mood of the citizens.

Zhao Hai knew that the big Empires of the continent had started

to move. And because of its special situation, the Lyon Empire would surely be the last one to prepare. Additionally, Zhao Hai cannot manage the Empire, the only methods that he can think about right now was this.

After seeing that the undead had managed to calm the populace, Zhao Hai said, “Everyone shouldn’t be afraid. The big Empires as well as the other races of the continent are already aware of this information. Everyone has united together in order to face this crisis. I hope that everyone would calm themselves.”

Although these civilians were scared, they couldn’t help but behave when they saw the undead. And as long as things proceeded peacefully, everything else would be fine.

After Zhao Hai said these, he had his Bone Dragon return to the Imperial palace. When he entered the Great Hall, he immediately had the Nobles go out and appease the populace.

These Great Nobles didn’t dare make any mistakes at this point. They knew that since the Demons had come, then Zhao Hai would be unable to help them stabilize the current situation. And if they were to disappoint Zhao Hai, then he might be impolite towards them. Therefore, the Nobles issued their compliance and then immediately went out.

After seeing that the Nobles had left, Zhao Hai turned to Evan and said, “Uncle Evan, Ruyen, I’ll be handing the Lyon Empire over to you temporarily. I need to head towards the Demonic Abyss as soon as possible since I am still completely unaware of the situation there. I’ll have to ask you to guide the Lyon Empire in assisting the Buddha Empire and the Dwarf Race in preparing to defend against the Demon invasion. I’m afraid the Buddha Empire wouldn’t be able to handle it by themselves.”

Evan couldn’t help but knit his brows and said, “Is the situation really serious? The undead in your hand had already crossed ten million. And we’re already clear about how strong those undead

are, do the Demons have as much experts?”

Zhao Hai forced a smile and said, “I’m afraid so, the Demon Realm is a lot bigger than the Ark Continent. With how bad the environment is there, the Demons have been constantly subjected to killing and fighting. And this time, they had come prepared, I’m afraid that the matter wouldn’t be easy to deal with.”

Evan frowned, then he sighed and said, “Alright, then you can leave the Lyon Empire to me. You be careful in the Demonic Abyss.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then his voice turned serious as he said, “Observe these Nobles well. I’m not completely confident in them. If anything strange happens, immediately inform me and I will immediately deal with them.”

Evan faintly smiled and said, “Rest assured, from what I can see in their expressions, they wouldn’t dare to misbehave. Except for us, nobody in the continent would dare to accept them.”

Zhao Hai coldly replied, “There’s still the Radiant Church. Don’t forget that the success of the Dragons was due to those Nobles. And I’m quite sure that the Dragons weren’t the ones who lobbied them. So it must be the Radiant Church, perhaps offering them with a lot of benefits. Although they were now aware of the Divine Race, we shouldn’t forget that a lot of Humans have sided themselves with the Divine Race in the last great war. We should prevent them from going to the Divine Race, especially when they learn how hard it would be in the frontlines.”

Evan knitted his brows and said, “Hard? Even if the battle would be no good, they shouldn’t just surrender to the Divine Race. After all, what could the Divine Race offer them?”

Zhao Hai sneered, “They can give them shelter. Although there aren’t any records of the Divine Race in the Human history, we shouldn’t forget about the existence of the Radiant Church. Also, the Divine Race has the strength to not be afraid of the Demons. If

the Divine Race were to give them shelter, then it would not be impossible for those guys to agree. After all, the most important thing to those Nobles are their family and their status.”

Evan couldn't help but agree, then he said, “Alright, you can rest assured that I shall be looking at their actions. There won't be any problems.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he took out a messenger fish, “Take this messenger fish, you can use this to contact me directly. I shall be leaving a thousand undead for you to command. Remember, no matter what happens in Lyon Empire, always keep your own safety as a priority. Even if the Divine Race came, I believe that those undead could still keep them off for quite some time. That would give me time to pick you up.”

Evan nodded, then he received the messenger fish. At this time, Zhao Hai turned to look at Ruyen, who also looked back at him. Then Zhao Hai said, “Ruyen, you should understand why I haven't been able to see you for all this time. After everything gets settled down, I shall give you what you deserve.”

Ruyen understood what Zhao Hai meant, her face couldn't help but go red as she gently nodded and said, “I'll wait for you.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned to nod at Evan and said, “Then I shall leave everything here to you.” After that, his body vanished as he entered the Space.

Chapter 679 – Demon

Zhao Hai sat in the Space and gave a long sigh of relief. Then he glanced at the monitor. The monitor didn't display the Lyon Empire, instead, it showed a fortress city.

This city is quite famous in the Buddha Empire, this was because it had a very interesting name, Demon City. Naturally, this wasn't a place occupied by the Demons. Instead, this was a city that was closest to the Demonic Abyss. This place is completely different to the town back in Accra Mountain. The town on Accra Mountain rarely gets attacked by magic beasts. But in Demon City, the situation is different. At any time, it was possible for the city to be attacked by beings coming out from the Demonic Abyss.

Because of this characteristic, Dark Mages proliferated in this city. This was because the undead were the most common creatures that can be found inside the Demonic Abyss. If Dark Mages were to subdue several of them, then their abilities would be improved. This was the reason that it's called Demon City.

Even when the Radiant Church was at its peak period in the continent, they still wouldn't easily dare come to Demon City. There were just too many Dark Mages here. Therefore, the Radiant Church has no other choice but turn a blind eye towards this city,

For the Dark Mages in Demon City, this place was their Holy Land. In their hearts, this was a sacred place, while the others pinned that title to the Calci Family.

Compared to the family-style management of the Calci Family, the Dark Mages in Demon City had more of an alliance. They were all living in Demon City, relying on hunting dark creatures for a living. Therefore, it was even thought that the Dark Mages here were stronger compared to the Dark Mages of the Calci Family.

While Zhao Hai came to visit the Buddha Emperor, he also had Cai'er use the Blood Ghost Staff to investigate the terrain in and

around this place.

There were still many businessmen and adventurers here, however, one could notice that the population was now quite skewed towards the Dark Mages and the army of the Buddha Empire. Almost all of the civilians were evacuated.

Zhao Hai inspected Demon City. Probably because of its year-round battles, the walls of the city looked very thick and heavily damaged. One could even see blood on the walls. Compared to the walls of other cities, this one surely did seem to be more murderous.

At this time, Meg brought a cup of tea over to Zhao Hai. When she saw Zhao Hai's complexion, she grieved as she said, "Young master, you should take a rest. Let me give you a massage."

Zhao Hai turned his head towards Meg, he smiled faintly and said, "What are the others doing? Why are they not here?"

Meg went behind Zhao Hai and gently massaged his head, at the same time, she answered, "Elder Sister Laura is examining the overall commodities in our storage and is discussing matters with Patriarch Billy regarding its distribution. At the same time, Megan and Lizzy are studying the map."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he held Meg's hand and said, "Alright, I'm fine really. Come and take a seat with me for a while."

Meg nodded, then she went around the sofa and sat behind Zhao Hai, snuggling gently on his bosom. Zhao Hai held Meg's soft body and upon smelling her delicate fragrance, began to relax his nerves slowly.

Meg also felt Zhao Hai becoming more relaxed, she placed her ear to Zhao Hai's chest and listened to his heartbeat, then she said with a soft voice, "Young Master, can we win?"

Zhao Hai replied with a serious tone, "Of course we can. Our destiny can only be decided by ourselves, nobody can control our

lives.”

Meg nodded, then she said, “Young Master, after repelling the Demons and the Divine Race, what should we do next? Will we go back to the Black Wasteland and live in seclusion?”

Zhao Hai coldly snorted and said, “Why would we live in seclusion? If we did repel the Demons and the Divine Race, then we would follow them to the Demon Realm and the Divine Realm. We need to cause them irreparable damage so that they wouldn’t think about returning to the Ark Continent. Otherwise, they would recover and then try to invade the Ark Continent once more. We can’t live forever and we would have our own children soon. If we die and leave our offspring here, we cannot have them suffer attacks from the Demon Realm and the Divine Race once again.”

Meg’s face turned red, she sat up and looked at Zhao Hai, “Young Master, why don’t you answer my question properly? And what are you talking about, children?”

Zhao Hai faintly smiled and said, “Look, we have been married for quite some time, but we still haven’t had a child. I’m just looking after Grandpa Green and Grandma Merine’s worries. They had always wanted a new heir to the Buda Clan.”

Meg blushed and rolled her eyes at Zhao Hai. However, she didn’t leave, instead, she leaned towards Zhao Hai’s body and said, “I really hope that everyone would be happily together all the time, not thinking about many things. Brother Hai, why do people do this? Why would the Demons and the Divine Race want to invade us?”

Zhao Hai forced a smile and said, “No other reason but ambition. In the eyes of the Divine Race, the Ark Continent is a source of troops. Naturally, when they control the continent, they would be treating everyone here as slaves. Then the slaves would join their armies and fight their enemies. On the other hand, the Demons see

the continent as a huge cake. The living environment of the Demon Realm is extremely terrible, therefore, they want to occupy the Ark Continent. Unfortunately, the Demons are used to slaughter, so they didn't even think about a peaceful method in order to reside in the continent. Instead, they wanted to kill every single creature in the continent in order to make way for their own population to move in. At the same time, I also think that the Demons are afraid. From what I learned when I met the Demon in Accra Mountain, they have been investigating the continent for more than a thousand years. Therefore, they must have learned about how the Humans were suppressing the other races. And since the Demons were also a foreign race, then it was natural that the Humans would suppress them as well. If they were to come peacefully and get suppressed by the Humans, then they might as well kill off everyone in the continent."

Meg was confused, "Young Master, didn't Cai'er say that the Demon Realm is much larger than the Ark Continent? Then once they take the continent, wouldn't they have problems in accommodating everyone?"

Zhao Hai coldly snorted and said, "Of course, but there was no use in thinking about other people. As long as the high-ranked Demons can live here then all is good. These low-level Demons can be neglected then. This is the rule of the Demon Realm. Once you have a high rank in the hierarchy, then you would get anything that you want. If you are a low-ranked Demon and then managed to get something good, then you would have to hand it over to a higher-ranked Demon. Otherwise, it would only bring you disaster. To put it bluntly, the lower-ranked Demons are the high-ranked Demons' slaves."

Meg nodded, "So it's like that. How about the amount of soldiers that would come here? Does Cai'er know?"

Zhao Hai nodded and smiled bitterly, "How can Cai'er not know? One could say that Cai'er is the most informed person with regards

to the Demon Realm. From what she can estimate, the army that would arrive would have no less than 50 million soldiers in it.”

Meg was greatly surprised, “50 million? That much?”

Zhao Hai forced a smile and said, “And that number only counts the number of Demons that would come. We didn’t include the number of magic beasts that would join them. At the same time, there are also Dark Mages among the Demon Army, completely capable of summoning undead. If a battle happens, their numbers wouldn’t go down too fast. We really have met a difficult opponent this time.”

Meg’s complexion changed dramatically, “What do we do?”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “It’s fine. You can rest assured that there’s no need to worry. If they have 50 million troops, then the continent has its own army as well. And for those who can summon the undead, let’s see how they fare against me. There’s no need to be afraid, everything will be fine.”

Meg nodded, then Zhao Hai turned his gaze towards the monitor. There were no changes in Demon City, there were some Dark Mages and adventurers that left, but the majority of them still stayed behind. They wanted to help the army of the Buddha Empire in fighting off the Demon army.”

These Dark Mages and Adventurers clearly understood that the Demons wouldn’t spare anyone in the continent. If they leave today, sooner or later, they would still face the Demons. These Dark Mages and Adventurers were also people who liked to live beside the blade of a knife. So after knowing that the Demons were coming, not only did they stay, they also prepared to fight against the Demons.

Also, the Buddha Empire had sent word that as long as they make meritorious deeds in the battle against the Demons, then they might gain themselves a hereditary noble title. This prize was too tempting for the Adventurers and Dark Mages.

One must know that a hereditary title was completely different to an ordinary one. It would be impossible for ordinary nobles to pass their title to their children. For example, when Mages who were given their titles die, their status would be gone. Only if they had a child with good talent and becomes a great Mage, then that child would have the right to apply for inheriting the title.

The Buddha Empire had truly placed sufficient capital this time. They didn't have much troops in the vicinity of Demon City. And in a short period of seven days, it would be impossible for them to assemble an army for reinforcement. Therefore, the Buddha Emperor made a decision, provide the Adventurers and Dark Mages with benefits of great titles so that they would stay behind and defend the city. These people had lived in this place all year round, so they should have the right abilities to defend against the Demon army.

It was because of this that large quantities of Adventurers and Dark Mages had remained and decided to fight the Demon Race together with the Buddha Empire's army.

However, the Buddha Empire can only gather about two hundred regular troops in these seven days. If we add the Adventurers and Dark Mages, then it might reach about four hundred thousand. Although these numbers were quite strong, it was still impossible if they were to defend against the Demon Army. Therefore, Zhao Hai decided to head towards Demon City and take personal command of the defenders!

Chapter 680 – Protecting the Homeland

Wei Gan was a Dark Mage who had lived in Demon City for a long time. He wasn't from the Calci Family, once can say that he had nothing to do with the Calci Family at all. However, one shouldn't think that he's just a simple character. More than a thousand years ago, Wei Gan's ancestors were formidable Mages of a huge empire, their family even held the title of a Duke.

However, it was just a pity that the Empire that his family held loyalty to was extinguished by the Lyon Empire. Since their family were loyalists to their Empire, the Lyon Empire took their title away. Moreover, they were also suppressed everywhere. In the end, their family couldn't endure it anymore and ran away to Demon City.

In every empire, there would always be a place where the strongest people gather. Take the Lyon Empire, for example, formidable characters would flock towards the town on the foot of Accra Mountain. For the Buddha Empire, that place was Demon City. Demon City was very suitable for Dark Mages to live in. Therefore, the Gan Family decided to settle down here. And even if Demon City was inside the Buddha Empire, the Empire's power was actually weak here. This made it possible for the family to find their place.

However, Demon City was just unsafe to begin with. About some hundreds of years ago, a dark creatures and undead suddenly ran out of the Demonic Abyss and made a large scale attack on Demon City. The city was close to being overwhelmed, and even if the defense was successful, a lot of Dark Mages had fallen in the process. At that time, the Gan Family wasn't spared from the losses. In the end, the family didn't manage to stabilize their footing and slowly lost its power over time.

In the current time, the Gan Family was reduced to a few dozen Dark Mages. But even so, Adventurers and other Dark Mages still

didn't dare to underestimate them. Because of the Gan Family's long history, their dark magic spells were quite formidable. And most importantly, the Gan Family had always treated the Demon City as their home, greeting everyone in the city as though they were family members. Every single inhabitant of the city was very respectful towards the family. If ever some kind of conflict arises, the Gan family would even be asked to mediate.

Wei Gan was only an ordinary Dark Mage in the family. He wasn't the Patriarch nor was he the successor. He was just any ordinary Dark Mage.

The Buddha Empire had already told the city about what would happen. At the same time, the Empire had also started to gather up some troops and sent them here. They also invited the Adventurers, Dark Mages, and Dark Mage families to stay and defend the city together.

This was where the Gan Family didn't disappoint the Buddha Empire. They were the first ones to lobby the Adventurers and Dark Mages to stay inside the City and help with the defense. In the end, the majority of the strength of the City remained.

Not only this, the Gan Family also sent their members in order to help the army guard and patrol the walls. Because of the Dark Mages' sensitivity to the dark element, the patrol went very smoothly, saving the army a lot of effort.

One could say that Demon City's topography was very strange. When constructing Demon City, the main goal of its infrastructure was to defend against the Demonic Abyss. As for the Demonic Abyss, since it had the word 'abyss' in its name, then it was no wonder that it was very deep. As to how deep? Nobody knows. Everybody who came to deeply explore the area weren't able to return to tell the tale.

So how big was the Demonic Abyss? If one were to look, the Abyss appeared just like a giant crack in the world ten thousand

li(.5km) long, with the widest opening spanning more than 2000 li. There was also a gentle slope on the ground just outside Demon City, the other places were steep cliffs where magic beasts weren't able to crawl on. Most importantly, a dark mist covers the Demonic Abyss all year round, making people unable to clearly see anything.

It was precisely because of this that Demon City existed. If one were to speak about the continent's oldest cities, then Demon City would surely be up there. It was even said that the city had existed for as long as the Demonic Abyss itself. But in any case, whenever war erupts in the continent, almost nobody came to touch Demon City. This was because the city didn't have regular armies defending it. Most who were inside the city were Adventurers, Mercenaries, and Dark Mages. This made the city something that looks like it didn't belong in this world. For many years, the same composition of people were defending the city, Therefore, people from the continent had quite a complicated view towards this place.

On this day, Wei Gan was on the wall, staring blankly at the distance. His current position right now wasn't in the city's eastern wall, which meant that he wasn't facing the Demonic Abyss. It was a wall that faced the continent, so it should be quite safe. However, Wei Gan still needed to inspect the place because the Buddha Empire had sent word that people from the Demon Realm had already infiltrated the continent. This meant that they might take the city at any time.

Wei Gan looked at the surrounding army. These troops weren't the Buddha Empire's most elite cavalry. These people knew why they were here so they all had a very serious look on their face.

At this time, Wei Gan noticed a dark spot in the horizon. It was flying towards the city, he even thought that it was a creature of darkness.

The Gan Family's dark magic held some differences to the

continent's dark magic, this gave the members of the Gan Family much more sensitivity towards dark energy. Therefore, when Wei Gan felt the dark energy coming out of the dark spot, and that the direction of the spot seem to be heading towards Demon City, he immediately thought of the Buddha Empire's warning. His heart immediately started to beat as he shouted, "Everyone, a dark creature that come from the mainland is heading here. Prepare yourselves!"

Although the army that the Buddha Empire sent weren't the most elite Iron Cavalry, these people were still elites in their local military. Before these soldiers came here, they were also instructed to cooperate with the Dark Mages since these people were very sensitive towards dark creatures. Seeing that the Buddha Empire were giving high regard to the Dark Mages in the city, the army immediately stood up when they heard Wei Gan's voice. The magic cannons were then prepared as well as the ballistas.

Just as they got ready, the dark spot in the distance suddenly flew faster towards them. These people became nervous, especially the artillery troops. They were anxiously looking at the dark spot. Since the magic cannons and the ballistas were their only defensive weapon, the flying enemy would surely target them first.

The dark spot continued to slowly grow larger, and as soon as the people on the wall recognized what the dark spot was, all of them were shocked. It didn't matter if they were from the Buddha Empire's army or the Dark Mages, their expressions were the same. The dark spot turned out to be a Bone Dragon, and on the skull of the Dragon stood a very ordinary looking Dark Mage.

But who in Demon City wouldn't be able to recognize who this person was. Perhaps they might not recognize his face, but his reputation surely rang in their minds. This was Zhao Hai Buda, Lyon Empire's Emperor, and the continent's strongest Dark Mage!

Zhao Hai was now widely accepted as the strongest Dark Mage in the continent, every single citizen in the various empires already

knew about this point. He managed to kill Dragons, unearthed the conspiracy of the Demons, and even became the Emperor of the Lyon Empire. Every single Dark Mage almost looked at him as a God. For them, Zhao Hai was a deity that was aloof as he overlooked them.

Zhao Hai had rested well inside the Space. After seeing Laura and the others, he immediately went out. He had already taken a look at the situation in Demon City. Seeing that there weren't any serious matters going on, Zhao Hai decided to come out in a far away place and then rode a Bone Dragon towards the fortress city, enjoying the wind that was hitting his face.

Zhao Hai didn't immediately enter the city, when he saw the wall, he had the Bone Dragon go down to the ground outside the city and walked down from it. After storing the Bone Dragon, he walked slowly towards the city's wall.

The defenders on the wall immediately reacted. An officer shouted towards the soldier at the gate, "Quick, open the gate, hurry up!" Then just as the officer rushed towards the gate, he noticed that someone had come faster than him, it was Wei Gan.

Wei Gan, who was just a common Dark Mage, was actually quicker than him, a 7th rank Warrior. This made the army officer look at him in a strange manner, wondering if Wei Gan was both a Mage and a Warrior.

Naturally, Wei Gan wasn't a Warrior, he was only a Mage. The reason why he was so quick was because he was too excited. When the army arrived, he had heard that Zhao Hai would also be personally coming in order to take command. This made all of the Dark Mages excited, they can actually see Zhao Hai with their own two eyes. This was a very extraordinary matter. However, people were still quite doubtful about this fact. After all, who was Zhao Hai? He was the Patriarch of the Buda Clan and was also the Emperor of the Lyon Empire. Although they knew that Zhao Hai was able to kill Dragons, would such a person still risk himself in

order to come to Demon City?

For the people in Demon City, Zhao Hai was a distant person, one who wouldn't stain his hand in a messy situation like in Demon City. Most of the people in Demon City didn't actually expect Zhao Hai to come, they just thought that the Buddha Empire only said this in order to comfort their hearts. The main reason why these people stayed in the city was because they needed to protect their home. No matter what words the higher ups say, these people would still stay behind.

They weren't doing this in order to protect the Human Race, nor was it because of their dedication towards the continent. For them, waging war with the Demons was just a way to protect their homeland.

Chapter 681 – Influential Figure

Zhao Hai stood under the city's gate, he didn't want to act too high-profile, it just wasn't his character. Although he was now the Emperor of the Lyon Empire, he knew absolutely nothing about the Empire at all. Because of this, he really didn't think of himself as the Emperor, he was more like a stabilizer, temporarily acting as the Emperor because of the present situation.

At the same time, he also didn't deem himself to be an influential person. In his mind he was just like any other person on the continent, doing what anybody would have done. The only reason why people were unable to do things that he can do was because they didn't have the help of the Space.

Zhao Hai might not be aware, but he was actually an extremely influential person on the continent. From what the continent knew, Zhao Hai was a Foreign Prince of the Beastmen as well as a Foreign Elder of the Dwarves and the Elves. In fact, Zhao Hai was also given the title of Foreign Admiral by the Fishmen, but this information was withheld by the Mermaid Queen.

Thess many statuses on one person was unprecedented in the continent, something that might not even be repeated in the future. This made Zhao Hai an very influential figure in the continent. Perhaps it was only Zhao Hai who has yet to discover this point.

The gates of Demon City slowly opened. What made Zhao Hai surprised was the first person to come out, it was a Dark Mage. This person looks like 40 years old, he wore a somewhat new Dark Mage robe, he had a grassy hair and a thin beard. The person was also quite thin, he looked just like that weird uncle that everyone has. This person had a flush on his face along with shining eyes, he actually gave Zhao Hai a bit of a scare.

This person was naturally Wei Gan. He was too excited, he didn't

think that he would meet his idol while defending the city wall. His heart was extremely happy to the point that he began to lose control of his body.

Under Zhao Hai's gaze, this strange uncle ran very fast toward him. Then the man plopped to the ground, and under Zhao Hai's surprised expression, he kissed Zhao Hai's shoes.

This made Zhao Hai stare, then he immediately pulled the Dark Mage up and said, "Mister, there's no need to do that. Who are you?"

When Wei Gan discovered that Zhao Hai was asking for his name, he immediately bowed to Zhao Hai and said, "Paying respects to Mister Zhao Hai. This one is called Wei Gan, a mage of Demon City's Gan family. I represent the Gan Family in welcoming your arrival. If it is possible, please pay us a visit."

Wei Gan was very excited, he really wasn't expecting Zhao Hai to be a guest in the Gan Family. In his opinion, even if Zhao Hai only promised visit, then it would already be the greatest honor to the Gan Family.

Zhao Hai looked at Wei Gan. In fact, he already knew the things that Wei Gan has been doing since Cai'er has been monitoring the entirety of Demon City. Zhao Hai was afraid that there were people controlled by the Demons here. It wouldn't be good if there was a Demon collaborator inside the city when the battle starts. But unexpectedly, there were no Demon controlled people inside Demon City. Especially in this Gan Family, they were the ones that advocated for the defense against the Demons the most. Therefore, Zhao Hai had a very deep impression towards this family.

Zhao Hai immediately smiled and said, "So it turns out to be Mister Wei Gan. I already know about what your Gan Family had done, so I must thank you in behalf of the people of the continent. You can rest assured that I would pay a visit to the Gan Family. However, I need to pay a visit to the defending army first. I have

some things to discuss with them.”

Wei Gan didn't dare to stop him, he immediately replied, “I won't dare to stop Mister from doing his business. But please make sure to pay a visit to the Family. We will welcome you at any time. I will now go back to inform the family.” Then he turned around and ran back to the city with a speed that even a Warrior wouldn't be able to stop him.

Zhao Hai looked at Wei Gan's departing back and couldn't help but smile. He thought that this Mage from the Gan Family was quite interesting. At this time, the army officer has arrived in front of Zhao Hai. The officer then gave Zhao Hai a salute and said, “We welcome the arrival of the Lyon Emperor Zhao Hai. I am the defender assigned to the East Gate, Leonard.”

Zhao Hai smiled and said, “Captain Leonard is too polite. There's no Empire here, so you can just call me Zhao Hai. We're now allies, jointly fighting against the Demon Race.”

Leonard didn't expect that Zhao Hai was very easy to speak to, he immediately replied, “Alright, Mister Zhao Hai. Mister, come with me, I already sent word to the General. I'll be taking you to the General's residence.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he took a step towards Demon City. At this moment, a horse carriage flew from inside Demon City. This carriage was quite spirited but it still managed to keep stable. It stopped in front of Zhao Hai as its driver got down and said, “Mister, please board the carriage.”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and then boarded the carriage. Then the carriage turned itself around and rushed back to the city. Leonard didn't dare to neglect Zhao Hai's arrival as he lead 20 other subordinates and escorted the carriage on the back to the city.

Zhao Hai wasn't surprised about this reception, although he didn't regard himself as a Monarch and an influential person, he was after all the Buda Clan's Patriarch. In Demon City, this status

should've at least gained high regard, giving him some allowance when it comes to authority.

Before long, Zhao Hai and the others had arrived at the General's residence. The General's residence was actually just a normal house. Since there was no military outpost here, what the General used was the residence of a former Merchant in Demon City. Because that Merchant has returned to the Buddha Empire, his house was requisitioned and became the General's temporary place.

As soon as the carriage arrived, Zhao Hai didn't even need to open the door as it was opened from the outside. Zhao Hai stared blankly as he saw a middle-aged man in military uniform holding the door of the carriage open.

Then that middle aged person gave Zhao Hai a salute and said, "Buddha Empire's General Besmir welcomes Mister Zhao Hai to Demon City."

Zhao Hai walked out of the carriage and returned the salute, "General Besmir is too polite. There's actually no need to open the door for me."

Besmir smiled and said, "It is only proper for me to open the door for Mister. Mister has been running around the continent, contacting each power personally. Compared to Mister's effort, me and the others can only bow down in shame. Mister, please come with me." Zhao Hai quickly replied, "Alright." Then he walked towards the General's residence alongside Besmir.

This temporary residence was not big, just a house and a courtyard. Besmir invited Zhao Hai to sit inside the residence's living room. At this point, the living room looked a lot more like a battle command center. There were stretches of map hangin on the wall as well as a big table at the middle of the room. This big table also had a map. This map showed Demon City as well as outside of it, the verified areas of the Demonic Abyss.

This Demonic Abyss map was naturally incomplete. But the map of the surrounding areas was already helpful for the upcoming fight.

Zhao Hai nodded at Besmir's methods, he turned to Besmir and said, "General is very diligent. May I know the plans that the General has come up with?"

Besmir didn't expect Zhao Hai to be straightforward, having just arrived to Demon City. However, Besmir also knew that it wasn't time for small talk, so he immediately lead Zhao Hai to the map. Then Besmir said, "Mister, look here, this terrain is very crucial in protecting the Demonic Abyss. This is due to the gentle slope, although it isn't that steep, it can still hinder an army's advance. I intend to use this slope to carry out layers and layers of blockade to resist the Demon Army. What does mister think about this?"

Zhao Hai looked at the map, gently knitting his eyebrows. To be honest, there weren't any major issues to Besmir approach. However, that plan didn't take into account the large number of demonic creatures that would be coming out of the abyss. If a large amount of creatures come out, then this layers upon layers of blockade would eventually be overrun. At the same time, this plan would also dilute the number of personnel on each point, which was also detrimental in defending the city.

When Besmir saw Zhao Hai frown, perhaps not contented with what he heard, his heart couldn't help but beat faster. Zhao Hai was an existence that he cannot afford to offend. In fact, even the Buddha Emperor wouldn't dare offend Zhao Hai. Therefore, when Besmir saw that Zhao Hai seemed to be dissatisfied with the arrangement, he immediately became afraid.

Zhao Hai was divided on whether to expose the numbers of the Demon Race or not. He was afraid that if he revealed the number of invaders to Besmir, then it might topple the General's confidence in defending the city. However, if Zhao Hai didn't tell the General the enemy's numbers, how could Zhao Hai convince

him to change the plan?

Zhao Hai thought about this for a while, then he opened his mouth and said, “There are no problems with the General’s arrangement. However, I think the General seems to have overlooked something. That is the quantity of the Demon Realm’s army.”

When Besmir heard Zhao Hai, he couldn’t help but stare for a moment. Then his expression turned ugly, he looked back at the map which made his expression change even more, he turned his head to Zhao Hai and said, “Mister, are you saying that there would be a large number of Demon Realm invaders?”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “General, think about it, if the Demon Realm wanted to invade the continent, then would they only send a small number of soldiers? First, let’s not discuss about how big the Demon Realm is, but in Ark Continent, if one were given the power of the entire world, how big would their army be? The number of Demon Realm soldiers certainly wouldn’t be smaller than that. At the same time, the combat power of the Demons is quite strong, when I met a 9th rank Demon last time, he didn’t die even when I managed to slice his head open, he even managed to make a counter attack. This kind of combat resilience is astounding. Therefore, I think that the General should just withdraw the army and defend the city. And while the General defends the city, the external defenses will be handed over to me.”

When Besmir heard Zhao Hai, he immediately understood. Zhao Hai had a lot of strong undead, this fact was already known to the continent. He also didn’t doubt the fighting capability of Zhao Hai’s undead. Besmir just overlooked the power and numbers of the Demon Realm army, now that Zhao Hai said it, he also felt like there were problems in his plan.

Chapter 682 – Unimportant Person

Besmir understood that Zhao Hai wanted him to withdraw his army, minimizing the losses to the defending troops. At the same time, Zhao Hai would use his undead army to bear the brunt of the attack, after all, they were also strong enough to do so.

Besmire wasn't a fool, considering the manpower present in Demon City, it would be impossible for them alone to block the Demon Race. The previous time that the Demons attacked, it took the power of the entire continent to drive them back. Ninth rank experts joined in the resistance back then as well. Those 9th ranks even used forbidden sacrificial magic in order to seal up several spatial rifts. It was said that those 9th ranks were much stronger than the 9th ranks in the present time. And more importantly, a lot of forbidden magics have been lost from that day forth. If one were to compare the proficiency of magic today and in the past, then one could say that it might not have improved, and in terms of forbidden magics, then it might be even worse.

The reason why Besmir thought about all of these was because magic was something that was constantly being developed. It was just like how Earth developed from using cold weapons into using firearms, from using stone tools into using metal ones. However, that progress took thousands of years. The Ark Continent underwent the same process as well. After a long period of research, the continent's progress was also quite amazing.

As far as people were concerned, the magic of the continent tens of thousands of years ago wasn't as complicated as it was now. That magic back then was just powerful, especially the forbidden magics, it had the power to move mountains. Although forbidden magics can still accomplish this at the present time, one shouldn't forget the fact that only very few Mages were able to use forbidden magics.

People who had studied history discovered that tens of thousands

of years ago, promoting to 9th rank was much easier than it was now. At that time, there were even news that people had been ascending to the Divine Realm. But after that, there were no information of people ascending for tens of thousands of years.

Although this point made people confused, their research yielded them with no results. In the end, the researchers just reckoned that the magic elements present in the continent right now was much thinner compared to back then. But was it really like this? Nobody knows.

However, even if forbidden magics were very rare in the present time, the continent had actually taken another road when it comes to magic. Some low to mid-level magics have become stronger compared to back then. There were also a lot of Mages right now, so if one would really compare, then the current magical level wasn't that worse compared to before.

But while people can say that its no worse than tens of thousands of years ago, nobody would dare say that it was stronger. If it took the entire continent to repel the Demons last time, then it would also take the entire continent to repel the Demons now.

Although Besmir didn't know about the situation of the Demon Race, he was quite smart, he knew that the spatial cracks in the past had appeared by accident. The Demons weren't aware that those spatial cracks would appear, they were also very ignorant when it comes to the Ark Continent.

But now, it was different, the Demons had been aware of the Ark Continent for tens of thousands of years. Although they were defeated and had the spatial cracks sealed, the Demons still waited for many years in order to invade the Ark Continent.

The previous Demon invasion can be said to be done in haste, they just didn't have time to prepare. But now that they were prepared, there was no way to solidly compare the two events. Therefore, blocking the Demons here would certainly prove

impossible. Besmir's purpose here was to delay the Demons for a couple of days, giving the continent time to gear up.

When he heard Zhao Hai's plan, Besmir couldn't help but nod and said, "Alright, then we'll be doing it according to Mister's plan. Does mister have any more ideas?"

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, "I don't. However I'll be heading to the Gan Family and then going to the Demonic Abyss to take a look. I want to clear all the undead and magic beasts there before the Demons arrive otherwise they might aid the Demons in their invasion."

Besmir stared, then he knit his eyebrows and said, "Mister, that is too dangerous. I suggest that you don't go."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "General can rest assured, I already had managed to explore several Forbidden Areas of the Continent. I had been to the Northern Icefield as well as the Carrion Swamp. The Demonic Abyss shouldn't be any different from those." Then Zhao Hai turned around and walked towards outside.

When Besmir heard Zhao Hai, he couldn't help but stare. There were few people who were aware that Zhao Hai went to the Northern Icefield, however, the fact that he had explored the Carrion Swamp wasn't well known. Zhao Hai's exploration of the Carrion Swamp was what made Besmir astonished.

The people of the continent had always speculated that the Buda Clan had a secret territory somewhere. Otherwise, where would the family's good products come from? However, up until now, people weren't able to find it. But if one adds Zhao Hai's statement that he had explored the Carrion Swamp, seeing how well he was doing, and the fact that the Black Wasteland was still owned by the Buda Clan, Besmir immediately thought that the Buda Clan's mysterious territory was actually their first territory in the continent, the Black Wasteland.

What was this? Is there something good out there in the Black Wasteland? It depends on which hands it falls into. Other Dark Mages can control thousands of undead, and it was known that Zhao Hai can control undead that numbered in the millions. If he can do this, then why can't he grow something in the Black Wasteland?

Zhao Hai didn't care about what Besmir was thinking. The reason he told Besmir about this fact was because he was already prepared to reveal the Black Wasteland to the entire continent. At this point, there was no use for him if he were to take the Black Wasteland as his secret.

After Zhao Hai left the General's residence, a carriage driver immediately bowed towards him and said, "Mister, I am the General's personal carriage driver. I have been given the task of taking you wherever you want."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "I want to go to the Gan Family, do you know the way?"

The carriage driver immediately replied, "Of course, Mister, there's no place in Demon City that I am unable to find. I ask Mister to please board the carriage."

Zhao Hai nodded and went into the carriage while the driver held the door open for him. Then the carriage immediately soared towards the Gan Family. In Demon City, there were only few people who don't know of the Gan Family. However, the family's residence wasn't very special. There were no special structures anywhere, it looks just like an ordinary residence with a very ordinary courtyard.

As soon as the carriage stopped in front of the Gan Family's residence, the carriage driver immediately got down from the carriage and went to two Gan Family members who were guarding the gate. When the two Gan family members saw the carriage driver, they immediately recognized him, one of them said, "Barn,

I didn't expect that you'd come. We really can't accommodate you, do you know who we're expecting today? It's mister Zhao Hai. Therefore, the family can't really receive visitors now."

Barn smiled at the two people and said, "I was given an order by General Besmir, starting today, I will be acting as Mister Zhao Hai's carriage driver. Today, Mister Zhao Hai asked me to take him here to see the Gan Family." After Barn said that, he quickly opened the door as Zhao Hai walked down from the carriage.

The two people from the Gan family were shocked, then didn't think that Barn would actually be Zhao Hai's carriage driver. Although Barn's driving skills and carriage were the best in Demon City, they still didn't expect Zhao Hai to sit in Barn's carriage. They thought that Zhao Hai would be visiting the Gan Family on board the General's special carriage.

Actually, this arrangement was made by Besmir. He wasn't actually very stingy in handing his carriage over, however, he was given information by the Buddha Emperor that Zhao Hai preferred to be low-key if possible. Making a huge show wouldn't be to Zhao Hai's liking. Therefore, Besmir decided to have Barn take Zhao Hai around. Naturally, this arrangement was very well liked by Zhao Hai.

After seeing Zhao Hai come out, the two immediately responded, they took steps towards Zhao Hai before bowing, "We have seen Mister Zhao Hai. Mister, please come in.' Then one of them escorted Zhao Hai in while the other ran as fast as he could to report the matter to the family. Naturally, the first one to be informed would be the Patriarch of the Gan Family.

Zhao Hai wasn't surprised about this situation, he turned his head towards the doorman and said, "Hey, are you very familiar with Barn?" The Gan Family member didn't think that Zhao Hai would be very polite. He couldn't help but gape his mouth, unable to speak.

Zhao Hai looked at the person's expression and smiled faintly, "Don't be anxious, just answer my question, I won't eat you."

The Gan family member recovered, his face couldn't help but turn red as he apologized, "I'm very sorry Mister, I have been rude. Right, I am very familiar with Barn. He grew up inside Demon City and his parents were adventurers. But one time, his parents went to the Demonic Abyss to explore, only to never come back. After then he became a beggar in Demon City before working for other people when he grew older. Afterwards, when he had the money, he bought himself a horse carriage, becoming Demon City's best carriage driver. With him having grown up in the city, there were nobody who bullied him, making him enjoy a good life. When the news about the Demon invasion came and civilians were leaving, Barn decided to stay behind. He said that although he couldn't fight and help in resisting the Demons, he would still offer his carriage to help the army with transportation. General Besmir felt grateful for Barn's decision so he decided to have Barn be his residence's attendant."

Chapter 683 – Slaves

Zhao Hai quietly listened to the words of the Gan Family member. If Zhao Hai was an influential person in the continent, then this Barn was a very small and unimportant person. In his entire life, Barn could only become a carriage driver, besides slaves, he was among the lowest ranked people in the continent.

However, Zhao Hai was actually touched by this unimportant person. He didn't have the strength yet he still offered his efforts to defend his home. If the continent were to have a lot of people like this, then the continent would never fall. It wouldn't be a slave to the Divine Race nor would it be eliminated by the Demons, Zhao Hai had a firm belief of this point.

When he heard the doorman's words, turned towards the carriage and looked at the scenery. Standing nearby the carriage was Barn, peacefully standing there while looking at the surroundings. It seems like it didn't matter to Barn whether he had seen this scenery before or not.

Zhao Hai felt like Barn was like 1900 in the movie 'The Legend of 1900'. Ever since childhood, Barn didn't leave Demon City, the same as 1900 who didn't leave the ship. Their lives were reflections of each other. The outside world was too big, and because of this, both of them were afraid. This made them decide to just stay in their own world. It also made Zhao Hai reflect on his life back on Earth, when he was just an ordinary nerd.

The Gan Family member was confused as he looked at Zhao Hai. He didn't know why Zhao Hai stopped. Moreover, he was looking at Barn with a very strange gaze. However, the Gan Family member didn't say anything, with his status, he didn't have the merit to disturb Zhao Hai. Not only him, even if the Gan Family Patriarch were to see Zhao Hai, he would still need to respect Zhao Hai's actions.

Then Zhao Hai turned his head towards the doorman and said, "Let's go." He had made a decision, he would lead Barn to the outside world. He wanted Barn to see another world other than his own, even if it meant that Barn would know about the Space.

Although it was said that the Gan Family's residence was common, it wasn't small. Just after Zhao Hai walked through the first courtyard, he suddenly heard some footsteps in the distance. Then as the footsteps got louder, several people appeared. These people were wearing mage's robes, it seems like they are the core members of the Gan Family.

On their lead was 50-year old Mage. He didn't have a very magnificent robe, and the staff on his hand seems like it was made out of beast bones. His hair was somewhat gray but it was actually very neat. If one were to see Wei Gan and see him as embarrassing, then this person exudes the presence of seriousness.

However, instead of seriousness this old Mage had a very excited look on his face. When he saw Zhao Hai, he immediately walked towards Zhao Hai and knelt, "Mister, please forgive me for being unable to personally welcome you. I ask mister to excuse my bad manners. I am the Patriarch of the Gan Clan, Tywin Gan." The Mages behind him knelt down as well. This action gave the doorman an extreme fright. When the core members saw Zhao Hai, they didn't just salute, they actually knelt. The doorman was afraid that he had been very disrespectful.

Zhao Hai didn't expect these people to go overboard with their greeting. He immediately helped Tywin up as he said, "Why would Patriarch Tywin give me such an overboard greeting? This Zhao Hai won't dare accept it."

Tywin bowed down and said, "Mister can surely accept it. If mister can't then nobody could. Our Gan Family is willing to be Mister's slaves, I hope mister can agree."

Zhao Hai stared, being a slave was completely different from

being vassals. Vassals have their own autonomy, it would be fine as long as they obey their master's orders. However, slaves didn't have the right to autonomy. In the future, they would need to obey Zhao Hai's every word. They would do what Zhao Hai wanted them to do. Zhao Hai couldn't understand, why would they suddenly decide to become his slaves?

Zhao Hai didn't agree immediately, instead, he calmly said, "Patriarch is too polite. I will not accept for now. Can we go in and discuss it first?"

Tywin immediately replied, "Of course, we have been disrespectful. Mister, please come in." Then he led Zhao Hai towards through the courtyard and then to a lobby. Then he asked Zhao Hai to sit down while all of them stayed standing.

Zhao Hai looked at them and calmly asked, "Might I know why your Family wanted to become my Clan's slaves?"

Tywin settled his own emotions down and seriously replied, "I'll be totally honest to Mister, after this Demon Race matter gets finished, we won't be able to stay inside Demon City anymore. We had stayed inside Demon City for a long time, but we still haven't made any close friends. Even if we side with the Calci Family, we still can't be assured of our future. Therefore, we decided to side with Mister. You are the continent's strongest Dark Mage, so we want to rely on you for survival. And since we don't have the abilities to be vassals, we are willing to be your slaves."

Zhao Hai looked at Tywin, he can somewhat understand the sorrows of this small clan. Therefore, Zhao Hai nodded and said, "How many people currently belong to the Gan Family?"

Tywin immediately replied, "We have a total of 17 Dark Mages in the family. Seven 4th ranks, three 5th ranks, three 6th ranks, two 7th ranks, and two 8th ranks. There are also 32 other members along with 10 slaves."

Zhao Hai nodded, the number was not a lot. He turned his head

to Tywin and said, “You really want to be my Clan’s slaves? You can think about it more.”

Hearing that Zhao Hai seems to be willing, Tywin quickly said, “We are willing, very willing. Mister, rest assured, we already discussed this with everyone.”

Zhao Hai nodded, “Alright, I agree. Starting today, you shall call me Young Master. Call all your family members as well as slaves, I shall be sending them to a safe place. The Dark Mages would have to remain, I need you somewhere else.”

Tywin immediately responded, “Yes, Young Master. We will arrange it right away.” Then he immediately told the Dark Mages behind him to arrange the things that Zhao Hai had ordered. Then Tywin stayed to listen for further instructions from Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai looked at them and said, “Most people in the continent only know that I am a Dark Mage, but they didn’t know how I became one. Since you have become my slaves, then I shall be open about you about these. After this matter, I shall tell you. In the meantime, I shall be using my Space Divergent Technique in order to send your family members to the Black Wasteland, that place is the true place of my Buda Clan. Then I shall be giving all of you potions, elevating your strengths to 9th rank. I’ll be leading you to the Demonic Abyss in order to eliminate all the magic beasts and undead there so that they cannot become part of the Demon army.”

Even if Zhao Hai hadn’t revealed too much, these small secrets were enough to make the Gan Family Dark Mages excited. Zhao Hai telling them things that ordinary people couldn’t know meant that Zhao Hai already treated them as his Clan’s slaves.

Although being a slave to another wasn’t the most glorious thing, it still depends on where one was a slave to. Slaves of an Emperor were still powerful people, and Zhao Hai himself was a monarch.

There weren’t a lot of people in the Gan Family and they didn’t

have a lot of belongings. In a place like Demon City, one couldn't really get that much belongings.

Zhao Hai arrived outside and when he saw the others he nodded, then he said to Tywin, "You arrange two people to go guide them. When they arrive at the Black Wasteland, someone will arrange their accomodation. Tell them to not be anxious and just follow instructions."

Tywin nodded, then he immediately acted on Zhao Hai's instructions. Before long, everything was arranged. Then Zhao Hai opened a spatial rift and took these people to the Black Wasteland.

Just when he had agreed to take the Gan Family as his slaves, Cai'er already went to inform Green and the others. There weren't a lot of people this time, so Green shouldn't have any problems in accommodating these people. Green had already arranged residences for tens of thousands of people, this matter should be very easy.

However, Green stil needed to take special attention to these people. After all, they had just become the Buda Clan's slaves. Therefore, they should be given the same accommodation as the clan's slaves. They were going to be arranged at Iron Mountain Fort.

Before long, the two Gan Family Dark Mages came back. Seeing that the two Dark Mages had arrived, Zhao Hai immediately turned to Tywin and said, "Have all of the family's Dark Mages come here. I shall be giving you potions that would make you 9th ranks at the shortest time."

They looked at Zhao Hai with surprised expressions, this was because Zhao Hai had told them that he would make them into 9th ranks. Although Zhao Hai had told them about this beforehand, they just thought that they had misheard him. Their strongest members were 8th ranks, and even them didn't know when they'll become 9th ranks. Therefore, what they got from Zhao Hai's

previous announcement was that they would just get stronger by a bit, and not become 9th ranks. But it seems like they had not misheard Zhao Hai, he really wanted to make them 9th ranks. Was this possible?”

Zhao Hai looked at their expressions and coldly snorted, “Don’t doubt me, even my undead are 9th ranks. Otherwise, where would I find the confidence to trash the Dragons?”

Tywin, who was still shocked, immediately recovered and bowed down, “Please forgive us, Young Master. We don’t dare doubt the Young Master’s words.” The other Dark Mages also bowed down to Zhao Hai, “Please forgive us, Young Master.”

Zhao Hai waved his hand and said, “Alright, don’t doubt me from now on. Your Young Master is a God-ranked expert, I just didn’t decide to ascend to the Divine Realm. I tell you this, the laws of this world can’t control me. I want to head towards the Demonic Abyss this time in order to promote my own strength. But since you had sided with me, then I shall increase your strengths. After all, I cannot manage everything in the continent, so I would have you be my representatives. And since you represent my Buda Clan, I can’t have you looking so weak lest you lose face for the clan.”

All of them were stunned, however, they couldn’t hide the excitement on their faces. They didn’t expect Zhao Hai to be a God-ranked expert. No wonder Zhao Hai dared to eliminate the Dragons. All of them were extremely happy, they didn’t think that they would actually serve a God-ranked expert. There was zero shame in becoming slaves to a God-ranked expert, in fact, it might even cause envy on a lot of people.

Chapter 684 – Gan Clan and Barn

The reason why Zhao Hai dared to say these words to these people was because he has his own plans. He was not afraid that these people would reveal his secrets. He would make them into 9th ranks and then bring them to the Demonic Abyss in order to fight against the magic beasts as well as the undead. He wanted to do it in this way because he wanted to see the reactions that came with these people.

If they were sincere with him, then the advantages that they would gain wouldn't be small. However, if they were insincere, then Zhao Hai would have no choice but to be impolite.

But Zhao Hai was just being too overly careful this time. Being a slave to the Buda Clan wasn't a shame. In fact, having a God-ranked expert as well as an Emperor as a master was something that not a lot of people could have.

Zhao Hai withdrew a bottle of water, naturally, this water was Spatial water. This water can help the Gan Family members become 8th ranks. When they arrive at that rank, then they would consume God's blood in order to become 9th ranks.

Zhao Hai gave the bottle over to Tywin and said, "This is a potion that can elevate your level. However, this is only effective up until you become 8th rank. When all of you become 8th rank, you come back to me."

Tywin was shaking while he received the bottle of Spatial Water. For their family, this bottle was extremely precious. There were potions in the continent that would elevate the levels of Mages and Warriors, however, those potions were very expensive!

Even Great Nobles were reluctant to spend that money. In the minds of the Great Nobles, instead of spending a huge amount of money to buy that potion, they might as well spend that in training someone with high talent. It was because of this that

potions that can upgrade levels became very rare in the continent.

After handing the potion over, Zhao Hai turned around and returned to the living room. He wanted to see how long these people would take in order to rank up.

One must know that this potion was much better than the one before. Zhao Hai believed that upgrading ranks this time would be much faster than back then with Laura and the others. At the same time, Zhao Hai also noticed that the low-ranked Dark Mages of the Gan Family weren't in their current rank because of their lack of talent, but because of their young age instead. In fact, if one were to compare the Gan Family's talent with the rest of the continent, then they can be deemed to be quite gifted. One must know that aside from the difficulty of reaching 9th rank, being an 8th rank was quite hard as well, there were even some small clans that didn't have these 8th ranks. But the Gan Family, while being in Demon City, actually managed to produce two 8th ranks. This was sufficient evidence for their lineage.

There was not much control in Demon City, but in the same way, this made them isolated towards the supplies of the continent. If one were to see the Buddha Empire's capital as a metropolis of magic, then Demon City would be that small village in the outskirts of the Empire, a small village that was regularly attacked by wild beasts.

When he saw Tywin and the others discussing about the potion and then cultivating, Zhao Hai came out of the living room, he wanted to see Barn. At this point, all of the Gan Family's servants have left. Originally, Tywin wanted to keep some people here but Zhao Hai didn't agree. This way, he didn't have to worry about these people and even made it easier for him to walk around. More importantly, there wouldn't be a lot of people who would come and give him greetings.

Barn was currently sitting outside his horse carriage, patiently waiting for Zhao Hai. Seeing Barn's attitude, Zhao Hai smiled and

said, “Barn, come here.”

Barn was sitting in his carriage while in a daze. He knew that there was only a small chance for this home of his to remain. This was the reason why he was in a daze, he has never left Demon City in his entire life. If he left this place, he wouldn't know how to live, therefore, he chose to stay behind.

When Barn heard Zhao Hai, he immediately recovered. He looked at Zhao Hai who called him from the Gan Family's gate. He stared for a moment before he quickly jumped down from the carriage and went towards Zhao Hai. Then he gave a bow and said, “Mister, do you need me for anything?”

Zhao Hai looked at Barn and said, “Barn, come with me, I have something to tell you.” Barn nodded, then followed Zhao Hai into the Gan Family's residence.

After entering the Gan Family's residence, Barn felt that it was empty. He had visited the Gan Family once or twice before, and he recognized almost all of the people in the Gan Family. However, he wasn't able to see any of them when he entered this time. It was as if the entire Gan Family had vanished.

But Barn didn't dare to ask as he followed Zhao Hai into the Gan Family's living room. Then Zhao Hai sat down as Barn respectfully stood there. Zhao Hai saw Barn's anxious face and couldn't help but smile, “Barn, there's no need to be nervous. I want to ask, are you willing to leave Demon City?”

Barn stared for a moment, he didn't expect Zhao Hai to ask him about this issue. He couldn't think of a good answer. He can just refuse and use the same reason that he gave the General, wanting to protect Demon City. However, he would be lying if he said so. At the same time, Barn had the feeling that he had been seen through by Zhao Hai. Therefore, he really can't say that he wanted to stay in Demon City, willing to fall along with the City's demise.

Zhao Hai looked at Barn's expression and smiled faintly, “Can't

think of a good reply? You don't want to leave Demon City? After all, this is your home right? But as you can see, this place was also the home of the Gan Family, but now all of them had left save for the family's Dark Mages. All of them had been sent away by me. Barn, if you want to leave, then I can send you to my Buda Clan's territory, making you live a whole new life there. Also, I forgot to tell you, I am not talking about Golden Island, it is a different place. Are you willing to go?"

Barn stared, he really hadn't thought this point through, he looked puzzled at Zhao Hai as he asked, "Why would Mister want to help me?"

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "No special reason, I can just see a certain person's shadow on you. Barn, I know what you're thinking. You have never left Demon City since you were a child, so you don't know how you'll live once you go outside. This made you afraid, so you decided to stay in the city. I can arrange for you to live in my Buda Clan's territory, I can even have someone offer you a job or you can continue driving your carriage. You don't have to worry about your life changing so much. You will be able to meet new people and also make new friends. So, do you want to go?"

Barn looked at Zhao Hai, then suddenly he made a serious question, "Mister, if I went there, can I continue to drive your carriage?"

Zhao Hai couldn't help but stare at this question, he didn't think that Barn would ask this, Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "If you want to drive my carriage for me, then that's no problem. However, you have not cultivated yet, this wouldn't be good. After you go there, then I will make them teach you cultivation. After you have reached a high enough level, then you can drive my carriage."

Barn knitted his brows and said, "This, Mister, I hadn't cultivated before. And I'm not very young anymore. Wouldn't it be

too late for me to start cultivation?”

Zhao Hai actually laughed and said, “There’s never too late Barn. Rest assured, whether you learn magic or battle qi, as long as you are willing to practice, then I can make you into an expert in a short period of time. What now? You want to go?”

As soon as Barn heard Zhao Hai, his two eyes lit up as he answered, “Mister, is that true? Then I’m willing! I want to go!”

Zhao Hai laughed and said, “Alright. Barn, to be honest, you are completely unable to provide help here even if you choose to stay behind. I shall be sending you to the Black Wasteland, people will be there to arrange you to your place. Right, do you want to go along with your carriage?”

Barn’s face expressed his excitement as he said, “You can do that mister? That’s fantastic! Thank you very much!”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “Starting today, just call me Young Master. Now go and drive your carriage towards the back door.” Barn nodded and then ran outside to get his carriage. Zhao Hai told Cai’er about Barn’s situation and then had Green and the others arrange a place for Barn to live in. Before long, Barn arrived then Zhao Hai used the Space to send Barn and his carriage towards the Black Wasteland.

After completing all of these, Zhao Hai looked at the Gan Family’s situation. Majority of them had already reached 8th rank, the other two were on the cusp of breaking through. But, Tywin was very faithful to Zhao Hai’s order, he waited until all of them became 8th ranks before going to see Zhao Hai.

It was already noon when all of the family’s Mages reached 8th rank. After that, they all went to the living room. Zhao Hai looked at the group and nodded. He took out a red vial of liquid and said, “This potion shall boost you from 8th rank to 9th rank. In a while, some people would come and invite me over for a meal in the General’s residence. When I come back, all of you should have

already reached 9th rank. After that, we'll depart towards the Demonic Abyss."

All of the Mages nodded, then at this time, a voice was suddenly heard from outside, "Is Mister Zhao Hai in? General Besmir is inviting Mister Zhao Hai over for a meal."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned his head to the Mages and said, "All of you work hard." The Gan Family nodded, then Tywin went and escorted Zhao Hai to the gate.

Waiting outside the gate was a team of cavalry. When they saw Zhao Hai come out, their captain immediately gave a bow and said, "The General is inviting Mister Zhao Hai over to dine."

Zhao Hai nodded, "Alright, let's go. Barn has become my servant and has already left. Later on, you don't need to arrange a carriage for me, I can walk by myself." Then with an intention, Zhao Hai summoned Alien. He sat inside Alien's body before heading towards the General's residence.

Seeing Zhao Hai leave, Tywin turned to the others and said, "Did you hear the Young Master? Immediately go and cultivate. If Young Master comes back and someone is still not 9th rank, then I will be giving out punishments."

Chapter 685 – Historical Novel like the Three Kingdoms?

Zhao Hai calmly stood on the Bone Dragon, behind him were the people from the Gan Family. At this moment, these people were already 9th rank. They were currently feeling like they were in a dream, they couldn't believe that they had become 9th ranks, it was completely unbelievable.

9th rank experts were considered to be the peak powers of the continent. And all of the Dark Mages in the Gan family were now 9th ranks, this gave them extreme excitement.

However, they didn't dare to be complacent. They understood that this was given by Zhao Hai. If they dared to betray him, then Zhao Hai would definitely clean them up.

The didn't believe that they were the only 9th rank subordinates of Zhao Hai. If Zhao Hai can make them into 9th ranks, then he could definitely make other people 9th ranks as well. If Zhao Hai had a lot of 9th rank subordinates and then the Gan Family decides to rebel, then aren't they just courting death?

But most importantly, when they became 9th rank, they still weren't able to fathom Zhao Hai's level. This made Tywin and the others believe Zhao Hai's previous words, that Zhao Hai was a God-ranked expert. A 9th rank and a God-ranked expert were just too different. Their disparity was leagues greater than the difference between an 8th rank and a 9th rank. Therefore, the Gan Family was very loyal and devoted to Zhao Hai. They were afraid that if Zhao Hai wanted them to die, then they wouldn't even have the time to blink before they perish.

Zhao Hai didn't have the mood to think about these right now. He was thinking about the Radiant Church's reaction upon hearing about the Demon Race's arrival.

The news about the Demon Race had spread quickly throughout the continent. This was also in line with Zhao Hai's plan. He wanted the church to give this news to the Divine Race, prompting them to make their move ahead of time.

The people from the Radiant Church weren't aware that Zhao Hai had so many 9th ranks in his hand. So after they received the news about the Demon Race, they would surely inform the Divine Race. After all, the Divine Race wouldn't want the Demon Race to conquer the continent first.

Compared to the native population of the Ark Continent, the Divine Race should be more afraid of the Demon Realm. This was because the strength that was displayed by the Demons was no worse than the Divine Race.

It was impossible for the Divine Race to allow the Demons to eliminate the people in the Ark Continent, then just swoop in to claim the prize. In fact, Zhao Hai reckoned that the Divine Race was not interested about the Ark Continent itself, but its people instead. If the entire population of the Ark Continent were to get extinguished, then the Divine Race wouldn't be able to gain anything.

Most importantly, the Demon Race's launching point was in the Demonic Abyss, a place not too far from the Radiant Empire. In this case, the Demons would surely target the Radiant Church first. And since the Radiant Church alone couldn't stop the Demon army, they would definitely call upon the Divine Race. After all, there weren't any other people in the continent who would come into their rescue. Instead, the continent might even find joy in this encounter, these were the two invaders, they might as well fight each other.

In the case of the Demons, their spatial rift needed the Blood Void formation in order to activate. On the other hand, there doesn't seem to be some magic that was being done by the Divine Race. This made Zhao Hai believe that the Divine Race really had

the capability to take action. Perhaps they might even appear in the continent quite soon.

This was what Zhao Hai desired. If the Divine Race failed to arrive, then the Ark Continent would then face an enemy one after the other. On the contrary, if the Divine Race were to come, the situation would now turn into a three-way battle with the locals of the Ark Continent, the Demons, and the Divine Race, like in the Tale of Three Kingdoms. Between the Divine Race and the Demons, one of them wanted to get the Ark Continent for themselves, while the other wanted to enslave the natives. Although it seems like there was an avenue for zero conflict, the Divine Race wouldn't just allow the people of the Ark Continent to enter the Divine Realm. In the eyes of the Divine Race, the Ark Continent was inhabited by savages, people who didn't belong to the Divine Realm. What the Divine Race wanted to do was to keep the natives in the Ark Continent, making it like a pen. The sheep were the natives and the herders were the Divine Race. When the time comes that a sheep gets fat, the Divine Race would then come over and take it for themselves.

On the other hand, the Demon Race wanted to massacre the entire native population. This was something that the Divine Race wouldn't agree to. They don't really care about the pen, but if the sheep were to be touched, then they certainly would fight back. This was where the two came to contradict each other.

As long as they have this contradiction, then it would be impossible for them to cooperate and in the process, making the pressure on Zhao Hai much smaller.

And the most important thing was that the place where the Demons would arrive was not far from Radiant Empire. Behind the Demonic Abyss would be the Buddha Empire, the Lyon Empire, the Rosen Empire, the Aksu Empire, and then the Beastmen. With all of these in line, the continent would have a strategic depth in their defense. On the contrary, the Radiant Empire would be left

isolated, without any backers supporting them. If the Demons were thinking right, then they would definitely target the Radiant Empire first, getting themselves in conflict with the Divine Race. This was the scenario that Zhao Hai wishes to happen the most.

Because of this, Zhao Hai started paying attention towards the Radiant Empire. But unfortunately, he can't use the Blood Ghost Staff to conduct reconnaissance on the Empire. This was due to a strange situation happening in the Radiant Empire. When the Blood Ghost Staff went there, it seems like its range of vision had become very small. And it also seems like the Empire's 9th ranks had been tasked to patrol the area. This made Zhao Hai unable to have his Staff wander off too closely. Otherwise, if those 9th ranks find out, then he would have to find more innovative ways to scout the enemy out.

However, this wasn't a bad thing for Zhao Hai. This performance from the Radiant Church meant that the Divine Race has started to move quickly. As long as the Divine Race takes action, then it would be good for Zhao Hai's side.

Zhao Hai's current strength was very strong. It can be said that compared to the war tens of thousands of years ago, Zhao Hai's capabilities had already surpassed the other powers. But one shouldn't forget that the Demons had managed to prepare for ten thousand years as well. Additionally, they were also very well suited for battle, every one of them were formidable fighters. This was something that gave Zhao Hai some worries, therefore, he wanted everything to be prepared as much as possible.

To be honest, Zhao Hai didn't believe that the Buddha Empire would be able to defend against the Demons. Because of this, a plan for evacuation was already gone underway. The Buddha Empire would be turned to be a strategic defense position. Their generals would block the Demons as much as possible.

Naturally, this was in the premise that the Divine Race didn't come. If the Divine Race arrives, then they would get into a

skirmish with the Demons. When that happens, then the lives of Zhao Hai and the others would become better.

Zhao Hai was also quite worried that the Divine Race wouldn't act. Although the Blood Ghost Staff wasn't able to see the situation inside the Radiant Church, Zhao Hai knew that a plan of action was already underway by the Divine Race. But as to what plan this was, Zhao Hai had no clue. This matter being out of his vision was not very good, Zhao Hai didn't like this feeling.

At this time, the Bone Dragon had already penetrated inside the abyss. Every single magic beast and undead that Zhao Hai came across weren't spared. Those he can kill were killed, while the undead were absorbed into the Space, turning them into Zhao Hai's soldiers.

However, Zhao Hai also discovered that the magic beasts and undead present here were relatively low-level. One must know that Zhao Hai and his team were already quite deep into the abyss. Where were the formidable creatures? Did they go back to the Demon Realm?

The Gan Family were behind Zhao Hai during the entire ordeal, and they had witnessed how powerful Zhao Hai was. While they were descending, Zhao Hai had released a batch of undead, sweeping everything in the way. Whether they be darkness beasts or undead, all of them were eliminated in a short period of time.

The Gan Family Mafes were also Dark Mages, moreover, they were very familiar with the Demonic Abyss and had used undead summoning to subdue the undead here. However, compared to Zhao Hai's undead, their own undead had fallen extremely short. They now understood why Zhao Hai didn't trust their combat efficiency, they were just too weak. If they didn't rank up, then not to say Zhao Hai, even Zhao Hai's undead would stump them then and there.

Soon, the group went deeper into the Demonic Abyss. This was a

place where no person had explored before, this made the group even more careful in their advance.

Zhao Hai stood on top of the Bone Dragon as it went forward in a moderate pace. At the same time, the undead on the ground had kept on cleaning up the Demonic Abyss, missing absolutely nothing.

Then suddenly, Zhao Hai had noticed something interesting. He made the Bone Dragon slowly go down as they stopped a few meters above the ground.

Tywin and the others followed Zhao Hai's gaze, they wanted to see what managed to attract Zhao Hai's attention.

Looking down, Tywin and the others couldn't help but get absorbed by the view. Under them was a sea of flowers. Flowers of various colors were everywhere, it looked very beautiful.

The Gan Family Dark Mages were very surprised to see this flower garden. They didn't think that the Demonic Abyss would have such a place. Was beauty something that belonged to the abyss? Compared to an Emperor's garden, this sea of flowers was just more attractive. This fact was quite inconceivable.

At this time, Zhao Hai's undead had also arrived by the flower garden. However, they didn't advance, they just stared into this sea of flowers.

Chapter 686 – Man Eating Flower, Flower Devil Race

The reason why Zhao Hai stopped to see these flowers was because Cai'er just recognized what these were. The flowers weren't flowers from the Ark Continent, instead it was one that was found in the Demon Realm.

This flower was a demon plant, simply because it was from the Demon Realm. It was a flower that gave Demons a headache. In fact these flowers were controlled by a Demon itself, it was called Man-eating Flower.

Just from the name alone, one could see what kind of flower it was. The attacking power of a single flower can reach the strength of 4th to 5th rank. If it was a large one, then maybe even 8th ranks would have to turn around and leave it be.

Cai'er had been low-key during her stay inside the Demon Realm. She didn't attack Demons, on the contrary, her leaves can even become a food source for the Demons and the demonic beasts. Therefore, her reputation in the Demon realm was quite high. After Demons die, they would even bury their bodies under Cai'er's vines, providing her with extra nutrients.

On the other hand, this Man-eating flower was different, since their attacking strength was formidable, they didn't need Cai'er's methods in order to survive. On each petal on these flowers were sawtooth like teeth. As long as a person or beast comes walking in, they would act like wild beasts and snatch them using its petals, like how a predator snatches their prey. Then the flower would chew the body into dust. Because of its sawtooth teeth, they can even grind a magic beast's bone down to nothingness.

Although the flowers don't look too tall, their vines were in fact very long. Moreover, these flowers were said to be perennial. They can also grow up to a meter wide. Their flowers were usually

curled up and when the flower attacks, the vine would suddenly shoot out as the flower went in to take a bite.

If you think that the flower only had this as a means of attack, then you are wrong. It still had other offensive ways. They also had their vines that were so tough that normal swords wouldn't be able to cut through it. Not only were these vines thorny, they were poisonous as well. Once one gets cut through the skin, then they would immediately get paralyzed in no time. This paralyzing effect was very strong that even most 7th rank magic beasts weren't able to resist it.

And if you were able to cut those vines off, you still shouldn't consider them as finished. This man-eating flower was very abundant in sap, and this sap was very corrosive. This corrosive effect can melt through your flesh and bones. It was so corrosive that once you ingest it, then it wouldn't take too long before your entire body turns into a heaping pile of mush.

This mush would then become very helpful to the man-eating flower, becoming its fertilizer. Most importantly, the reproductive ability of this flower was very strong. Although the flower vine doesn't grow fast, as long as it doesn't get uprooted, then a flower would eventually bloom on top of it.

For these reasons, these flowers had become a difficult existence in the Demon Realm. Only the Flower Devil Race of the Demon realm can control these flowers. Naturally, it wasn't just the flowers that they can control, at the same time, it can also cultivate them and spread them out. From the appearance of the flowers in the Demonic Abyss, it seems like they were cultivated by a Flower Devil.

Zhao Hai looked at the sea of man-eating flowers. He now knew why many adventurers fell inside the abyss. If one couldn't recognize these flowers, then it would be very easy to be the flowers' prey.

Tywin looked at Zhao Hai and asked, “Young Master, are there any issues with these flowers?”

Zhao Hai turned his head to Tywin, then he smiled faintly and said, “You will know when you see it.” Then he turned his hand and took out a magic beast corpse that he got from Accra Mountain, and then he threw it towards the sea of flowers.

When the magic beast was thrown down, the flowers immediately turned into something that can only be compared to sharks that had smelt the scent of blood. All the flowers immediately snapped towards the corpse, wrapping it inside them. Before long, the flowers withdrew, leaving nothing behind. Even the bones of the magic beast weren’t spared.

Tywin and the others looked at this in shock. They didn’t expect these flowers to have so much attacking power.

Zhao Hai looked all around before moving his hand, taking a man-eating flower directly into the Space. As soon as the flower entered the Space, a prompt was heard, “Carnivorous plant detected. This flower has a spiritual imprint of another. Removing spiritual imprint.”

Zhao Hai nodded, it seems like this flower was indeed raised by someone from the Flower Devil Race. Zhao Hai looked at the sea of flowers, since all of these were cultivated here, then the Flower Devil shouldn’t be too far. Zhao Hai wanted to find it.

However, Zhao Hai was also aware that this was not easy to do. The Flower Devils belong to a very special race in the Demon Realm. Their race can be said to be Plant Sprites like Cai’er, but they weren’t fully Plant Sprites, they were also part beast, it was very unusual.

They can turn into a person, able to walk in all directions while also able to become flowers, taking the place of a bud. Moreover, their lifespans were quite long, most of them can easily live for about a thousand years. And when they die, they would form into a

seed, known as a Flower Devil seed. It didn't matter if they were people or magic beasts, as long as this seed gets mistakenly eaten, then the seed would slowly germinate inside the body of its host. And when it finally digested the host's body, a new Flower Devil would be born.

There weren't a lot of Flower Devils in the Demon Realm. Moreover, they also needed to be adults in order to control flowers with strong attacking capability like the man-eating flowers. Usually, they would just control ordinary flowers.

Although adult Flower Devils were strong, they were very weak in their childhood. Flower Devils can breed as well. Their breeding method was very special, two Flower Devils would meet and then they would become flowers. After that, through pollination, another Flower Devil would be born between the two of them.

Zhao Hai looked all around but he still couldn't see even a shadow of a Flower Devil. It seems like it had turned into its flower form. Zhao Hai didn't become polite, he wanted to snuff this Flower Devil out.

Zhao Hai absorbed a huge chunk of man-eating flowers into his Space. Then no prompt came from the Space, so Zhao Hai took another chunk into the Space.

Finally, when Zhao Hai took his fifth chunk of man-eating flower into the Space, a movement can be seen in the distance. A flower suddenly changed and slowly stood up. Zhao Hai knew that this was what he was waiting for.

Zhao Hai sized this Flower Devil that was in the process of standing up. Its stature was tall and big, it was unexpectedly four meters high. It was wearing a long robe that was composed of flower petals. It was brilliant purple and looked very fancy. The Flower Devil's face was red, and it had a hair that looked like a fresh flower that was in full bloom. This person had its eyes closed, probably not quite sober yet.

Zhao Hai stood there, quietly observing the Flower Devil. After a while, the Flower Demon opened its eyes. The eyes weren't divided into sclera and pupil, instead, it was pitch black, looking just like two reflective gemstones. Due to it being fully black, it actually gave out a very evil feeling.

The Flower Devil looked into the distance and into Zhao Hai and his Bone Dragon. Then it opened its mouth and said, "How dare you take by children?! Hand them over now, or else, die!" The Flower Devil's opened mouth made Tywin and the others shocked. The Flower Devil actually had sharp jagged teeth, it looked extremely horrible.

Zhao Hai looked at the Flower Devil and asked, "Are you a Flower Devil? What is your name?"

The Flower Devil couldn't help but stare, its black eyes seemed to shine for a moment before it asked, "Are you from the Ark Continent? How come you are aware of our Flower Devil race?"

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "You don't need to know that. Now, tell me your name, or else I won't spare you."

The Flower Devil laughed out loud and replied, "Empty boasts. Just because you are a 9th rank expert, you think you can deal with me? You are too naive."

Zhao Hai looked at the Flower Devil and smiled, "Of course I can deal with you. You're quite an easy target."

The Flower Devil looked at Zhao Hai, then it coldly said, "A Human Expert, finding out about the Demon invasion, so he decided to stop it. Then I have something to tell you. You're already too late. The Demon army will come soon, and there's no other way for you to stop it."

Zhao Hai looked at the Flower Devil and smiled, "I'm not here to stop it. There's no stopping the Blood Void formation. The Demons back then told me about it, I'm only here to clean the

place up.”

As soon as the Flower Devil heard Zhao Hai, his eyes suddenly flashed, then he looked at Zhao Hai and said, “You actually knew this much? Who are you? Why would you know about the matters of the Demon Realm.”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “It doesn’t matter as to who I am. You only need to know that when the Demon Race comes, I would be the first one to stand up and defend the continent.”

The Flower Devil’s eyes showed a cold expression, then he gave a long hiss, seemingly giving a command to the flowers on the ground. The flowers all stretched up like snakes getting ready to pounce.

The Flower Devil looked at Zhao Hai and said, “You meeting me today can only be blamed on your bad luck. You shall die today. Flower Armor!” Then just as his voice fell, the man-eating flowers immediately flew towards him. Before long, his body was covered with an armor completely made out of man-eating flowers.

With this, the Flower Demon’s stature had become even bigger, reaching a height of about ten meters. But what made Zhao Hai shocked the most was that this armor actually performed just like the Flower Devil’s own body. There weren’t any awkward movements that can be seen, it moved fluidly just like how a normal being moves. It seems like the man-eating flowers had become part of the Flower Demon’s body.

Chapter 687 – Flame Demon

Zhao Hai didn't think that the Flower Devil would have this trick. And at this moment, the Flower Devil started to actually fly. This made Zhao Hai surprised, Cai'er who was God-ranked still cannot make her main body float. Zhao Hai didn't expect the Flower Devil to be able to do what Cai'er can't.

After the Flower Devil flew, it immediately waved his hand as man-eating flowers flew directly towards Zhao Hai and the others, looking just like pouncing snakes.

Zhao Hai smiled faintly, then he waved his own hand as several Bone Dragons appeared and threw themselves towards the Flower Devil. At the same time, the Bone Dragons also blocked the flying man-eating flowers.

Now it was the time for the Flower Devil to be startled. It didn't think that Zhao Hai would actually be able to unleash formidable undead.

Just when the Flower Devil decided to hide, it suddenly discovered that it was already surrounded by undead. These undead formed a huge ball that rotated continuously. The Flower Devil stared, he didn't know what to do. Then a spatial rift appeared and before the Flower Devil could react, it was quickly pushed into the rift by the undead.

When the Flower Devil entered the Space, a prompt was heard, "Plant-type Demon detected, unwilling to surrender, proceeding to subdue. Plant-type Demon surrenders. Detected special ability on plant-type demon. Withdrawing ability and integrating it into the Space. Space's Manager can now use these abilities. Space's plants now have a higher chance of gaining sentience. Plants in the Space now have much more defensive ability."

Zhao Hai expected this result, therefore he wasn't surprised. He was already aware that the Flower Demon had a lot of abilities.

However, Zhao Hai still couldn't ignore the abilities that the Flower Demon had given to Cai'er . From what he can understand, Cai'er can now fly, which may allow her to leave the Space. This was a good thing, it meant that Zhao Hai had gained another strong helper.

Naturally, Tywin and the others were unaware of all of these. What they saw was the undead surrounding the Flower Devil in a giant ball. Then after that, the Flower Devil disappeared. Although they couldn't understand what happened, they didn't dare to ask.

Zhao Hai waved his hand and stored the excess undead. Then he commanded the Bone Dragon to fly forward and go through the sea of flowers. After the man eating flowers, the amount of undead and dark beasts had increased. Zhao Hai was not polite, he absorbed all of them into the Space.

Zhao Hai and the others flew down even more. However, their speed had gone slower since the visibility had also gone shorter. Zhao Hai also discovered that even his divine sense was affected, he cannot sense things that were too far.

At this point, the power of the dark beasts and the undead got stronger and stronger. Even Zhao Hai's 9th rank undead needed to exert some effort in order to clean them up.

In order to eliminate the beasts and undead inside the abyss as soon as possible, Zhao Hai decided to speed things up. Since he couldn't see very far, decided to release more undead. At the same time, Zhao Hai also quickened their speed of advancing.

However, the Demonic Abyss has once again proven how bottomless it was. Just as Zhao Hai was thinking that there was no end, he suddenly felt a powerful aura in the distance. Zhao Hai stared for a moment before he stopped. Then a fierce roar was heard from in front of him as a fiery red light appeared. Zhao Hai immediately erected a magical barrier. If his movement wasn't quick, then they might have been burned by fire.

Zhao Hai looked in front of him in surprise, he wanted to know where this heat came from. At this moment, a clump of red light slowly approached the Bone Dragon. Zhao Hai stared at the human-shaped monster that was made out of fire. This monster made a loud hissing sound as fire spewed out towards Zhao Hai's direction.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but stare at the creature, he can feel how destructive its flame was. Zhao Hai waved his hand to produce a ball of water. Then he threw the ball of water to quench the approaching fireball.

Zhao Hai's water wasn't any common water, it was actually the Space's glacial water. The coldness of this water easily trumps frozen ice. Once an average person touches this water, then they will surely be frozen to death.

The ball of water slowly approached the fireball. It wasn't very big, compared to the fireball, it would be like a watermelon being hit by a walnut. But unexpectedly, when Zhao Hai's ball of water came into contact with the fireball, the fire was immediately extinguished. At the same time, the water ball seemed to be untouched as it continued its trajectory towards the monster.

The monster seemed very surprised. It immediately roared and raised its hand to release a stream of fire to collide with Zhao Hai's water ball. This time, the ball of water couldn't block it as it vaporized under the constant barrage hot flame.

Zhao Hai knit the brows on his head, this Flame Demon was really hard to deal with. It was also at this time that Zhao Hai heard from Cai'er that the monster was named Flame Demon. It was another peculiar lifeform in the Demon Realm. In the Demon Realm, they can become God-ranked beings, with the majority of them having strengths much stronger than 9th ranks. Although the one in the Demonic Abyss wasn't God-ranked, it was still something that shouldn't be underestimated.

It seems like the Demons had gone big with their move. First, it was the Flower Devil, and now it was a Flame Demon. Who knows what else was waiting for Zhao Hai.

At this rate, Zhao Hai can only use Bubble in order to deal with this Flame Demon. However, Zhao Hai didn't want to bother Bubble right now since the little blob was still learning about how to refine items. It wouldn't be worth it to have Bubble stop what he's doing just to deal with this Flame Demon.

In fact, Zhao Hai can just kill this Flame Demon, but he also thought that the Flame Demon would be useful for the Space, therefore he wanted to capture it.

Just as he was thinking about this, he suddenly felt something move in the Space's sky. Zhao Hai stared for a moment before he thought about the little thing that he gained along with the crystal jar. It was something that looked like a small sun. After arriving at the Space, the small sun went to the skies and stayed there. At this time, that same small sun transmitted the feeling of wanting to go out.

Zhao Hai gawked, he couldn't help but think back to Bubble. If Bubble was the source of myriad water, then couldn't this little sun be a source of myriad fire?

After thinking up to this point, Zhao Hai made an intention as the small sun appeared in front of him. Then Zhao Hai waved his hand and had the little sun charge towards the Flame Demon.

The Flame Demon suddenly sensed something dangerous coming from Zhao Hai's direction, so it didn't delay as it immediately turned to run away.

However, its speed wasn't faster than the small sun. In just a short moment, the little sun already arrived by the Flame Demon and entered its body. The Flame Demon immediately stopped and roared out loud before it slowly turned silent. The Flame Demon's body slowly shrank before it completely vanished, leaving the little

sun floating there. It seems like nothing changed from the sun's appearance. But Zhao Hai can feel that the little sun was quite happy, it was as if it had just eaten great food.

After that, Zhao Hai absorbed the small sun back into the Space the he urged the Bone Dragon to go further into the Demonic Abyss. On the other hand, Tywin and the others couldn't help but turn stupid. They were very shocked by Zhao Hai's attacks. Zhao Hai was using special methods in order to deal with the enemies. Although it seems like Zhao Hai's methods weren't eye-catching, they still couldn't hide the strength that Zhao Hai had.

Zhao Hai didn't care about the Gan family's reaction. He was now more curious about the situation with the Demons. He was now convinced that there was something inside the Demonic Abyss.

However, after flying for some time, Zhao Hai couldn't help but be disappointed. They haven't met anything, it seems like the Demons have exhausted everything that they had.

At this moment, Zhao Hai suddenly stopped moving forward. He felt that something was wrong. He had been moving forward after he defeated the Flame Demon. But although the scenery in front of him was changing, he still felt that he wasn't advancing at all.

Zhao Hai immediately called Cai'er over to see what was going on. What he got from Cai'er was information that he wasn't moving all this time judging from what she saw from the monitor.

This made Zhao Hai feel confused. This was because he had always been flying, but Cai'er actually told him that he didn't move. What was happening here?

Zhao Hai calmed his mind, he closed his eyes and then felt everything around him. With this, he found out a lot of floating things that seemed to surround him. These seemed like filaments but Zhao Hai wasn't sure if they really existed, they feel more like energy projections than actual objects. From what he can see, it

looks like these hair like things were giving Zhao Hai's surroundings a strange feeling.

Zhao Hai quitely felt these floating energy filaments, he wanted to know what these were. Zhao Hai can feel that these things had no offensive ability, it cannot hurt him. However, these filaments were also giving Zhao Hai a dangerous vibe. This contradictory feeling surprised Zhao Hai.

Chapter 688 – Best Wife Candidate:

Succubus

Zhao Hai calmed his mind as he felt the energy around him. He wanted to know what these things were doing and what their use was.

However, Zhao Hai found himself unable to find anything out. Besides what he felt, there was nothing else, just the Bone Dragon and the others, hovering mid-air.

Zhao Hai continued to feel out these energy filaments. Although they don't have any physical effects, it seems like they were doing something akin to a stick hitting water. Ripples were going outwards as the filaments waved around. The ripples were extremely faint, if Zhao Hai didn't have his God-ranked divine sense, then he wouldn't have sensed them.

Zhao Hai carefully examined the ripples and was quick to discover that they were special types of spiritual force. It was quite peculiar, not only was it hard to detect, their effect was manifested quite quickly. As soon as the ripples touched Zhao Hai's mind, they would immediately get absorbed and then disappear.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but feel very strange, this mental attack was too weak, but he immediately found out that something was wrong. Then suddenly, the opposing party's fluctuation increased. At the same time, the more the other party exerted this force, the more comfortable Zhao Hai felt.

However, Zhao Hai was not happy with this, in fact, he was quite startled at this point. He was now convinced that these ripples were up to no good and were responsible for Zhao Hai's strange situation. And then, Zhao Hai understood that he had been trapped in an illusion.

After he had thought up to this point, the Space immediately

issued a prompt, “Host is receiving an advanced level hypnosis attack. Host’s form separated from hypnotic state. Space has increased its own hypnosis ability.”

Zhao Hai’s mind went blank, then he opened his eyes. It was not long before he discovered a Demon not far away from him. She was a very attractive Demon, she wore bewitching leather clothes, one could clearly see that this leather was made out of the skin belonging to a very advanced level beast. The leather was black, it didn’t have any speck of hair on it and had a texture of a diver’s suit. The leather tightly fit her body and was very perfect for her own form. The Demon’s skin had the same color as wheat and her facial expression was exquisite. She had silvery-white hair which was quite long. At this time, she was about ten meters away from Zhao Hai and the others.

The Bone Dragon wasn’t moving at all, it was just quietly floated in the air. Then Zhao Hai turned to Tywin and the others, it seems like they were still unable to notice this female demon in front of them.

Zhao Hai turned his head back to the female demon in surprise. This woman was too powerful, to the point that she can actually place Zhao Hai in an illusion. If Zhao Hai didn’t become suspicious and was saved by the Space, then he would have suffered consequences.

At this time, Cai’er talked while inside the Space, “Young Master, that’s a Succubus. Their race has the most powerful spiritual attack in the entire Demon Realm. Young Master, it seems like you are in deep trouble now.”

Zhao Hai was confused at what Cai’er said, “Trouble? What trouble? I have broken her attack, therefore, I can just kill her whenever I want. How can that be trouble? Is it because I’m still in an illusion?”

Cai’er gave a smile and said, “Of course not. Young Master is

certainly out of the illusion. However, the Succubi are the hardest people to deal with in the Demon Realm. Moreover, their race had a very unusual rule. When an adult Succubus attacks using her mental power and her enemy manages to break free, then she would have to marry him. Of course, this isn't the only way that Succubi get married. However, all married Succubi would have a crystal piece on their foreheads, increasing the potency of their mental attacks. Young Master, from what I can see, this adult Succubi in front of you is still undefeated, meaning that she is still unmarried. Now that the Young Master has broken free of her attack, then I'm afraid that this Succubi would have to marry you."

Zhao Hai couldn't help but stare blankly, he would never expect this in a thousand years. Then he asked Cai'er, "Is that really the case? Is there nobody in the Demon Realm that can defeat this Succubus? From what I can see, her mental attack is indeed powerful, but it isn't to a point where nobody else can defeat it."

Cai'er smiled and said, "Of course they aren't invincible, otherwise, the Demon realm wouldn't have been ruled by the Demon Race. However, these Succubi are very careful. In addition to their mental attack, they still have other ways to harm their enemies. If they aren't confident with their mental attack, then they certainly wouldn't use it. After all, the assassination techniques of the Succubi were also very formidable. Additionally, they weren't the kinds of people who would stir up trouble with existences that they wouldn't dare to provoke. Because of this, marrying a Succubus by withstanding their attack wasn't a very easy matter. A lot of Succubi married their husbands voluntarily instead of being compelled to marry their opponent. At the same time, it is also impossible to force a Succubus to marry someone. If the Succubus is forced, then she might commit suicide. But before she dies, she would curse the other party, leaving an unerasable mark on him. After that, the person would then be hounded by the other Succubi. One must also know that the Succubi held great

influence in the Demon Realm, a lot of them married very powerful people in the hierarchy of power and influence. Moreover, their unreasonable passion was also quite known. Once one person get married to a Succubus, they would no doubt be held as someone worth respect. And when their husbands die, Succubi wouldn't even hesitate to kill themselves. Because of this, everyone in the Demon Realm wanted to have a Succubus as their wife. Not only are the Succubi proficient in assassination, their mental power would also increase after being married. And most importantly, all Succubi are very beautiful. They are the most ideal wives in the Demon Realm."

This gave Zhao Hai a headache, then he asked, "What if I just refuse to marry her after I break her mental attack?"

Cai'er shook her head, "That would not be a good idea. The temperament of the Succubus shouldn't be underestimated. If you chose to not marry her, then she would kill herself in front of you, marking you with the unremovable curse as well."

Zhao Hai felt his head get more painful, he didn't think that he would meet such a hard to deal enemy. If the Succubus were to discover that he had escaped from her attack, what reaction would she have?

After thinking about this point, Zhao Hai couldn't help but gain hope, he turned to Cai'er and said, "Cai'er, I'm not from the Demon Realm. Then wouldn't she refrain from marrying me?"

Cai'er shook her head and said, "That is impossible, Young Master. It didn't matter what race you are, as long as you break a Succubus' attack, then she would marry you. It didn't matter if you aren't a Demon, even if you are a magic beast, she would still marry you."

When Zhao Hai heard this, he couldn't help but stare. He hadn't heard of a race as terrifying as this. They were completely not in line with common sense. How could all of these be possible?

Zhao Hai was thinking of methods to make the Succubus believe that he was still under her attack. He wanted to get out of this trouble, marriage wasn't an easy thing to decide on.

At this time, Cai'er actually chuckled and said, "Congratulations, Young Master. You just gained another wife. The Succubus just discovered that you had freed yourself from her attack."

Upon hearing Cai'er, Zhao Hai's mouth couldn't help but twitch. Then he looked up at the Succubus who had also opened her eyes. She was currently looking at Zhao Hai, her wheat colored cheeks seemed to have developed a blush.

One couldn't deny how beautiful this Succubus was, especially now where she was being timid and shy. But after thinking about their race's peculiar rule, Zhao Hai couldn't help but force a smile.

When the Succubus saw Zhao Hai's expression, her face couldn't help but get redder. She shook her head and then fixed her hair before she sternly looked at Zhao Hai and said, "From what I can hear during your conversation with the Flower Devil, you should be knowledgeable about the Demon Realm. Do you know what I am?"

Zhao Hai wanted to say that he didn't know. But when he saw the Succubus' expression, he couldn't help but nod. On the other hand, Tywin and the others had just recovered. All of them couldn't help but freeze when they saw the beautiful woman in front of them.

When the Succubus saw Zhao Hai nod, she couldn't help but relax. Then she looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Then do you know about the rule of our Succubus race?"

Zhao Hai had no choice but to bitterly nod. He didn't know if it was an illusion or not, but he can feel that the other party can ascertain whether he was speaking the truth or not. He was afraid that once the Succubus discovered that he lied, then she might kill herself immediately.

If it was an ordinary enemy who killed themselves, then Zhao Hai wouldn't even bat an eye. But after Cai'er told him about the custom of the Succubus race, he couldn't afford having this Succubus kill herself. Therefore, he had no choice but to bitterly smile at this time.

The Succubus looked at Zhao Hai and said, "So you are aware. Then from today on, I shall be your wife."

Zhao Hai forced a smile and said, "But first you should know that I already have several wives. And I love them very much."

The Succubus actually coldly snorted and said, "I don't mind."

Zhao Hai was left with nothing to say. He didn't think that the other party would give such a nonchalant reply. At this point, Tywin and the others couldn't make sense of what just happened. This woman in front of them seem to be an enemy, but now she has become Zhao Hai's wife. They didn't know if they should prevent her approach or just stay there. All of them felt that they had gone stupid from all that just happened.

Chapter 689 – The Weakness of the Undead

In the end, Tywin and the others decided to refrain from moving. This was because even Zhao Hai himself didn't make a move. They decided that it wouldn't be good if they were to make any unnecessary actions.

Zhao Hai looked at the Succubus that stood right beside him in the Bone Dragon. Then he said, "You have to think carefully, I am the focal point of the Ark Continent alliance, the first one to go up against the Demon Realm. If you really want to marry me, then you would be enemies with your own people, every Demon, and all of the Demon realm."

The Succubus looked at Zhao Hai and coldly snorted, "If you must kill all the Demons, then I would even help you sharpen your blade."

Zhao Hai gave a short hmph, however, he didn't say anything, he knew that it wasn't the time to talk too much at this point. So he just asked, "Are there any more Demons ahead? And why are you here? Isn't the Blood Void supposed to be indestructible?"

The Succubus looked at Zhao Hai and said, "We are here to guard the void formation. Although the Blood Void can still activate after being destroyed, it would still be much better if it operates in its full potential. There aren't a lot of people here, aside from the Flower Devil, Flame Demon, Me, and the dark beasts and undead, there aren't other people. However, there are ten Demons in the formation itself. If you go forward, the undead and dark beasts would go all out in stopping you. Ten of those dark beasts and undead are 9th ranks, the others are all 8th ranks. They are tasked to delay you as much as possible from destroying the void formation. However, I think you're not here to destroy the formation. Otherwise, you would have destroyed the blood formation back then."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly as he nodded and said, “Your right, I didn’t want to destroy the Blood Void. Instead, I’d rather wait for it to finish and get more preparation time that way. After all, there aren’t very much difference between launching now and launching later. Right, I still don’t know your name.”

The Succubus looked at Zhao Hai and said, “I’m called Berry. If you destroy the Blood Void ahead of time, the power of the rift would be reduced by a tenth of the original.” Berry’s voice had become mellower compared to before, her cold disposition seems to have vanished.

But Zhao Hai didn’t pay much attention to it now. He was currently pondering about what a tenth of a difference can do. Will he have to destroy the formation now?

In the end, Zhao Hai decided to refrain from destroying it. Once he attacked the Blood Void, then it would immediately start. However, Demon City was still unprepared. Although a tenth couldn’t be underestimated, Zhao Hai deemed it to be negligible in when compared to the time for preparation.

Even if the rift were to be reduced, the sheer size of the Blood Void rift would still be quite large. A difference between a million demons and 900 thousand Demons seemed to be insignificant in the long term.

Berry looked at Zhao Hai and said, “You really don’t want to destroy the Blood Void?”

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “Destroying it is useless. This time, I only came to eradicate all dark beasts and undead in the abyss. I want to prevent them from being an addition to the Demon army. What can a tenth of a difference really do to us? What significant difference would there be between a million Demons and 900 thousand Demons?”

Berry’s eyes flashed while she looked at Zhao Hai, then she sighed and said, “You really don’t understand the Demons. They

had been waiting for that day, for many years. For you, 1 million and 900 thousand might not have much of a difference since you are the enemy. However, for 100 thousand Demons to see the Ark Continent in advance is a very big factor for the Demons. People would fight to the death even for just a spot of being able to see the Ark Continent a day ahead.”

Zhao Hai can understand what Berry meant. If one were to tell people who lived in darkness that they can see the sunlight, then they would be extremely desperate in order to be the first one in the line. Between Zhao Hai and the Demons, the significance of a tenth was completely different.

Zhao Hai sighed, then he didn't speak anymore. He urged the Bone Dragon to go forward. He wanted to complete his original plan of coming here, eliminating all the dark beasts as well as the undead.

Just as Berry said, Zhao Hai didn't meet any significant resistance as he went forward. All that they had come across were more dark beasts and undead.

Zhao Hai relaxed, then he turned to Berry and said, “You have become quite close to me back then, why haven't you used your assassination techniques and went for a mental attack instead?”

When Berry heard Zhao Hai, her face couldn't help but turn red, “I was already near you when you were fighting with the Flame Devil. However, I knew that our assassination techniques would alarm the Bone Dragon before I arrive. Therefore, I decided to trap you here using my mental attack until the Blood Void activates.”

Zhao Hai nodded, he knew that since Berry was aware of his conversation with the Flower Devil, then she should've been present when he fought the Flame Demon. However, the two fights had shown Berry how strong he was. Therefore, Berry had no choice but use their mental attack. However, she didn't expect that she would lose.

Zhao Hai stopped asking about this matter. He turned his gaze towards the distance and said, “They should be coming about now.” Zhao Hai was referring to those ten 9th ranks.

As expected, just as Zhao Hai said that, ten black spots appeared in the distance. The black spots slowly grew as it approached Zhao Hai. Among them were eight dark beasts and two undead creatures who were emitting a strong aura.

The dark beasts are just special magic beasts, so they didn’t get too much out of Zhao Hai’s attention. On the other hand, the undead made Zhao Hai intrigued. He didn’t expect that the undead would be able to reach 9th rank naturally. This was the first time that he saw a true 9th rank undead.

The two undead had human forms. Their bodies were equipped with worn out battle armor. They were also holding damaged great swords. Their image conforms to what Zhao Hai expected 9th rank undead would be.

However, these two undead creatures gave Zhao Hai a peculiar feeling. Zhao Hai felt that he was facing actual people instead of undead. Compared to what he felt with the Space’s 9th rank undead, these two undead had a more formidable aura.

Zhao Hai curiously looked at the two 9th rank undead and said, “Are you naturally evolved undead? Why would you listen to the words of the Demons?”

“Demon consciousness. Unsurpassed honor! Kill!” Zhao Hai thought that the opposite party wouldn’t reply. He really didn’t expect that they would say anything, even in broken sentences.

Zhao Hai waved his hand as he commanded the undead on the ground to fly up. Then he had this group of undead form a small cube formation in front of Zhao Hai. After that, he commanded them to fight the 10 9th ranks.

Zhao Hai didn’t care much about these undead, he wanted to see

how these 9th rank dark beasts and undead from the Demon Realm fight. From Zhao Hai's calculation, aside from the 9th ranks, there should be about 1 million undead as well as about 2 million dark beasts.

However, he didn't kill the 8th rank dark beasts this time, all of them were absorbed into the Space. Additionally, the 8th rank undead were also taken into the Space, changing them into Zhao Hai's own undead army.

Before long, the 10 9th ranks had managed to eliminate about a hundred of Zhao Hai's own 9th rank undead. But instead of being angry, Zhao Hai was actually glad. He discovered that these naturally formed 9th rank undead seemed to be much more powerful compared to the 9th ranks that were produced by the Space.

This made Zhao Hai puzzled at first, but he quickly thought of the reason. One was artificially promoted by the Space while the other was made after innumerable years of existence. In these years, the undead should have encountered a lot of battles, making its fighting experience constantly improve. It seems like battle experience was more important to these undead than what Zhao Hai originally thought.

Although the undead of the Space were similarly 9th rank, they were still far behind those who were forged through constant battle. Because of this lack of experience, the Space's undead were unable to utilize all of their strength. It was like having powerlifter fight, he might be strong, but it was extremely possible that he would lose against a similarly strong but experienced fighter.

However, there was no way for Zhao Hai to have an immediate solution to this problem. The undead in the Space were truly lacking in genuine battle experience. Moreover, before becoming 9th ranks, most of them had strengths that were incomparably low. This caused a disparity in their thoughts and actual strength. The only solution that Zhao Hai thought of was to forge them

through constant battle during the war. Only when they can accumulate experience would they be able to perfectly control their strength.[1]

Now that the Demons were on their way and the Divine Race not far behind, huge battles would surely happen in the future. Zhao Hai would use this opportunity to have his undead acquire ample experience. That way, Zhao Hai can then command an invincible army. Whether it be the Demons or the Divine Race, Zhao Hai would not be afraid anymore. He would even march into the Demon Realm and the Divine Realm in order to eliminate future problems!

Chapter 690 – Miscalculation of Time

It didn't take too long before the fight finished. Although Zhao Hai's undead suffered when faced with the same 9th rank power, they were completely dominating those who are less ranked. After all, 8th rank and 9th rank were totally different from each other.

After all the dark beasts and undead have been cleaned up, Zhao Hai continued to fly ahead. And before long, they arrived at a valley inside the Demonic Abyss.

At the valley, the first thing that Zhao Hai noticed was the spatial rift. Coming out from the rift were clumps of black gases. Fortunately, this rift wasn't big, it was only less than a meter long and a half meter wide. Aside from small people, no bigger creatures can emerge at this time.

With the spatial rift as the center, a huge magic formation was erected, shooting out white radiance now and then. This was the void formation of the Blood Void.

Zhao Hai inspected the spatial crack, he wanted to see how different this rift was compared to the Space's own. After looking at it for some time, Zhao Hai couldn't see much of a difference. It was the same floating hole, like a hole in a transparent canvas.

Behind this rift was nothingness, one couldn't see anything at all. Even light seems to get swallowed by it.

Upon looking further, Zhao Hai noticed that the rift was surrounded by ten Vile Demons.[1]

Zhao Hai was no stranger to Vile Demons, he looked at the ten of them and smiled, "Vile Demons enemies, you can rest assured that I am not here to destroy your formation. However, when you Demons arrive, be sure that I shall be there waiting."

Zhao Hai's attitude shocked the Vile Demons. They were puzzled at Zhao Hai, they couldn't understand what Zhao Hai meant.

Zhao Hai looked at them and smiled, “There’s no need to be anxious. Usually, I call people with a different race than me, friends or brothers. However, you Demons wanted to invade my Ark Continent, so I had no choice but to call you enemies. But I am indeed sincere in not attacking the Blood Void. I know that there’s no way to stop the Blood Void, and I also don’t want it to activate ahead of time. Therefore, I shall be leaving you here and I will just wait for you in the surface.”

The Vile Demons stared blankly at Zhao Hai, then after some time, one of them said, “No matter who you are, you are worthy of our respect. We will defeat you in the battlefield, we’ll make you aware of how strong the Demon Realm is.”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly, he already knew that although these Demons were battle freaks, they were also people who respected brave warriors. To be clear, they respect brave warriors, not strong experts.

Brave Warriors and Experts have their distinction. A brave warrior isn’t necessarily a strong expert. When faced with an enemy much stronger than yourself but still are willing to fight, then you are a brave warrior. These kinds of people were very well respected by the Demons. For this respect, the Demons would defeat you in an upright manner, there would be no tricks involved.

Berry was also quite surprised at Zhao Hai. She discovered that Zhao Hai actually understood the Demon Realm fully. This made her confused, she didn’t understand how a Human was able to know about the Demon Realm. This was too inconceivable. The Humans haven’t even entered the Demon Realm.

At this time, the head Demon turned to Berry and said, “Berry, why are you together with him? Do you want to betray the Demon Realm?”

Berry looked at the Vile Demon and said, “I didn’t betray the

Demon Realm. I am just following the customs of my Succubus Clan. This person managed to break free from my mental attack. Therefore, according to the rule, I shall have to marry this person.”

When the Vile Demon heard Berry, he couldn't help but gawk. Of course, the Vile Demon was aware about which rule Berry was talking about. He just didn't think that Zhao Hai would survive Berry's attack.

One must know that the Succubi held the most powerful mental attacks in the Demon Realm. Additionally, Berry is a 9th rank Succubus, her mental power was very well known in the Demon Realm. The Vile Demon didn't think that she would actually lose to a Human.

The ten Demons looked at Zhao Hai with envy, then their leader said, “Congratulations, brave Human warrior. You actually managed to get yourself a Succubus as a wife. Human, we shall not attack you as well. Our fight might possibly destroy the Blood Void. You can leave now. Our Demon Army shall fairly defeat you in Demon City.”

Zhao Hai looked at the ten Demons, he couldn't help but develop a slight appreciation towards them. However, it was a pity that they are his enemies. Zhao Hai was surprised when the Vile Demon said that the Blood Void might get destroyed if they decided to fight. It seemed like nobody wanted to activate the spatial rift ahead of time.

Zhao Hai looked at the eyes of the Vile Demons, then he nodded and said, “Alright, then I shall be waiting for you in Demon City. Farewell.” Then Zhao Hai commanded the Bone Dragon to fly out of the Demonic Abyss. The ten Vile Demons stayed true to their promise, they didn't attack Zhao Hai.

Compared to when he entered, Zhao Hai's speed of advancement was quite faster. Zhao Hai had calculated that after entering the

Demonic Abyss and undergoing battles inside, two days had already passed by. Zhao Hai reckoned that it would only take them half a day to come out.

With this rate, Zhao Hai had already used up four days. In three days, the spatial rift would open and the Demon Race would arrive.

Zhao Hai stood straight on top of the Bone Dragon as he muttered, “Three days, three days.”

Berry looked puzzled at Zhao Hai as she said, “Three days? Are you expecting the Blood Void to activate in three days? That’s not right, from what I can remember, there is only one day left before the Blood Void activates.”

Zhao Hai stared, he quickly turned his head to Berry as words came flooding out of his mouth, “One day? How could it be one day? Doesn’t the Blood Void activate after seven days?”

Berry nodded, “Right, it takes seven days. The countdown starts the moment the blood formation gets moistened by blood. From what I can remember, five days have already passed since then. After a bit more than a day, the Blood Void would activate.”

Zhao Hai couldn’t help but from upon hearing Berry. He kept thinking about why Berry would say that only a day was left. Did he go wrong somewhere?

Suddenly, Zhao Hai thought about where he slipped. He had missed the timing of the blood formation. He miscalculated how long the formation had been running before he arrived at Accra Mountain. The formation started the moment Zhao Hai began killing the beasts in the mountain, not when he discovered the formation.

If Zhao Hai took that thought into account, then the Blood Void really only had one day left to activate. In a day’s time, the Demons would be coming out of the spatial rift.

Zhao Hai regretfully tapped his own head. He didn’t think that

he would miscalculate this matter. This shouldn't be happening, it was his fault. He immediately had the Bone Dragon pick up its speed to return to Demon City as soon as possible. Upon reaching the city, Zhao Hai was met with the gazes of the Adventurers and Mercenaries. All of them looked at Tywin and the others in envy, they didn't think that the Gan Family would be able to establish a relationship with Zhao Hai in a short period of time.

Zhao Hai wasn't in the mood to act low-key right now as he flew directly towards the General's residence. Upon reaching the front door, Zhao Hai didn't hesitate to enter the room.

The guard in front of the General's residence naturally didn't dare to block Zhao Hai. Nobody dared to stop him. After all, Zhao Hai had the highest status here in Demon City. The whole city depended on Zhao Hai to defend against the Demons.

Zhao Hai proceeded to head towards Besmir's room. At this moment, Besmir was looking at the map. When he heard footsteps and looked up, he didn't imagine to see Zhao Hai. So he quickly straightened himself up and said, "Mister, how did your expedition go? The layout of Demon City had already been set up. We're just waiting for Mister's undead to settle in."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Alright, as long as the General has adjusted, then I can feel relief. However, I had made a miscalculation this time. The Demons will be arriving much earlier than we thought. I'm afraid our current layout wouldn't be good. But since you have already settled in, you can stay put. There's no need to send word back to the mainland, I shall be taking care of it."

Besmir stared, then his expression changed as he immediately asked, "Really? Mister, what happened?"

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, "Now's not the time to explain. I shall be handing the city over to you. The outside matters would be taken care of by me. I'll be sending word to the

major Empires and Races of the continent. As long as you prepare yourselves, then you are good.”

Besmir nodded, he understood that it really wasn't the time to be asking. He said, “Alright, then mister can rest assured, the city has already prepared. All the logistics and commands have already been given.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Then that's good. I'll be leaving first, I still need to inform the mainland.” Then Zhao Hai hastily left the General's residence and returned to his own.

After arriving inside the Gan Family's residence, Zhao Hai released a group of undead and turned to Tywin and said, “These are the undead that we have acquired in the Demonic Abyss. I also took the effort of strengthening them. You can take them under your command. Right, how many undead can you currently control?”

Zhao Hai didn't know how much undead a regular 9th rank can control. Therefore, he had no choice but to ask. Tywin gave Zhao Hai a bow and said, “Answering the Young Master. Although we had become 9th ranks, we still aren't accustomed to our new strength. So at this moment, each of us can only control about ten thousand undead. When we get fully adapted, then we can control 20 thousand undead each.”

Chapter 691 – Preparation

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Even if that’s not a lot, it isn’t little either. Alright, then we’ll head outside the city and have you control these undead. After everyone subdues enough undead, I shall be heading to do other matters.”

Naturally, Tywin and the others didn’t oppose to this. After all, this was very good for them. They never thought that Zhao Hai would harm them anyway. At this point, they have become true followers of Zhao Hai. If Zhao Hai wanted to harm them, then he wouldn’t have made them 9th ranks. Zhao Hai had their complete trust.

Zhao Hai quickly led the group outside Demon City. Then he released large quantities of undead. Among these undead were the ones they obtained from the Demonic Abyss, there were both human-shaped and beast-shaped undead, but this didn’t matter for Dark Mages. Naturally, although the undead have been subdued, Zhao Hai can still override the commands of the Gan Family Dark Mages. As far as Zhao Hai knew, he was just commanding the undead to follow the Gan Family’s orders.

Since Zhao Hai ordered them, the transition of control for the undead came very smoothly. Otherwise, Tywin and the others wouldn’t have done it. After all, the undead were 9th ranks as well.

It didn’t take long before the undead were controlled. Zhao Hai looked at Tywin and said, “You are already quite familiar with the surroundings here. So I’ll leave the deployment of the undead to you. We should be done preparing before the Demons arrive tomorrow. I’ll be returning to the city in order to handle other matters.”

Tywin immediately replied, “Young Master, let me go back with you. I am very familiar with Demon City. I can assist you with the minute things, saving you the trouble of doing them.”

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “You stay here. I’m just going back to your residence to take a rest, I’ll come back here later. You don’t need to worry about me.”

Tywin didn’t say anything more, he just nodded. After that, Zhao Hai returned to the city and then entered the Gan Family’s residence. Berry was still right by him.

When Zhao Hai entered the Gan Family’s residence, he turned to Berry and said, “Berry, if you are really determined to be with me, then I will lead to see my wives now. I shall not be impartial in treating you. I just hope that you can live together with them harmoniously. Can you do that?”

Berry looked at Zhao Hai and said, “You are the man that I chose. Naturally, I will listen to your words.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Alright, then I shall show you my biggest secret.” Then along with Berry, Zhao Hai’s body flashed as he entered the Space.

Berry couldn’t help but stare blankly at the scenery in the Space. Although the Demons had always thought about how beautiful the Ark Continent was, Berry still lived in the Demon Realm for all of her life. She had also seen Demon City, however, since the place was made in order to survey the Demonic Abyss, there wasn’t much to see. On the other hand, the scenery inside the Space was very beautiful, even in the Ark Continent’s standards. For someone who lived in the Demon Realm since birth, it wasn’t a wonder for Berry to be enthralled by the Space’s scenery.

At this time, the door of the villa opened as Laura and the others walked out. The women had already learned about the Succubus clan from Cai’er. To be honest, they were somewhat jealous. However, they weren’t stingy, they didn’t wish misfortune on this new arrival. Because of this, they had decided to treat Berry well.

Actually, Laura and the others’ reaction was something that Zhao Hai used to be surprised at. Zhao Hai had read a lot of novels back

on Earth. And in all of those novels, women were always jealous whenever a new female arrives. However, it seems like Laura and the others didn't seem to look jealous. This made Zhao Hai unable to understand what they were thinking.

Later on, Zhao Hai asked Laura why they weren't jealous. But he was just met with strange looks from Laura and the others. Then Zhao Hai got his answer; in the continent, even a man with little skill would have more than one wife. In fact, if they were to think about it, with Zhao Hai's status, his number of wives was actually very small.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile bitterly upon hearing this response. He had been stuck with his Earth mentality and was still unable to adapt to the Ark Continent. On Earth, everyone was unanimously leaning towards monogamy. On the other hand, in Ark Continent, it was simply normal for a man to have several wives.

Because of this, Zhao Hai wasn't surprised when he saw his wives' current response. He nodded to Laura and the others and then turned to Berry, "Berry, these are my wives, Laura, Megan, Meg, Lizzy, and Ni'er. You must go along with them later on. You'll be living with them from now on too. They will also introduce to you everything that is here."

Berry nodded, although she still had her cold expression, Zhao Hai can see that she had a look of dependence in her eyes.

Zhao Hai understood that this was a natural reaction from Berry. She has been living alone in the Demon Realm all her life. In this new environment, she couldn't help but do her best to adapt. And now that she had Zhao Hai as her husband, it wasn't strange for her to depend on him.

Zhao Hai smiled and Berry and said, "There's no need to be worried here. This is my Space, as long as I don't give my permission, nobody would be able to come here. Rest assured,

there will be no problems here.”

Berry nodded, then Laura went towards her and said, “Berry, don’t worry, Brother Hai is a good person. Later on, we’ll be sisters living together. Come with me, I shall tell you everything there is in this mysterious Space.” Then she pulled Berry over towards the Villa.

Berry didn’t react too much as she followed Laura towards the villa. However, when they reached the entrance, Berry couldn’t help but stop. She looked at the villa and couldn’t help but change her expression, she turned to Zhao Hai and said, “Brother Hai, what’s this all about?”[1]

Zhao Hai stared, then he said, “What? Is there something wrong?”

Berry pointed towards the seven-colored flower that covered the entirety of the villa, her finger trembling while doing so. When Zhao Hai saw her pointing towards the seven-colored flower, he understood what she meant. Zhao Hai couldn’t help but chuckle as he said, “Oh, you mean Cai’er? You should be familiar with this plant, right?”

Berry nodded and said, “I’m quite familiar with it, however, why is the Holy Flower growing here? This flower only grows in the Demon Realm, how can it appear in this place?”

Zhao Hai faintly smiled and said, “Cai’er, come out and see Berry. Introduce yourself” Then Zhao Hai felt wings lightly flapping right by his face as Cai’er appeared. “Young Master, you always make me do a lot of things. I’m quite busy, you know? Unlike you who are living a relaxed life every day.”

Zhao Hai smiled and then turned to Berry and said, “Berry, this is Cai’er, the flower sprite of the seven-colored flower. She is also the main body of the seven-colored flower that you have been seeing in the Demon Realm.”

Berry stared at Cai'er as Cai'er looked back. Then Cai'er smiled and said, "What? Shocked, little Succubus? In your Demon Realm, you should have spotted my flowers everywhere. Hehe. Small Succubus, your kind had always underestimated my existence. I'll let you know that I am the longest living being in the Demon Realm, and also the most influential. All of the seven-colored flower that you had seen are all my branches." [2]

Berry was blankly staring as she listened to Cai'er's words. After some time, she recovered and turned to Zhao Haim, "Brother Hai, is this true?"

Zhao Hai nodded and then smiled, "It's true. The reason I know about the Demon Realm was because of Cai'er. Alright, you'll find out about more things as you explore the Space later on. Let's enter the living room for now, we still have some things to discuss." Then the group entered the villa.

Upon entering the villa, Zhao Hai immediately cycled through his messenger fishes as he gave the various Patriarchs and Monarchs of the continent a message, informing them that the war would come earlier than they expected. At the same time, Zhao Hai also gave the Buddha Emperor instructions to prepare his citizens to migrate. Also, Zhao Hai ordered Evan and Ruyen to reinforce the border between the Buddha and Lyon Empire while allowing passage for the Buddha Empire refugees as well as to take care of them properly.

Of course, this wasn't an easy thing for an Empire to do. But fortunately, Zhao Hai already made ample preparations. At this time, the Buddha Empire's migration towards the Lyon Empire was already well organized.

One shouldn't underestimate this mass migration. There were a lot of matters involved in such a movement. Especially in terms of food and lodging for the refugees.

Fortunately, Zhao Hai has the Space, supplying all of the much

needed grain. As for lodging, the Lyon Empire doesn't lack it. This made the job twice as efficient with half of the effort.

Although the Buddha Emperor wasn't willing to evacuate his entire Empire, he also understood that the Demons couldn't be easily dealt with. If he insisted for his people to stay, then the Demons would only kill them. Therefore, he had no choice but to agree to Zhao Hai's plan.

At the same time, the Dwarves and the Elves had prepared themselves. Zhao Hai shifted all of the valuable Dwarf materials over to the Black Wasteland. However, the Dwarves weren't planning to fully evacuate out of their mountain. They wanted to use the mountain to ambush the Demons. Naturally, those who stayed in the mountain were the Dwarven Warriors. The women and children were already sent to the Black Wasteland. There was no other way, after all, the Dwarves were inside the Buddha Empire, which was quite close to the Demonic Abyss.

The Elves did the same, those who had no fighting power were all sent to the Black Wasteland while the Elven Warriors stayed. They were prepared to use the forest in order to combat the Demon Race.

Zhao Hai was quite assured when it came to these two races. Their fighting powers weren't weak, and additionally, they had terrain advantage, giving them huge benefits during the war. Zhao Hai wasn't worried about them.

On the other hand, there were currently a lot of people in the Black Wasteland. It would take a long time for these people to be settled down. Fortunately, Zhao Hai has the Space. He can just easily transport Beastmen tents for them to live in, allowing the construction of houses to slowly proceed.

Chapter 692 – Demon Dragon King

Zhao Hai was currently standing outside Demon City. Behind him was the city's walls and in front of him was an army of undead. The undead looked like statues as they stood, unmoving.

Zhao Hai was currently on the back of the Bone Dragon along with Tywin. The undead on the field were all controlled by the Gan Family. Zhao Hai's undead were yet to be released.

It has been a day since Zhao Hai communicated with the various Patriarchs and Monarchs of the continent. In the past day, Zhao Hai has been inside the Space, continuously talking to his messenger fishes, coordinating with the everyone and deploying various materials.

It was fortunate that Zhao Hai was able to make the Monarchs and Patriarchs listen to his instructions. These people also understood that if they didn't follow through, then they would get eliminated by the Demons sooner or later. Therefore, they decided to fully cooperate in this huge operation.

Also, this alliance needed a leader. And since Zhao Hai held special status in all of these groups, he became the de facto leader. Because of his Space, Zhao Hai was able to move massive resources around, giving him the power to dictate when and where people needed to be. This made everyone consult Zhao Hai whenever an important decision needs to be made. At the same time, this also fulfilled the Dwarves' prophecy, King of Kings.

Zhao Hai didn't care much about these. To be honest, with regards to resources, he really didn't have too much of a problem about it. At this point, he had a lot of things in his hand. Adding that to the reserves of the Empires, then Zhao Hai found himself unable to fathom the exact number. On the other hand, Laura and Cai'er were already crunching the numbers as well as allocating everything in behalf of Zhao Hai. At the same time, Megan and

Lizzy were conserving their strengths for the upcoming fight with the Demon Race.

On the contrary, Berry was not busy at all. She is currently working with Lizzy on how to command in battle while also familiarizing herself with the situation inside the Space.

The more Berry understood about Zhao Hai's space, the more she found it to be mysterious. She already has a few ideas in her mind, however, she didn't tell it to Zhao Hai at this time.

Zhao Hai was currently waiting in Demon City for the Blood Void's activation. From what he heard while talking to Berry, the void formation would should be starting quite soon. At this moment, Zhao Hai wanted to see what it looks like when the formation starts.

Tywin and the others were also by Zhao Hai's side. Their expression of anxiety couldn't be hidden as they gazed towards the Demonic Abyss. They knew that the fight would start soon, they couldn't help but feel anxious.

Zhao Hai turned his head towards the city walls and looked at the soldiers, they were anxious as well. Zhao Hai couldn't help but sigh, although the war with the Demons happened tens of thousands of years ago, legends about the Demons were still prevalent in Human societies. It was told that Demons were overbearing, lusted for blood, and powerful. All of these descriptions had slowly crept up on these soldier's minds, making them very nervous.

However, Zhao Hai couldn't do anything much but wait. Zhao Hai sighed before sitting on the Bone Dragon's head. Then he took out a small table, a bottle of wine, and a wine glass as he continued on with his thoughts.

When the soldiers on the walls saw Zhao Hai's action, they couldn't help but stare. Then their expression loosened. In their minds, Zhao Hai had already become the main pillar of support.

Zhao Hai's calmness had affected them as well, making the pressure in their minds slowly ease up.

At this moment, a very fierce vibration suddenly came from the Demonic Abyss. This vibration shook the terrain, making Demon City's structures sway.

Zhao Hai seems to have not noticed this as he drank the wine in his glass and muttered, "You've finally come. I had been waiting for half of the day."

Just as Zhao Hai said this, a more violent shaking happened, it was as strong as an earthquake. Then black fog started to come out of the abyss as it slowly covered the skies above it.

Zhao Hai looked at the black clouds as he smiled faintly and said, "Magnificent, good, very good." Then a fierce rumbling came out as a shockwave came out of the abyss, eradicating everything around it, may it be stone, soil, or plants, turning all of them into powder instantly.

With an intention, Zhao Hai released countless amounts of undead. When the undead appeared, they immediately formed a large green shield in their bodies, protecting themselves as well as those behind them from the shockwave. Demon City as well as the base of operations outside became unaffected by the destructive wave.

And just as Zhao Hai drank from his wine glass, mushroom clouds suddenly came out of the Demonic Abyss!

Zhao Hai can only imagine one thing upon seeing these mushroom clouds, it was an image of a nuclear explosion. He didn't think that the Blood Void would cause explosions strong enough to cause mushroom clouds to appear.

Zhao Hai couldn't help but mutter, "Is this an illusion? It must be, aren't the Demons afraid of blowing themselves up?"

Although Tywin and the others were right by Zhao Hai's side,

they still didn't hear what Zhao Hai just said. They were too enthralled by the mushroom clouds in front of them.

At this time, the Demonic Abyss suddenly changed. A small whirlpool started to appear in the middle of the mushroom clouds. Then this whirlpool continued to grow bigger and bigger as it started to revolve, absorbing all of the dark clouds before all of it vanished.

When the dark fog completely disappeared, Zhao Hai couldn't help but breathe in some cold air. A massive change just happened in the Demonic Abyss. The abyss had become wider and more spacious. At the bottom of the abyss was a huge crack that was suspended half a meter above the ground. At the same time, groups upon groups of Demons slowly appeared from it, rows upon rows of Demonic beings from the Demon Realm.

After the changes in the Demonic Abyss, it has now become a wide flatland. The surrounding cliffs had completely vanished. With how large the flatland was, it was more proper to call it a plain.

It was an incomparably huge plain, and in the middle of it was a huge spatial rift. At the scale of this plain, an army of tens of millions would fit to be stationed here.

Zhao Hai didn't expect that the effects of the Blood Void would be this significant. One must know that Zhao Hai took two days to fly towards the rift, all of that distance has been affected by the Blood Void. This showed how powerful the formation was.

However, the thing that surprised Zhao Hai the most was the fact that the Demons didn't immediately attack upon coming out of the spatial rift. Instead, they started to build their base of operations on the flatland right beside the rift.

From the looks of it, it seems like they aren't just building a camp. They were constructing a city. After seeing this development, Zhao Hai's expression couldn't help but turn

gloomy.

If the Demons just attacked them after coming out, then Zhao Hai didn't have anything to worry about. But now that they are constructing a city, this meant that they wanted to establish a base, intending to fight with the Humans for a long time. This wasn't what Zhao Hai wanted to see.

Zhao Hai smiled faintly as he collected his drinking set, then he turned to Tywin and said, "You wait here." When Tywin heard this, they immediately jumped down from the Bone Dragon and stayed in mid-air. Then Zhao Hai waved his hand as an innumerable amount of undead appeared. Zhao Hai gave a command, then the undead started to form into a cube before rushing towards the Demon invaders.

When the people on the walls saw what Zhao Hai did, they couldn't help but gasp. At the same time, the Demons also saw Zhao Hai's action. They immediately split into teams as some of them flew up to meet Zhao Hai's approaching undead army.

As the two forces came closer and closer, Zhao Hai discovered that the other party was composed of flying beasts as well as winged Demons. All of them had grotesque looks, but one could see that they had extraordinary strength.

The two forces stopped when they were about a hundred meters away from each other. Zhao Hai directed the Bone Dragon as he slowly got out of the cube formation. At the same time, a small group also went forward from the other party.

This group was composed of Vile Demons. All of them were protecting a carriage that was in the middle of their formation. What pulled this carriage wasn't actually a horse, but Dragons instead.

These Dragons were similar to those back in Accra Mountain. However, their bodies were pitch black as their scales flashed with the same metallic luster. They also have eyes that were red, leaving

those who looked at it with a very bad feeling.

The two teams stopped when they were ten meters away from each other. Zhao Hai inspected the carriage, the carriage was actually just the lower half of the structure. There was a throne with beast engravings right on top of the carriage. Sitting right on the throne was a Vile Demon.

Although there wasn't much difference to how this Vile Demon looked, one could still feel that he was more majestic than the others, just like how a alpha male lion looks like when it was just lying on the ground.

The Vile Demon was similarly inspecting Zhao Hai. Zhao Hai was wearing his Dark Mage Robe as he stood on the head of the Bone Dragon. In his hand was a blood red magic staff. Although his appearance was quite ordinary, his aura was telling a completely different thing. Zhao Hai's imposing aura wasn't any less than the Vile Demon himself.

The Vile Demon looked at Zhao Hai, then with his deep voice he said, "Are you Mister Zhao Hai?"

Zhao Hai couldn't help but stare, he didn't think that the other party would actually know about him. He smiled faintly and said, "Right, I am Zhao Hai. I didn't think that His Majesty, the Demon Realm's Northwestern Monarch, the Dragon Demon King actually knew of my name. This Zhao Hai has been disrespectful."

It was the turn of the Dragon Demon King to be surprised, he looked at Zhao Hai and said, "My Demon Race has been collecting information regarding the continent for tens of thousands of years. Mister Zhao Hai's quick rise to prominence naturally couldn't be ignored. Me knowing Mister's name isn't surprising. This one is just curious, Mister, how come you are completely well-informed of the things in my Demon Realm? I wonder if Mister can sate my curiosity?"

Chapter 693 – Fight

When Zhao Hai heard the Demon Dragon King, he couldn't help but smile faintly and said, "You Majesty, didn't your subordinates tell you? I just got the Succubus Berry as my wife."

Upon hearing Zhao Hai, the Demon Dragon King couldn't help but stare for a moment before he laughed and said, "This King forgot. Hahaha. To be honest, this King is quite envious of Mister Zhao Hai's luck. It's not easy to subdue a Succubus to become your wife. Mister is truly lucky."

Zhao Hai certainly would not tell the Demon Dragon King that it was Cai'er who told him all about the Demon Realm. To be honest, Zhao Hai was quite sympathetic towards these Demons. If they only chose to come peacefully, then Zhao Hai will not stop them. However, instead of doing things peacefully, they chose to do war. Although Zhao Hai disliked wars, he certainly wasn't afraid of it.

Because of this, Zhao Hai chose to lead an army to resist the Demons rather than have Cai'er deal with them. If Zhao Hai were to make Cai'er deal with the Demon Race, he could just make her withdraw all of her branches there. In time, the Demon Realm would possibly enter an extremely severe food crisis.

Zhao Hai didn't want to starve the entire Demon Realm, so he decided to just fight the Demons in a straightforward way. At the same time, he was also unwilling to expose Cai'er's identity since it may have a bad influence on her branches.

Zhao Hai looked at the Demon Dragon King and smiled, "Your Majesty has a Succubus as a wife as well, there's no reason for you to envy me. Right, Your Majesty came as a vanguard, there should be no need to build a city, right?"

The Demon Dragon King looked deeply into Zhao Hai and said, "Mister might know a lot about the Demon Realm, but this time you are mistaken. We decided to build this city so that we can have

our own base in the Ark Continent. No matter how much you natives would like us to go away, you would have no other choice but recognize the existence of our Demon Race.”

Zhao Hai shook his head as he smiled faintly and said, “We can actually recognize your presence, however, it seems like you don’t like us being here. To be honest, the Ark Continent is too small compared to the Demon Realm, all of you cannot just transfer over here. This made me wonder why you even wanted to wage war.”

When he heard Zhao Hai, the Demon Dragon King seemed to turn mad as he shouted, “Why we go to war? Why?! It’s because of lesser creatures being able to occupy such a beautiful land while we Demons get to experience such a hellish landscape. This land should belong to the Demon Race! Anyone who dared to stop us will die!”

Zhao Hai looked at the expression of the Demon King and sighed, he knew that talking would only get this far. He looked calmly at the Demon Dragon King and said, “Then it’s war!”

But before Zhao Hai gets to command his army, he gets interrupted by the Demon King who said, “Mister, wait. Do you really want to become an enemy to the Demon Race? Mister is a Dark Mage, your kind had always been suppressed in the Ark Continent. At the same time, your belief in the God of Darkness is no different to our faith for the Demon God. How about mister joins our side, and together we shall conquer the entire continent. With Mister’s strength, as long as you help us occupy the continent, then we would surely give you a very high rank.”

Zhao Hai stared at the Demon Dragon King, then after a moment he suddenly laughed, “I want to thank Your Majesty’s good intentions. However, this Zhao Hai already considers himself as a person of the Ark Continent. Although there are friction between the powers in the continent, all of us share the same resistance against being slaves or being exterminated. Even if the Demons or the Divine Race make out continent’s rivers turn red, we would

still continue to fight on until the very end!” Zhao Hai expressed his thoughts, as well as the conviction of the entire continent.

The Demon Dragon King looked at Zhao Hai, his expression turned ugly as he said, “Mister’s words truly enraged this King. Then from now on, the entire Demon Race and I shall be your mortal enemies!” Then the Demon Dragon King waved his hand as the Dragons that were pulling his carriage issued a loud roar. After that, the Demons around the carriage charged towards Zhao Hai. It seems like they wanted to eliminate him here and now.

Zhao Hai smiled faintly as he waved his hand. The Bone Dragon retreated back as the other undead pressed on forward, blocking every attack coming towards Zhao Hai.

The Demon Dragon King slowly turned back as well. In fights like these, the superiors would naturally refrain from engaging in the initial clash. It just didn’t conform to their status.

Before long, the undead and the Demons clashed, their strengths were unexpectedly the same. When the Demon Dragon King saw this, he couldn’t help but knit his eyebrows. Although they had collected a lot of information pertaining to Zhao Hai, it seems like they still underestimated him. The Demon King didn’t expect Zhao Hai to be this difficult to deal with.

There were also some races in the Demon Realm who were able to control the undead. This was because the Demon Realm was a very good environment for the evolution of undead. Therefore, this made the undead of the realm very strong. Making them one of the main battle forces of the Demon Realm.

Naturally, the undead couldn’t be the true battle army of the Demon Realm. Although undead could be controlled by races, there was only one race that can command them with great complexity, and it was the Demon Realm’s Lich Race.

The Lich Race was very special in that they were extremely low in population. Moreover, they were quite mysterious. However,

they were just the Demon Realm's version of the true Lich Race.

The True Lich race were legendary beings of the underworld. They were creatures that only existed in soul form and couldn't be harmed by physical attacks. All of them were innately talented in Dark Magic. In the past, there was a Dark Mage that was able to summon a true Lich. That Lich had wisdom that was no lesser than a Human. At the same time, it was also not willing to be under the control of a Human. This caused a backlash on its summoner. This was also the time where people came to know of their existence.

On the other hand, the Demon Realm's Lich Race was actually just a type of Demon that possess half of a soul form. This meant that they were still susceptible to material attacks. However, their bodies still had a strange ability of going ethereal when an attack arrives, greatly minimizing the damage done to it. This ethereal form can only be achieved for a short time, and cannot be used continuously as well. Therefore, they were called the Demon Realm's Lich Race.

The fighting strength of a Lich is no worse than a Vile Demon. The only reason why they weren't rulers of the Demon Realm was because of their low population. It was estimated that the entire Demon Realm only had around ten thousand Lich.

The entire Demon Realm was so big, and for the number of Lich to only be ten thousand was something that baffled a lot of people. However, since each one of them were very strong, nobody dared to annoy them. Even the Vile Demons would act polite towards these beings. The Lich were able to control a large amount of undead. As to how much, nobody really knew. What they only knew was that a extremely formidable Lich appeared a long time ago. That Lich was able to control an astonishing 1 million undead and controlled them in order to annoy the Vile Demons. It was precisely because of its actions that the Vile Demons decided to sent troops in order to deal with the Lich.

In order to kill this Lich, the Vile Demons sent an army of 3

million. In the end, of the 3 million, only 850 thousand managed to survive. At the same time, the battle also made the Vile Demons lose 20 9th rank experts. This battle was a testament of how powerful the Lich were.

And while the Vile Demons were surrounding this Lich, they were also able to witness the prowess of the Lich's undead. The undead were quite strong, majority of them had 7th to 8th rank strength. Additionally, these undead were unafraid to die in battle. This fearlessness was something that even the Vile Demons were unable to emulate. This event made the Lich Race untouchables in the Demon Realm.

In the beginning, the Demon Dragon King thought that the Demon Realm made the most powerful undead. After all, the constant battle in the Realm was the best catalyst in creating formidable undead. However, the Demon Dragon King eventually found fault in this belief. Zhao Hai's undead were actually more formidable than the undead in the Demon Realm. They even managed to achieve 9th rank strength.

One must know that the Demons were beings that grew up in battle, this gave them formidable fighting power. Even if they were still 8th ranks, each Demon can easily exhibit 9th rank strength. 8th ranks of the Ark Continent were completely unable to contend with 9th rank Demons.

This time, since the Demon Dragon King acted as the vanguard of the Demon Realm, he was tasked with building the city in order to establish a foothold for the Demon Race. Because of this, not only was he given powerful Vile Demons to command, the other races of the Demon Realm also sent their elites for him to use. This made the vanguard army much more powerful than average Demon armies.

However, such an elite army actually fought to a draw with Zhao Hai's undead. It was no wonder that the Demon Dragon King was surprised.

Zhao Hai looked calmly at the battle in front of him. He was using this battle in order to gauge the strength of the Demon Army. It was quite obvious that these Demons weren't 9th ranks, but their strength was still very strong. They were actually able to fight evenly with the 9th rank undead. Although there was still a small gap between them, the mere fact that they lasted this long was already quite surprising.

While the battle progressed on, Zhao Hai's mood had turned heavier and heavier. If this was the strength of their 8th ranks, then what can be said about their 9th ranks? It seems like the fight with the Demon Realm wouldn't go smoothly as what he thought.

The two sides proceeded to strangle each other in the air. Zhao Hai's undead always fought head-on with the opposing Demons. And these Demons were no stranger to this kind of battle. They even managed to make a formation in the air while fighting with the undead.

Chapter 694 – This Enemy Is Hard To Deal With

The reason why Zhao Hai battled with the Demon Race right now was not to block them nor stop them from making their fortifications. Zhao Hai knew that this was impossible. He attacked this time in order to probe the Demon Race's fighting strength.

In the end, it seems like the Demons were very strong. This was bad news for the continent. The stronger the Demons were, the harder it would be for the continent to fight back.

Zhao Hai continued to watch the battle. Although the fight was quite intense, there weren't much losses in the Demon Race's side. These Demons were very proficient in fights, they seemed to be complete veterans when it came to these, they rarely get injured. Even if they were unable to dodge an attack, they would still make movements to ensure that they would get minimum damage. Then after getting injured, they would immediately proceed to retreat from the front. It was evident that they were very used to these maneuvers. Not only was their bodies sturdy, their recovery was also quite quick. Therefore, it wasn't very easy to kill one of them.

Zhao Hai could remember his previous fight with a group of Vile Demons. After receiving a mortal wound, they could even launch a counter-attack. While thinking about this, Zhao Hai couldn't help but feel apprehensive. If all of the Demons in the Demon Realm had this property, then it would be really scary.

The Demon Dragon King and Zhao Hai looked at each other from across the battlefield. Both of them knew that there wasn't much to be had in today's battle. Although Zhao Hai had a lot of undead, he was still unable to kill Demons at a faster rate. While the battle was going on, more and more Demons were still coming out of the rift. Since continuing the battle would be useless, Zhao Hai had planned for his retreat.

Although the undead were called that way, it didn't mean that they have true immortal bodies. Once experts of the Demon Realm arrived, then it might be possible for Zhao Hai to suffer huge losses. Since he didn't want to go all out, Zhao hai smiled towards the Demon Dragon King and said, "Your Majesty Demon Dragon king, I shall be retreating for today. I will wait for you in Demon City." Then Zhao Hai turned his Bone Dragon around and headed back to Demon City. When he left, the undead who were still fighting the Demons suddenly vanished. This made the Demons, who were planning to go all out fighting, stare. Even if they wanted to continue fighting, they already didn't have an enemy to fight with.

When the Demons saw Zhao Hai standing alone on top of his Bone Dragon, heading back to Demon City at a leisurely pace, all of them thought of one thing, it was to rush in and kill Zhao Hai. And as they were going to execute their action, the Demon Dragon King suddenly shouted, "Halt! All of you go back with me." All the Demons turned to the Demon Dragon King and stopped what they were about to do. Although they didn't know why the Demon Dragon King stopped them, they knew that they couldn't violate his commands. After all, the army rules of the Demons were extremely strict.

At this time, a Vile Demon flew towards the Demon Dragon King and said, "Your Majesty, why didn't you make us chase? We still have a lot of people on our side. Moreover, more people would keep coming as time goes by. It is the best time to pursue. If we manage to kill this Zhao Hao, then we would gain huge merit towards the Demon Race."

The Demon Dragon King looked at the vile Demon, he was quite fond of this subordinate of his called Loyola. He was a very brave warrior and was also a good commander, his only negative was his hot temper.

The Demon Dragon King looked at Loyola and replied, "Don't

forget about what's important. We are here to build the city first. As long as we've built this city, then the Demon Race would be able to establish a footing in the Ark Continent. This would give us much more leverage in attacking the continent. On the other hand, what could we accomplish in chasing after Zhao Hai? From our investigations, not only does Zhao Hai have formidable undead, he's also a 9th rank expert. Moreover, he is a rare Human that trains in both Battle Qi and Magic. With this in mind, are you really confident in dealing with him?"

When Loyola heard the Demon Dragon King, he didn't make any other noise. He had personally fought in the frontline, so he was aware of how strong Zhao Hai's undead were. Zhao Hai's undead vanished because he received them, they weren't defeated by the Demons. If they pursue, then Zhao Hai can just use those undead to suppress them once more. It was truly impossible to deal with Zhao Hai in this way.

The Demon Dragon King looked at Zhao Hai's back and said, "If this person isn't eliminated, then our Demon Race would surely have great big troubles. This matter should be reported to His Majesty." Then the Demon Dragon King took his carriage and went back to the Demonic Abyss.

Although the Demon Dragon King was the monarch of the Demon Realm's northwest, he wasn't the Lord of the entire Demon Race. He was only a king in his own territory. In front of the Great Demon King, he can only be an official, this explains why the Demon Dragon King still had someone to call 'His Majesty'.

Zhao Hai returned to Demon City under the cheers of the defenders. These people hadn't heard Zhao Hai's exchange with the Demon Dragon King, but they still witnessed the fight that happened. Although Zhao Hai couldn't wipe out the opposing party, he was still able to completely match them. This made every person in the city very excited.

After all, Zhao Hai was just one person, yet the Demons were still

unable to overwhelm him. This was truly something that can raise people's morale.

In the past, these people only knew Zhao Hai's strength through word of mouth, they hadn't seen him make a move with their own eyes. This time, they had finally managed to see how powerful Zhao Hai really was.

When he saw the people in the city, Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile faintly. Then when he turned his head to look at the Demon camp, his expression couldn't help but turn heavy.

After some time, Zhao Hai turned to the guard closes to him and said, "The Demons wouldn't be attacking for quite some time since they are still busy with their city. Stay here and monitor them, I'll be taking a rest."

The guards complied with thunderous response. Then Zhao Hai flew up and went inside the Bone Dragon's mouth.

Everyone in the continent were aware that Zhao Hai tended to go inside his undead and live there. Therefore, when the guards saw Zhao Hao enter the Bone Dragon, none of them were very surprised.

Actually, Zhao Hai entering the Bone Dragon was just to conceal that he just went to the Space. After arriving inside the Space, Lizzy immediately came to welcome him as she said, "Brother Hai, this enemy is truly difficult to deal with. These Demons are quite strong. Moreover, their formation was something they developed across many years. Finding a formation to counter them would not be easy."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "They are truly difficult to deal with, they're quite suited for battle. You must have seen it, although we managed to injure a lot of Demons, the number of their casualties aren't very large. We didn't manage to make them suffer enough losses. Also, their numbers would continue to swell up. This is quite troublesome."

Lizzy nodded, Megan did the same as well. Then after some time, Megan said, “Big Brother Hai, the Buddha Empire’s evacuation would still need some time. Do we need to stop them here for long?’

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “i don’t know. The only action we can make is do our best here. I already reached an agreement with the Fishmen. They will be entering the Buddha Empire’s waterways, first is to help the refugees in their retreat. And the second would be to block the Demons if it becomes necessary. But even if we use the rivers to block the Demons, we still cannot stop their further advance. It seems like we can only rely on the Dwarf Mountain and the Elven Forest to block their advance.”

At this point, Lizzy frowned and said, “Is this fine? The Demons are very strong. Can the Dwarves and Elves really block them?”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, “Rest assured, they can certainly block them. Don’t forget, the two of them have their own Divine Artifacts. More importantly, I’m quite sure that the Radiant Church had started to get anxious. They should be starting their move any time now.”

Lizzy agreed with this point. Although Zhao Hai couldn’t see what the Radiant Church was doing, one could still see that they had been anxious just by the state of their Empire.

Zhao Hai looked at the Demon Camp on the monitor and sighed, “The Demons have changed their methods this time. I can remember that in the records of the Dwarves, the Demons immediately attacked upon entering the Ark Continent. In the end, the Demons went to far and was beaten back by the various races. But this time, it seems like the Demons have gotten smart. They actually decided to build a city first. As long as this city gets built, then they would gain a stable footing in the continent, allowing them a safe place to retreat. This isn’t good for us.”

Megan frowned, then she said, “Wouldn’t it be better for us if we

destroy the city?”

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “I’m afraid that won’t be easy. The Demons are settled on having this city. I’m afraid that with my current strength, we still couldn’t afford to destroy it.”

Megan looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Are you sure? We have about 20 million undead in our hands. Couldn’t they just overwhelm the city?”

Zhao Hai shook his head and said, “Don’t forget, in addition to their strength, the Demons also have a self-destructing technique. If we push them too far, then they might decide to sacrifice themselves, taking several undead along with them. If we trade like that, we could easily deplete our number of undead. And what do we do when our undead gets depleted? I don’t want to use the continent to fill those numbers.”

Megan nodded, she understood what Zhao Hai meant. Although Zhao Hai had 20 million undead, this was their main battle force in resisting both the Demon Race and the Divine Race. Topping up those numbers with people from the continent wasn’t something that Zhao Hai wanted to see.

Lizzy nodded and said, “It’s best if we don’t destroy the city, this would give us even more time to prepare. At the same time, if the Divine Race really did come, then the Demons would be able to cause more trouble to the Divine Race..”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned his head to look at the two and said, “How about Laura and Berry? Are they busy?”

Lizzy nodded and said, “Elder Sister Laura is busying herself with the allocation of materials. Although she had Cai’er for help, the tasks that needed to be done is just too many. On the other hand, Berry was still enjoying the scenery in the Space. She kept staring at the unchanging grassland. I really don’t know why she liked that scene.”

Zhao Hai sighed and said, “The scene might be dull to us. But for Berry, it was the most wonderful thing that she had seen in her entire life. Cai’er had already told us about the situation in the Divine Realm. Cai’er’s leaves weren’t delicious, yet her leaves are still the most staple food of the Demon Realm. From just this point, we can imagine what kinds of days she had while in the Demon Realm. I’m sure she wouldn’t get tired of the scenery for a long time.”

Lizzy sighed, then Megan looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Big Brother Hai, Sister Ruyen has been going all out these past few days. It seems like her body is getting weaker and weaker every day. Go and see her. Otherwise, her body might really break down.”

Zhao Hai sighed, then he nodded as his figure vanished and appeared inside the Lyon Empire’s Royal Palace. Ruyen was currently inside, processing documents. Although Zhao Hai already left, the Great Nobles still didn’t dare to neglect Ruyen’s presence. As long as something important cropped up, they would immediately have Ruyen look through it. Although this allowed Ruyen to have a grasp of the Empire, this made her very tired as well.

Zhao Hai looked at Ruyen, she was even thinner than when he last saw her. Zhao Hai’s heart couldn’t help but ache when he saw this, at the same time, he couldn’t help but look at Ruyen in a new light. Everyone was young at one point of their life, and everyone makes mistakes as well. For Zhao Hai, Ruyen’s hard work can already be considered to be the price that she paid for her past mistakes. Zhao Hai doesn’t want to see Ruyen torture herself anymore.

Zhao Hai also thought that he had been unfair to Ruyen. Among his women, the only one who didn’t know about the Space was her. This made Zhao Hai feel sorry, so he decided to tell Ruyen about the Space.

When Ruyen heard Zhao Hai sigh, she looked up. Upon seeing Zhao Hai, Ruyen couldn't help but let out a breath as she smiled and quickly said, "You're here."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he looked at Ruyen and said, "I just fought with the Demons. Neither of us lost or won. It seems like we can only use Accra Mountain as a defensive terrain to block the Demons."

Ruyen couldn't help but stare when she heard Zhao Hai. Then she immediately took a step towards Zhao Hai and said, "How are you? Are you injured?"

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "I'm fine. On the other hand, you look like you couldn't survive for another day. You already did a good job, don't busy yourself too much. I'll take you to a place where you can take a well-deserved rest." Then he went and held Ruyen's hand.

Ruyen was overjoyed when she felt Zhao Hai's warm hand. Zhao Hai looked at Ruyen and smiled at her as their figures flashed and entered the Space.

Chapter 695 – Billy's Idea

In the past, Zhao Hai didn't tell Ruyen and Evan about the Space. What they knew was that Zhao Hai was someone with a Space Divergent Ability.

When their figures appeared inside the Space, Ruyen's mind couldn't help but turn blank. They were currently in front of the Space's villa, and Ruyen saw Lizzy and Megan.

When she saw them, Ruyen couldn't help but pull her hand away from Zhao Hai. She was still ashamed in front of Lizzy and Megan, one was because of her status, and two, because of her past.

When Lizzy and Megan saw Ruyen's action, they smiled but didn't say anything. Zhao Hai turned his head to Ruyen and said, "Alright, Ruyen, you can take a rest here. Lizzy and Megan will tell you everything there is to know about this place. I still need to head out."

Ruyen gave a nod before Lizzy and Megan pulled her over and telling her everything about the Space. Then Zhao Hai's figure disappeared as he went out of the Space. This time, he wasn't heading towards Demon City, but instead towards Dwarf Mountain. The Dwarf Mountain is inside the Buddha Empire, because of this, Zhao Hai thought that once the Buddha Empire's army withdrew, the closest army to face the Demons would be the Dwarves.

When Zhao Hai arrived inside Dwarf Mountain, he was quick to notice that the atmosphere here was very different compared to the past. There used to be the sounds of Dwarves hammering here, there were also Dwarven Women, making armor and other things. But now, the place appeared very empty, there weren't any Dwarf children or women present. The only ones left were Dwarves soldiers. When Zhao Hai appeared, he was immediately escorted by two soldiers towards Billy's office. When Billy saw Zhao Hai, he

immediately asked the latter to take a seat. After sitting down, Billy looked at Zhao Hai and said, “Why did you come? Did something happen?” Zhao Hao nodded, “The Demons have arrived and I had a minor scuffle with them. Neither of us won or lost.”

Billy nodded with a heavy expression. He knew how strong Zhao Hai’s undead were, and to think that Zhao Hai was unable to win, it seems like these Demons wouldn’t be easy to deal with.

Zhao Hai turned his head to Billy and said, “Patriarch, how are your preparations doing?” Billy gave a nod and said, “Preparations are doing well, moreover, with the magic beasts that you gave us, our communication with the Elves has gone much smoother.”

Zhao Hai nodded, after taking the Dwarf women and children to the Black Wasteland, Zhao Hai released large quantities of water element beasts in order to aid the Dwarves. With these magic beast, the Dwarves would have it easier to communicate with the Elves. At the same time, this also made it easier for the Dwarves to traverse the underground rivers of the mountain.

Billy looked at Zhao Hai and said, “The people from the Buddha Empire are still moving. It will take at least two months before all of them left. I’m afraid that relying on Demon City for defense wouldn’t be enough. We should try and find another solution.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “I also think that Demon City wouldn’t be enough to slow the Demons down. Therefore, I plan to lay some ambushes on every city in the Buddha Empire.”

Billy nodded and said, “That isn’t wrong, but there are some issues. If you want to really ambush the Demons in the Buddha Empire, then relying only on the Buddha Empire’s army would be a good idea. The Buddha Empire is famous for their iron, this made their heavy armored cavalry very effective in battling in the plains. How about getting the Beastmen to help the Buddha Empire in defending? And while the Beastmen and Buddha Empire cavalry are attacking the Demons in the field, we can also have some Blood

Hawk Cavalry and some Hawk Beastmen attack from the skies. Adding your undead to all of these would be a very good way to tussle with the Demons going through the Buddha Empire. Moreover, this would also increase the depth of strategy in the battlefield. What do you think?”

Zhao Hai was shocked, he hasn't thought about this point. Now that Billy reminded him, he can remember that he can now use the entire continent as manpower in this war. So why wouldn't he unite the various forces, making sure that everyone shows their best performance?

After thinking about it, Zhao Hai couldn't help but get pumped up. He was currently thinking about the feasibility of this plan. While the Beastman Cavalry are indeed strong, the Elves are also formidable archers, who also have their own aerial cavalry. If this aerial cavalry were to ride the Blood Hawks, then their speed should be no slower than the flying Demons. The Elven air force could surely disrupt the Demons in the skies while the Buddha and Beastman Cavalries clashed with the ground toops. At the same time, the Dwarves could also assist in defending Demon City, digging tunnels here and there, making offensive and defensive maneuvers many times more effective.

Nobody could blame Zhao Hai for not thinking about this before. One should know that Zhao Hai had not commanded such a huge battle before. Even though the forces in the continent were listening to Zhao Hai, all of them were also preparing themselves to defend the Demons. During the war, Zhao Hai would just issue his ideas and the others would just make the move. That is to say, Zhao Hai just told them the heading, and they just decide how to do it by themselves.

One could say that Zhao Hai's capability can only be ranked as an officer, not an alliance leader of such a big alliance. He just didn't have the talent to do that.

Billy's idea completely woke Zhao Hai up. If they do as what Billy

said, then they won't only have the Accra Mountain as an option, new paths and strategies would be opened up.

Seeing that Zhao Hai was staying quiet, Billy didn't speak. He knew that Zhao Hai was lacking in this aspect. However, he wasn't worried about it since Zhao Hai was still quite young. Moreover, he already has the strength, given enough time, Zhao Hai would mature bit by bit, eventually being able to contend properly with the Demon Race.

After some time, Zhao Hai gained some ground as he looked at Billy and said, "Alright. Patriarch, I know what we should do. However, I would need to ask the Dwarves to dispatch some troops to send towards Demon City. No matter what, we cannot lose that place to the Demons very easily. If we lose it this early, then the Demons would gain more foothold in the continent."

Billy nodded, "That's not a problem. Rest assured, we shall have the troops prepared in a short time." Zhao Hai nodded, then he said, "Alright, then I'd like you to dispatch about 50 thousand troops for Demon City. I'll be heading to the Buddha Empire now and discuss things with the Buddha Emperor. I want to stop him from sending troops to Demon City. instead, I'll have the Beastmen and Elves send some troops there instead. Those troops would be a huge help in defending Demon City and delaying the advance of the Demons. At the same time, we'll have some troops propagate along strategic positions in the Buddha Empire. As for the smaller cities, we can just leave them."

Billy nodded, "The Buddha Empire's situation is truly special. As long as we hold those strategic positions, then we would be fine. Small Cities aren't just worth defending, instead, we can just have Buddha and Beastman Cavalries wander around selected areas."

Zhao Hai nodded, "Alright, then please prepare your army. I'll go see the Buddha Emperor now then the Beast King and the Elf Queen. This time, I need to discuss things with them personally."

Billy nodded, then he stood up to prepare his army. On the other hand, Zhao Hai's figure vanished as he appeared in the Buddha Empire's capital. Iron Knight City was actually more bustling compared to before. However, Zhao Hai knew that this wasn't due to business, these ships were currently transporting people. One could say that the Buddha Empire's capital had become a beast that had been struck by a sword, bleeding out, but instead of losing blood, it was losing its citizens. In the end, this city would be left empty.

Zhao Hai appeared right outside the Imperial Palace of the Buddha Empire. The Palace has now strengthened its vigilance. It was basically under martial law, there were teams of cavalry constantly patrolling the place.

When he got out of the Space, Zhao Hai immediately summoned his Bone Dragon and then rode it towards the Buddha Empire's Imperial palace.

At this point, everyone in the continent was aware that the Bone Dragon symbolized Zhao Hai. Even if they didn't know Zhao Hai's face, they would still know it was him due to the Bone Dragon.

Zhao Hai's status in the continent was now very high. He can come and go out of an Imperial Capital at will. Moreover, his words were already considered as Imperial Decrees by the various powers in the continent.

Zhao Hai's sudden appearance in the Buddha Empire's capital caused a commotion in the city. Both Warriors and Mages looked at him in reverence while Nobles looked at him with worry. They were afraid that Zhao Hai was carrying unfavorable news.

The Buddha Emperor was currently inside the Great Hall, handling several domestic matters. When transferring citizens, it was imperative that nothing went wrong, and this was a very hard thing to do. The Buddha Emperor hasn't slept for several days, his appearance had become much thinner compared to before.

When Zhao Hai's Bone Dragon landed on the Imperial Palace, court eunuchs immediately informed the Buddha Emperor. Upon hearing that Zhao Hai came, he was startled, just as the other Nobles in the Great Hall. They were all afraid that Zhao Hai had brought bad news. What the Buddha Empire needed right now was time in order to evacuate its citizens. If Zhao Hai brought bad news, then things would become even more difficult.

When he arrived at the Great Hall, Zhao Hai was immediately personally greeted by the Buddha Emperor. Upon seeing the Buddha Emperor come out, Zhao Hai immediately gave him a bow as he said, "I have seen Your Majesty." Then the Buddha Emperor didn't hesitate to pull Zhao Hai's hand and said, "Is mister doing well? Why did you come visit? Did an accident happen in the frontlines? Mister can rest assured, in two days, the Empire would have about a million elite cavalry reinforcing Demon City."

Chapter 696 – Deploying Troops

When Zhao Hai saw the Emperor's expression, he immediately knew what the other was thinking. He smiled at the Emperor and said, "There's no need for Your Majesty to be worried, everything is going fine. Let's head inside first."

Upon hearing that there wasn't anything wrong with the frontline, the Emperor nodded. Then they returned back into the Great Hall. There were also plenty of ministers present inside, all of them were anxiously looking at Zhao Hai.

After giving a salute to the ministers, Zhao Hai said, "The Demons have appeared in the Demonic Abyss. However, they didn't attack Demon City immediately. Instead, they actually went and started to build a city."

"Building a City?" What Zhao Hai said made the other people gawk. But then, they immediately understood the actions of the Demons, each and every one of their complexions couldn't help but change.

Zhao Hai looked at those present and said, "Everyone, there's no need to worry too much. I had a small contact with the Demons yesterday, none of us lost nor won. This means that I can stop the Demons there for quite some time. And since the Demons are busy with their city, we still have some time before they begin to launch attacks towards the continent."

The crowd relaxed, then Zhao Hai turned his head to the Buddha Emperor and said, "Your Majesty, I want to ask you to refrain from sending too many troops to Demon City."

The Buddha Emperor stared, then he knit his eyebrows and said, "Mister's meaning is?" Then Zhao Hai replied, "Although Demon City is in a strategic place, its terrains isn't suited for large scale battles. Moreover, the Buddha Empire's elite cavalry isn't really suitable to defend a city. Instead, they excelled in wide plain

battles. Because of this, I came here to ask Your Majesty to not send too many Iron Knights to Demon City. Instead, we should divide them to various strategic points in the Buddha Empire. I shall also be asking the Dwarves, Elves, and Beastmen to help with the fight. We'll be making the entire Buddha Empire into a giant battlefield. And establishing our own advantages here will be good against the Demon attack."

The Buddha Emperor quietly closed his eyes. He wasn't someone who didn't understand military affairs. On the contrary, he actually started in the military, so he was very familiar with strategic decisions. The Demons had come suddenly and he wasn't able to think much about them at all. So when he heard Zhao Hai, he couldn't help but think about the matters of the war.

The Buddha Emperor wasn't dumb, he knew that it was impossible for the Buddha Empire alone to block the Demon Advance. Otherwise, he wouldn't have listened to Zhao Hai's request to have the civilians be evacuated.

Because of this, the Buddha Emperor was in staunch agreement with regards to turning his entire Empire into a huge battlefield. His heart didn't feel pain for those cities, he knew that all of these needed to be done. As long as the citizens are alive, then the Empire is still standing.

At the same time, he was also considering the feasibility of Zhao Hai's plan. The Buddha Empire's Iron Knight Cavalry was very well-known. Additionally, when they mounted the beasts that Zhao Hai brought, the Buddha Empire's Cavalry, along with the Beastmen, can definitely take advantage of the Buddha Empire's plains in order to resist the Demon advance. On the other hand, having Dwarf Infantry was also very good in defending Demon City. After all, the Dwarves were formidable melee fighters. One shouldn't underestimate them just because they are short, the hammers in their backs can easily deal heavy strikes with each swing. Although there weren't much news with regards to the

Elves in recent years, it was also known that the magic and archery of the Elves were top notch. Having a mixed army like this would actually help in dealing with the Demon Race.

After thinking about it, the Buddha Emperor opened his eyes slowly and said, “Alright, then we’ll move according to Mister’s plan. I shall immediately send orders, sending one army troop to defend Demon City. In any case, they are already itching for a fight. My Buddha Empire’s soldiers aren’t afraid to die, all of them wanted to make the Demons pay for the price of invading the Ark Continent.’

Zhao Hai nodded, “Then I’ll leave you here to prepare. I’ll be meeting the Beastmen and the Elves next. We cannot delay in deploying troops.”

The Buddha Emperor stood up and gave Zhao Hai a big salute, “I represent the entire Buddha Empire in expressing our gratitude to Mister. If not for your effort in going back and forth between nations, then the Buddha Empire might have already been buried in history.”

Zhao Hai was then quick to reply, “Your Majesty is too polite, I’m just considering the fate of the entire continent. Your Majesty can rest assured, I’ve already arranged for your people’s stay inside the Lyon Empire. At the same time, the Aksu Empire has been short of people, for those who are willing to help with the manpower, I shall have them sent there by boat.”

The Buddha Emperor looked at Zhao Hai, he didn’t know what to say. He knew that without Zhao Hai, it would be impossible for the Buddha Empire to survive. They might already been conquered by the Demons by now. Moreover, the eastern parts of the Buddha Empire might have also fallen to the Dragon-ruled Lyon Empire.

Zhao Hai gave the Buddha Emperor a slight bow as he turned around to leave the Imperial palace. When Zhao Hai left, the Buddha Emperor immediately sent some orders, “Pass this order,

have the armies near the Rising Sun City, Lower Bank City, South Plain City, Water Wheel City, Broad Flat City congregate. Have them form a defensive line along the river. The west bank cities would need to do the same as well. Mister told me that he would have marine friends assist us, so we should fortify the river locations. Run along the other branches of Iron Warhorse City and have armies stationed there as well. Control the logistics and have all those points interconnected with each other. Let's make the Demons regret going through the Buddha Empire, we'll make them bleed out with every step they make. With the capital as the center, we will have six strategic lines going outwards. The Buddha Empire will be the greatest fortress the continent has ever seen."

The officials in the Great Hall issued a huge shout. The Buddha Emperor looked at them and said, "Mister Zhao Hai has been going all out in the frontlines. He is doing this not only for us, but also for the entire continent. We, the Buddha Empire, are not afraid of war. Since Mister Zhao Hai is willing to give his all to the continent, then the Buddha Empire shall help him by becoming an advantageous battlefield for the alliance. This is our home, there's nobody more familiar with the place than us. We shall make the Demons understand that it was a mistake stepping in the lands of the Buddha Empire!" Overwhelmed with his emotions, the Buddha Empire even slammed the table right in front of him.

The Ministers in the Great Hall simultaneously shouted, "Long Live the Buddha Empire!! Long Live his Majesty!" The Buddha Emperor looked at the officials and said, "The entire Ark Continent has entered a special period. Various brothers from the other races will be helping us. I want all of you to remember that from now on, all these races will be the friends of the Human Race. Spread my command, have all our brothers from a different race be treated with utmost hospitality. Anyone disobeying this rule will be punished heavily!"

The ministers acknowledged the order. Then the Buddha

Emperor nodded and said, “Go and make your preparations. Tabulate the needed materials and then report back to me. We’ll be asking mister for help in this regard. Now go!” After giving a bow, the ministers proceeded to leave the Great Hall.

When everyone left, the Buddha Emperor slowly sat down on his throne. His eyes were shining brightly as he laughed by himself, “Hahaha, be quick, Demons. Let me see who is more formidable, you or my Iron Knights! Hahaha” After all that happened in the Buddha Empire, the fear and anxiety that the Buddha Emperor felt had been swept away. Instead, it actually provoked his arrogance. He suddenly reverted back to his attitude back when he was just an ordinary soldier, during the times where he was still hot-blooded and was charging his enemies in the frontlines. Ever since he had become the Emperor, this mindset had slowly withdrew. But now, it seems like it was reignited due to the upcoming war.

Zhao Hai wasn’t aware about this, he was currently inside the Elven Forest. When the Elves spotted Zhao Hai, they immediately sent a report to the Queen who invited Zhao Hai directly to the Royal Palace.

Upon arriving at the palace hall, Zhao Hai met the newly appointed Great Elder. He immediately gave a bow to the Queen and the elder before saying, “I have seen Your Majesty and the Great Elder.”

The Queen quickly replied, “Mister doesn’t need to conform to ceremony. May I know why mister made a visit this time?”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “I have an important matter to tell you, Your Majesty. The matter is like this....” Then Zhao Hai told the Queen the matter that he had discussed with Billy. “Your Majesty, I’d like it if you are to send troops to help defend Demon City. I have discussed this matter with the Buddha Emperor as well. What do you think?”

The Queen frowned, to be honest, she didn’t want the Elves to

mingle with the others. However, she was also aware of how effective Zhao Hai's plan would be. Therefore, she gave a nod and said, "Alright, then I shall send 5000 archers to be dispatched to Demon City."

Zhao Hai nodded and said, "Then Your Majesty has my gratitude. I won't be staying here for long, I still need to go to the Beastmen. However, Your Majesty can rest assured, nobody would dare touch the Elves if they appear in the continent. Otherwise, I shall be the first one to punish them. And also, when I leave, I shall be leaving 5000 Blood Hawks to be the mounts of the Elves. The Blood Hawks are more suitable mounts for combat compared to the Voiceless Soundbirds. When Your Majesty has prepared your army, you can have them ride the Blood Hawk towards Demon City." The Queen nodded and said, "Alright, then we shall be following Mister's arrangement." Zhao Hai gave the Queen a bow before he turned around to leave.

When Zhao Hai left, the Great Elder looked at the Queen and said, "Your Majesty, should we really dispatch troops this early? To be honest, with our current strength, we can sufficiently hold the Demons back inside the forest. On the other hand, why do we need to work together with the Humans?"

Chapter 697 – Bustling About

The Queen shook her head and said, “Things aren’t as easy as that. Although the Elven Forest is indeed our Domain, but our population isn’t really that many. On the other hand, it is for certain that the Demons will come in huge numbers. Even if we can slow them down, we would also become grinded down by numbers. There is no problem with us working with the Humans. Also, if we stay here, and the Humans aren’t able to stop the Demons, do you think that we can stop them? That’s impossible.” The Great Elder nodded, she knew that the Queen was right. Compared to the Humans, their population was indeed too small. The Elves and the Demons have the same long life, but the Elves have the problem of procreation. This made their numbers quite small. If they were to have a battle of attrition with the Demons, then they would definitely lose.

The Queen turned to the Great Elder and said, “Moreover, Mister Zhao Hai already gave us his guarantee, there shouldn’t be any problems if we dispatch our troops. This is also a huge opportunity for all the races in the continent. If the Ark Continent can work together to resist the Demons and the Divine Race, as well as defending the Ark Continent, then the races would have an unprecedented unity for a very long time. Because of this, we cannot just hole up inside the Elven Forest.” The Great Elder nodded, the Elves weren’t people who didn’t have any problems. Although they had been living good lives inside the forest, the Great Elder knew that there were still things that they lacked. Before they got in contact with the Dwarves, they were in fact living worse lives.

Zhao Hai wasn’t thinking about any of these right now, he was going to see the Beast King. The Beast King had also been preparing for the past few days. At this time, the entire Beastman Prairie was already aware about the Demon Race. But since they were too far

from the frontlines, the only thing they can provide would be living materials as well as preparing some area for the eventual Human refugees. Aside from that, there wasn't anything that they can do.

The Beast King wasn't very busy when Zhao Hai arrived, therefore, he immediately invited Zhao Hai over to this study. The Beast King looked at Zhao Hai and said, "How is it? How is the frontline?" Zhao Hai smiled at the Beast King and said, "The frontline is doing fine. This time, I came here in order to ask for some troops from the Beastmen." The Beast King stared for a moment, then he said, "Really? That's great! The Warring Clans have been itching for a fight. But unfortunately, we are just too far away from the Buddha Empire. So when will I send the troops?"

When he saw the Beast King's excitement, Zhao Hai couldn't help but smile and said, "There's no need to go quickly. I only came here to ask you for troops. At this time, it would be great if you can prepare some people to help defend Demon City. And then...." Zhao Hai continued on to tell the Beast King about the plans regarding the Buddha Empire.

After listening to Zhao Hai, the Beast King repeatedly nodded and said, "Alright, that's great. I'll arrange for the troops right away. You said you needed an army to defend Demon City? I already have a race in mind. They're quite fond of Humans and are quite gentle. However, they are extremely strong, and are one of the few infantry focused races in the Prairie. Although they have mounts as well, their speed really aren't that good. Defending cities shouldn't be a problem for them."

Zhao Hai nodded, "That's good. Then I'll be returning to Demon City. When your army have gathered, go send me word and I'll take them with me to Buddha Empire and Demon City."

The Beast King nodded and said, "Alright, then just wait for information. The Beastmen had always wanted to try the strengths of those Demons. Thank you."

Zhao Hai laughed and said, "Alright, then I'll be leaving. There are still things that are needed to be processed in the frontline." The Beast King nodded, then Zhao Hai returned to the Space.

However, he didn't immediately go back to Demon City. Instead, he went to the Aksu Empire in order to see Boris. Although the army of the Aksu Empire has been restored, their veteran fighters were eliminated during the war with the Beastmen. This placed the Aksu Empire's strength at the bottom of all the Empires. However, the Aksu Empire was still very cooperative now that the Demons were invading. They were providing goods to the others and was even willing to take in Buddha Empire refugees. Because of this, Zhao Hai felt the need to see Boris and discuss the new plan with him.

Boris and Zhao Hai were mortal enemies in the past, but now, the sentiment was different. They were now allies, moreover, the two haven't met in person in the past, so there wasn't any awkwardness between the two of them.

Boris welcomed Zhao Hai to his study, then after his people served them some tea, Boris looked at Zhao Hai and said, "Did Mister come because an accident happened in the frontline?" Zhao Hai was a bit startled, however, he managed to smile and said, "There's no need to worry, the frontline is doing just fine. This time, I came to discuss a different matter." Then he told Boris about what happened to the front line, then Zhao Hai looked at Boris and said, "Your Majesty, I know about the current state of the Aksu Empire. Therefore, I won't be asking you to dispatch some troops. However, as the war in the frontline goes on, I may need to ask for assistance, so please prepare your troops just in case. If you need anything, then don't hesitate to send word." Boris nodded, "Alright, you can rest assured that the Aksu Empire will give full cooperation. My Aksu Empire might have made the wrong decision in the past, however, we won't be repeating our mistakes this time."

Zhao Hai gave a nod, then he said, "Alright, then my matters here has been settled. I'll be heading to the Rosen Empire next to discuss matters with the Rosen Emperor." Borise stood up and then bowed towards Zhao Hai, "Boris must thank Mister Zhao Hai. You and I are enemies, yet you decided to ignore that fact and help us. This makes me feel very guilty. Mister can rest assured, the Aksu Empire shall give its all in supporting this war." Zhao Hai returned Boris' bow and said, "Your Majesty is too polite. Yours and my enmity is no more than a dispute between Humans. This time, we must unite in order to repel the invaders. In the end, the Aksu Empire has already sided with the Ark Continent Alliance. I hope that Your Majesty takes care of the rear while also providing help to the frontline."

Boris replied, "Mister can rest assured, I know how to do this." Zhao Hai nodded and then bowed to Boris once more before turning around to head towards Rosen Empire.

Zhao Hai wanted to transfer some Rosen and Lyon Empire troops to the Buddha Empire. The Buddha Empire was known for their Iron Knights, the Rosen Empire for their Iron Infantry, while the Lyon Empire for their magic beast cavalry. The Rosen Empire troops are very skilled in defending cities, on the other hand, the Lyon Cavalry was quite skilled in the plains. These two qualities were very needed by the Buddha Empire right now.

Zhao Hai didn't return to the Rosen Empire for quite some time. Although he was now the Emperor of the Lyon Empire, Zhao Hai didn't really want to be one right now. So in seeing the Rosen Emperor, he still conducted himself as a son-in-law. This gave the Emperor a good impression of him.

When Zhao Hai arrive to the Imperial Palace, the Emperor was already holding a conference. Naturally, this was a discussion about the Demon Race.

While they discussed, a court eunuch suddenly arrived and reported Zhao Hai's arrival. The Emperor and Randolph were

startled, they were thinking that something must've happened in the front line. The Emperor immediately said, "Invite him in, quickly."

After Zhao Hao entered the room, he immediately gave salute to the Emperor and Randolph. The Emperor looked at Zhao Hai and said, "What's the matter Little Hai? Did an accident happen in Demon City? With your strength, it should be impossible for the Demons to break through this quickly. So what happened?"

Zhao Hai immediately replied, "Father-in-law, there aren't any problems with the frontline. As long as we have hold over Accra Mountain, there won't be any major problems in our defense. I have just visited the various powers, and even Boris to discuss something. This time, I came to see father-in-law to discuss the same thing. I'd like for the Rosen Empire to send troops over to the Buddha Empire in order to aid with the defense."

The Emperor nodded and said, "This isn't an issue. I've also thought about establishing an advance defensive line. We can't just be overly passive. At the same time, the Buddha Empire is known for its Iron Knights, they can only express their full might in the plains. On the other hand the Rosen Empire troops are very skilled in siege warfare. We're already prepared here, just tell us how much troops you need and we'll provide it to you." Zhao Hai smiled and said, "Alright, then I'll make sure to send a number as soon as possible. I really can't stay here for long, I still have a lot of matters to deal with."

The Emperor nodded, "You are my son-in-law, so I will definitely support you. You go busy yourself now. There's no need to worry about our side. Focus on teaching those bastard Demons a lesson they won't ever forget."

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and said, "Father-in-law can rest assured, we'll be doing just that."

The Emperor gave a satisfied nod and said, "Right how are Lizzy

and Megan? You've been everywhere lately, how are they doing? Since they can't provide help, then they might as well come home lest they provide you with unnecessary trouble."

Zhao Hai forced a smile and said, "Father-in-law, that's not a good idea. They really aren't giving me any trouble, instead, they are actually very helpful. At this point, the formations for my undead have already been handed to the two of them. Their talent in commanding is very good."

The Emperor and Randolph couldn't help but stare, the Emperor looked puzzled at Zhao Hai as he said, "You have Megan and Lizzy take charge of your undead? Am I hearing it right?" Zhao Hai smiled and said, "I won't dare to deceive you, I'm telling the truth. Megan and Lizzy have already been commanding my undead for quite some time. Especially back in the Fishman territory, they were a great help in defeating the Sea Dragons. In the war with the Demons, I'm also thinking of having the two of them command my undead. If they are to go home, then that would be a huge problem for me."

The Emperor laughed and said, "Alright, that's good. I didn't think that those two girls had such a skill. Alright, then we'll have them continue to accompany you. However, you must ensure that they are safe at all times."

Zhao Hai quickly replied, "Father-in-law can feel relieved. I will certainly keep them safe."

Chapter 698 – Crucial Refining

Zhao Hai was currently looking at Bubble who was floating in front of him. Although Zhao Hai can't see any expression on him, he was sure that Bubble was having a smug expression.

However, Zhao Hai was too glad to mess around with Bubble. This was because the little blob was now able to do refining. Moreover, the experiments done on the Space's plants yielded great results. Bubble was now ready to refine the lotus. Zhao Hai was wondering what surprises the lotus would bring once it has been refined.

Zhao Hai looked at Bubble, then he snorted and said, "What are you being so smug about? Go and start working on the lotus. Refine everything in the pool as well. If anything goes wrong, then I will definitely clean you up."

Bubble wasn't very afraid of Zhao Hai, he was smart, he knew that although Zhao Hai was being hostile, Zhao Hai wouldn't do anything to him. Zhao Hai just cared too much about the lotus, so if anything goes wrong, then Zhao Hai would be very disappointed.

Although Bubble was quite a headache, in fact, he had already considered Zhao Hai as his master. He knew when things were crucial and when he could mess around. So upon hearing Zhao Hai, Bubble immediately turned around and went to the pool where the lotus was placed. Then after a moment, the lotus pool suddenly disappeared. Zhao Hai wasn't too surprised about it, he knew that Bubble had his own space inside his body where he can store things. Bubble just needed the lotus to be inside so that he can slowly refine it .

Zhao Hai made Bubble come closer, then he looked into Bubble's transparent body and saw a small bubble where the lotus was located. Zhao Hai nodded and then looked at Bubble and said, "Bubble, remember to refine the lotus well. There should be no

mistakes. Place every inch of your energy in refining, don't get distracted. Understand?"

Bubble complied as he said, "Young Master, feel relieved, I shall complete it with no problems."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned around and proceeded to head towards the villa. He was receiving messages from the various powers in the alliance aside from the Lyon Empire since there was no need for it. Although Zhao Hai was just a temporary Emperor of the Lyon Empire, the Great Nobles of the Empire still wouldn't dare to disobey him. Not only because of Zhao Hai's strength, but also because of his status as the focal point of the alliance. If they dared to misbehave under Zhao Hai, then the days left for them to live wouldn't be very long.

Zhao Hai also instructed them to prepare some troops. At the same time, he also released more magic beasts in order to reestablish the Empire's elite cavalry unit, making it much stronger than before.

When Zhao Hai came back from the Lyon Empire, Bubble had approached him about his success in refining the plants in the Space. Therefore, Zhao Hai wasn't able to enter the villa up until now.

When Zhao Hai entered the villa, he was immediately greeted by Ruyen's smiling face while she was talking with Berry. Lizzy and Megan were at the side as well, looking at the monitor, probably discussing various battle formations and so on.

Upon hearing the sound of the door, the group immediately turned their heads and saw that Zhao Hai has come back. They quickly stood up and welcomed him in. Zhao Hai looked at the women and then smiled, he felt a warm feeling in his heart while looking at this scene. Then he smiled to the group and said, "What's happening? Are there new formations?"

Lizzy smiled and replied, "How could it be as easy as that? We're

just introducing the Space to sister Ruyen and sister Berry. Big Brother Hai, you should give sister Ruyen some work inside the Space. With this, her body would be benefited as well. And also, we can approach her to discuss some matters later on. What do you think?”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “You don’t need to ask me about these things, you can just do it yourself. Ruyen, you can help Laura in the future. Lizzy and Megan aren’t skilled in that area. The only one that can currently lend Laura a hand is you. Now that the continent is at war, material distribution, manpower problems, and the likes are needed to be sorted out properly. Laura has been busy doing these things alone, you should be able to at least ease her burden. Lizzy and Megan will have to command the army a few days from now, so you and Laura need to work hard.” Ruyen immediately replied, “Alright, Brother Hai, rest assured, I will help sister Laura with management.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned to Berry. He didn’t know much about the Succubus so he said, “Berry, do you want to stay inside the Space or do you want to go outside with me? If you stay in the Space, then you need to find something to do, otherwise you will get bored. If you go outside, then you can stay by my side.”

Berry quickly replied, “I’ll go and follow you out. The other sisters are very busy with their own affairs inside the Space while I have nothing else to do. I can take care of anything that you need when you’re outside. I have already discussed this matter with sister Lizzy and the others.”

Zhao Hai nodded, “Alright, then do as you like. How is Demon City doing right now?”

Lizzy replied, “There aren’t any significant developments in Demon City. However, the Dwarves had already arranged their army. You should look and see if you can transfer them to Demon City right now.”

Zhao Hai thought for a moment and said, “Tell Patriarch Billy to wait . I’ll immediately go and tell General Besmir to prepare a place for the Dwarves to stay in. This is the first cooperation between Humans and Dwarves after a long time, it needs to be processed well.”

Lizzy nodded, then she said, “Alright, then I’ll go talk to Patriarch Billy. Sister Berry, we’ll be leaving Brother Hai’s care to you. As you can see, we have a lot of things to take care of at this time. Only you can take care of Brother Hai right now.”

Berry quickly replied, “Sister, rest assured, I will take good care of Brother Hai.”

Zhao Hai just smiled faintly and didn’t say anything. Actually, he’d much prefer having Meg take care of him. After all, Meg has been looking after him for a long time, so he was already familiar with her routine. However, Meg was also quite busy in helping Laura with her job. With her being heavily engaged, it would be impossible for her to take care of Zhao Hai.

On the other hand, it was quite obvious that Berry had zero interest in those matters. This made it possible for her to go outside of the Space with Zhao Hai.

At this time, Besmir was quite worried. The only thing he knew was that Zhao Hai had fought with the Demons and then went back to the city to take a rest. Besmir didn’t know whether Zhao Hai was doing well or maybe he has been injured. If Zhao Hai was wounded, then it would be a fatal blow to their morale. However, when Zhao Hai came in along with a beautiful woman, Besmir immediately calmed down. Then he went forward to greet Zhao Hai, “Mister came. Please come in. May I know the details regarding mister’s fight with the Demons?”

Zhao Hai smiled faintly and replied, “It went quite fairly. None of us has taken too much of an advantage over the other, it’s a tie. Right, I came here to talk about something.”

Besmir quickly said, “I ask Mister to tell me and I will do my best to comply.”

Zhao Hai said, “General is too polite, there’s no need to be so formal. I just want to ask you to prepare three camps in the next few days, the sooner they get finished, the better. Some Dwarves will be arriving later, they will help us with defending against the Demons. In a few days, Beastmen and Elven warriors will arrive as well. I want you to prepare three separate areas for each of them. Also, make sure to tell everyone to refrain from offending them. Our cooperation with the other races will be very crucial in the following days.”

Besmir couldn’t help but stare for a moment when he heard Zhao Hai. But it didn’t take too long before he became elated with the news. He was aware that although everyone was willing to resist the Demons, it wasn’t necessary for them to send troops over. At the same time the people of Demons City had already accepted this truth. The others can just be considered to be offering moral support. But now that the other powers are sending their troops, the morale of the defenders would surely surge up once more.

Although Zhao Hai didn’t say it, Besmir knew that these people were all invited by Zhao Hai. Besmir didn’t expect that Zhao Hai would have this much clout over the other races. This was very good for the alliance, so Besmir quickly agreed, “Mister, rest assured, I shall arrange for those areas immediately.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “Also, the Elves only take fruits and green vegetables as food, they don’t eat meat. Pay attention to this when giving them rations. On the other hand, the Beastmen love meat. Both the Dwarves and the Beastmen also liked to drink liquor, prepare some for them. If you don’t have any of these in hand, then don’t hesitate to inform me.”

Besmir quickly replied, “Yes Mister. I’ve noted them all down. Don’t worry, I’ll make sure that nothing goes wrong.”

Zhao Hai nodded, then he adds, “Remember to keep the area for the Elves very clean, they don’t like dirty places. Also, tell the soldiers to refrain from looking at the reinforcements as though they are monsters. The Dwarves and the Beastmen are quick to lose their temper, and the Elves get offended quite easily. Small problems like these wouldn’t be good when the actual fight comes.”

Besmir replied, “Alright, I’ll take care of it.” Zhao Hai nodded, then he looked outside and the sighed, “I already talked with His Majesty. While we delay the Demons here as much as possible, the Buddha Empire will mobilize its own army in order to provide defensive lines all over the empire. When all of the citizens have withdrawn, the entire Buddha Empire shall be converted into a huge fortress. We’ll make the Demons suffer when the set foot into its lands.”

Besmir’s eyes couldn’t help but fire up when he heard this, his hatred for the Demons couldn’t help but resurface as he replied, “Alright, Mister can rest assured, everything will go according to plan. But with this, it is inevitable that the Buddha Empire will be destroyed.”

Zhao Hai lightly sighed and said, “The Buddha Empire’s land will surely be destroyed. However, as long as its citizens survive, then sooner or later we can reclaim the land and revive the Empire. It’s useless to worry about the land. Don’t forget, the most important thing to the Empire is its people and its talents.”

Chapter 699 – Dwarf Race

Citizens of Demon City have already withdrawn, so even if the army had moved in, there were still a lot of unoccupied space inside the City. Because of this, it didn't take too long for Besmir to arrange three separate areas for the reinforcements to settle in.

Moreover, Besmir has sent word that the Dwarves will be coming soon. He told the people to not provoke the Dwarves since their temperaments aren't very good.

When this information spread in the city, the people immediately expressed their reaction. All of them had the same idea as Besmir. Although it was said that there was an alliance between the Humans and the other races in order to resist the Demons, a long time has passed without any reinforcements coming. This made the defenders think that this was just a rumor that was disseminated by the major empires of the continent. And at the same time, Zhao Hai's presence here was only to calm their worries. They didn't think that the other races would actually send some troops to help defend the city.

Zhao Hai didn't care about these reactions. After Besmir arranged the living areas, he immediately took Berry to inspect them. When there weren't any problems, Zhao Hai led Berry outside the city as he opened a spatial rift allowing the Dwarf passage towards Demon City.

The one who led the Dwarven Army was an elder, Zhao Hai believes that the name of this elder should be Julian. He was quite a young elder and his relationship with Zhao Hai was quite good.

When Julian came out of the rift, he bowed to Zhao Hai and said, "Mister, we have fifty thousand soldiers here as well as ten thousand iron beasts."

After Zhao Hai returned the courtesy, he smiled and said, "Alright. Follow me, I'll be taking you to your area."

Julian nodded, then he turned around to give orders to the army. These people were the most outstanding soldiers of the Dwarven Race. All of them had their war hammers, full iron armor, and iron shield. Besides these, they also had a set of small hatchets for long-distance attacks.

Before long, the fifty thousand troops and ten thousand iron beasts are ready to move. Zhao Hai looked at them and said, "Brothers, we'll be heading to the battle quite soon. This will be the first time that we will have a cooperation with the Humans after a long time. Don't be surprised of their gazes, they are just curious. We'll just shock them when the battle comes. Still, if people dared to laugh at you, then don't punch them immediately, report the matter to me first and I shall deal with it myself!"

This was how Zhao Hai always talked to the Dwarves, so they were already quite used to it. When Zhao Hai finished talking, all of them issued a shout. Then they followed Zhao Hai to Demon City. While heading there, all of them were curiously looking around. Nobody could blame them, after all, they had been inside Dwarf Mountain for a very long time. It wouldn't be strange if they were to be interested in this new place.

Before long, the large unit approached Demon City. When the soldiers in the city spotted Zhao Hai's group, they didn't move and just stood there because of the instruction that they had just received. However, all of them couldn't help but stretch their necks in curiosity. On the other hand, the adventurers weren't very disciplined and just went towards the walls and looked at the Dwarves. But nobody dared to say a word, all of them knew about the temperament of the Dwarves as well as Zhao Hai's orders. If they dared to say anything, then Zhao Hai definitely wouldn't let them off.

In fact, these adventurers were extremely afraid of Zhao Hai. He was known to be very vicious and merciless, turning several hundred thousand Aksu Empire soldiers into undead in a single

night. This was something that cannot be simply forgotten.

Therefore, these adventurers just looked at the Dwarves without making a single noise nor gesture. Zhao Hai was very satisfied with this result. He quickly brought the Dwarves to their area before taking Julian to see Besmir. After all, it was impossible for Zhao Hai to be here all the time, so Julian and Besmir needed to be acquainted to each other for future cooperation.

When Zhao Hai took Julian to the General's residence, Besmir immediately gave them a cordial welcome. Besmir looked at Julian with curiosity while Zhao Hai gave Besmir a salute and said, "General, let me introduce you to the Dwarven Elder Julian. Julian, this is General Besmir, Buddha Empire's general for Demon City's defense army."

Julian and Besmir gave each other a salute, then Zhao Hai said, "Alright, then let's head in." After that, the three of them went inside the General's residence.

Inside the residence, there was a large topographic map of Demon City. Zhao Hai went towards the map and pointed at something and said, "We're here in Demon City in order to defend against the Demon advance. At this time, the Demons are still busying themselves by building their city. However, I believe that they have their own mages, so it wouldn't take too long before they finish. When the city gets built, I believe that God-ranked experts of the Demon Realm will start to make a move. Although they are suppressed by the Ark Continent and cannot stay here for too long, they can still pose a threat to our position. Now that the Dwarves have come, I have one request for you to do. We need tunnels going from the city towards an area outside of it, we need them as soon as possible. They should be deep and large enough for our purpose of using them as our escape passage. Julian, what do you think?" Julian nodded and said, "This is not a problem, leave it to us."

Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned to Besmir and said, "You

coordinate with the Dwarves, this is something important for us. If a God-ranked expert comes, we can use that tunnel in order to escape.”

Besmir nodded, “Mister, you can feel relieved. I know what to do, there’s no need to worry about it.” Zhao Hai nodded, then he turned his head back to Julian and said, “Julian, you should restrain the tempers of the Dwarves as well. We need a harmonious environment in this alliance. If we have some fights, then it would be disadvantageous for us in the future.”

Julian nodded, “I understand. We came this time to wage war with the Demons, not with the Humans Race.” Zhao hai nodded, then he looked at Besmir and said, “General, restrain the mercenaries and adventurers as well. Don’t make them go too far. If they do, then there would be no need to wait for the Dwarves to retaliate, I will do the job for them.”

Besmir nodded, he knew the importance of the current matter. The entire continent needed to be unified right now. If these fellows were to go too far, then Zhao Hai certainly wouldn’t let them off.

Zhao Hai looked at the two and said, “The Dwarf tunnel must be made as secretly as possible. We want the entrance to be well hidden, even to our own people. With this, we can also use those tunnels in order to stage a counter-attack.”

Julian nodded, “I understand. Don’t worry, we know what to do.”

Zhao Hao nodded, “Then that’s good. Julian, you go back and take a rest first. You can start working tomorrow. I still need to go out of the city to take a look at things. General, make the soldiers pay more attention. In the next few days, the Elves will be arriving, extreme discipline will be needed in order to peacefully cooperate with them.”

Besmir nodded and said, “Alright, mister doesn’t need to worry

about it.”

Zhao Hai nods, then he looked at Julian and said, “Let’s go. After I take you back, I’ll be leaving some liquor for your men as well. Let them enjoy their stay here in the meantime.”

Julian laughed and replied, “That would be good. We didn’t bring any liquor this time, we’re expecting that you would provide for us.” Zhao Hai laughed as well as he led Julian out of the General’s residence.

While Besmir looked at Zhao Hai and Julian’s backs, he finally understood how Zhao Hai could have a good relationship with the other races. This was because Zhao Hai didn’t treat them as another race, his treatment of them wasn’t different from his treatment towards the Humans. It was this easy.

However, even if this was easy to do, only a few can manage to do it. The Humans of the continent were too used to feeling superior. They have always looked down at the other races. This made the other races dislike them in turn. In the end, nobody liked anybody, making it impossible for them to cooperate.

Besmir sighed, then he turned around and went back to his room. To be honest, he was also looking down on the other races, but Zhao Hai woke him up. The situation was now very different, they couldn’t just look down on different races anymore.

When Zhao Hai escorted Julian to his camp, he also left behind a lot of liquor. As for the other necessities, there was no need to worry about them, Besmir already prepared it for the Dwarves. This made Zhao Hai commend Besmir deep inside.

Zhao Hai looked at the busy Demons in the distance and couldn’t help but sigh. He really wanted to call all of his undead and then kill them directly. However, Zhao Hai knew that this wasn’t going to work. It was for certain that experts were already stationed there. Although Zhao Hai can overwhelm them with his undead, he also knew that the Demons were surely prepared. If Zhao Hai

attacked them, then he would certainly suffer huge losses in the long run.

Moreover, Zhao Hai had some suspicions that the God-ranked experts had already arrived. It was only because of the current construction that the God-ranked experts decided to stay put.

The reason why Zhao Hai had this idea was because of a certain person, and this was none other than the Demon Dragon King. The information that Cai'er was able to get about the Demon Dragon King was too small. In fact, there wasn't much information that Cai'er can get regarding the God-ranked experts of the Demon Realm. These God-ranked experts were very well-hidden.

And this Demon Dragon King was quite a low-key expert as well. And since Cai'er was unable to find out what his strength was, Zhao Hai believed that the Demon Dragon King was a God-ranked expert himself!

Chapter 700 – Consummate the Marriage

Although Zhao Hai hadn't fought with the Demon Dragon king, he just had this feeling that the other party was a God-ranked expert. He can't really describe this feeling, but it was there, this was also the reason why Zhao Hai didn't act rashly.

On the other hand, Zhao Hai also believed that the Demon Dragon King had sensed his strength. Therefore, he wasn't quick to advance and just stayed to construct their city. It seems like both sides are dreading the ability of the other.

If the other party just had the Demon Dragon King as the God-ranked expert, then Zhao Hai wouldn't be polite and just attacked them. But now it seems like the enemy doesn't have the Demon Dragon King as its only God-ranked expert. Zhao Hai has the feeling that there were at least five God-ranked experts in the enemy's army. If he dared to attack, then he might be besieged by those God-ranked experts. However, even if Zhao Hai didn't attack, those five God-ranked experts can just make a move on Demon City. If they did it this way, then Zhao Hai's prior preparations might be placed in a precarious position.

As to why the other party didn't attack, Zhao Hai was not sure. Maybe they still aren't adapted to the Ark Continent? Who knows.

In fact, Zhao Hai was correct in his guess, these experts still needed to familiarize themselves with the Ark Continent, this was the reason why they decided to refrain from making any actions in the meantime.

The Ark Continent had its own laws, one of them forbade the long-term existence of God-ranked experts. The suppression of this law gets more powerful as the violating party gets stronger. Therefore, these God-ranked Demons needed to adapt their strength in order to perform at their full strength.

Because of this, in addition to Zhao Hai's existence as well as his

undead, the Demon Dragon King decided to stay back and refrain from attacking Demon City immediately.

Berry was currently right by Zhao Hai, at this moment, she turned to him and said, “Brother Hai, there’s no need to worry too much. Although there are a lot of Demons that would come to invade, it would still need some time before all of them manages to come out of the spatial rift. I’ve gotten a whiff of their plans before. They would have several God-ranked experts take command of the vanguard in order to construct their city, after that, they would proceed to attack the Ark Continent bit by bit.”

Zhao Hai nodded and said, “I was thinking the same thing. But how many God-ranked experts do they have? And since they have God-ranked experts, why haven’t they made an attack yet?”

Berry smiled and said, “Things aren’t as easy as that. Although they are God-ranked experts, I heard that they would still need to adapt after arriving at the Ark Continent. Otherwise, they wouldn’t be able to show their full strength. And the time it takes for them to adapt isn’t short. Therefore, it would still take quite some time before they can express their full abilities. We can definitely resist them for a long time.”

Zhao Hai frowned and said, “I’m afraid that the Demon Realm would have a lot of God-ranked experts. If all of them were to arrive at the Ark Continent, then we would be in deep trouble.”

When Berry heard this, she couldn’t help but frown as well, “This is also an issue. I know that there are quite a number of God-ranked experts in the Demon Realm. If they attack, then it would indeed be very troublesome.”

Zhao Hai sighed, then he said, “It looks like we need to start our plan soon. There are a lot of herbs in the Space, but the herbs that we need to make a God-ranked potion is really a lot. At the same time, the growth time of those plants is too long. Our rate of making God-ranked potions is just too low.”

Zhao Hai was quick to discover that the Processing Machine was now able to make God-ranked potions. At that time, he also noted which herbs were needed and planted them. However, he didn't think about how many were needed to make a single potion.

It was only afterwards that Zhao Hai discovered how much herbs he needed to promote a 9th rank to God-rank. Also, the herbs that were needed to make the potion were very demanding. Take a certain ginseng, for example. In the past, Zhao Hai was able to plant ginseng in a very simple manner, and he was also able to harvest them in large quantities. But now, the ginseng needed for the potion required a hundred mu of farming ground. And in this 100 mu, no other plant must be present in order for this special ginseng to grow. And after this ginseng gets planted, extreme attention needed to be made in order to nurture it. It needed to be watered in a specific time or else the land would get dry. Although the ginseng still wouldn't die then, but it would lose its potency to be used for the God-ranked potion. This made it hard to cultivate this herb.

More importantly, the God-ranked potion didn't need one or two of this ginseng, but instead it needed 81. And this was only the ginseng, the other herbs still weren't calculated.

If one wanted to make the potion, then one would need to grow more than 100 herbs. Each of them unique and each of them needed special ways of growing. Some of these were present on Earth, while some have already been acquired by Zhao Hai, like the Goldmetal fruit. And the amount of Goldmetal Fruit needed was actually more than the ginseng.

Because of all these limitations, Zhao Hai was still unable to make Green and the others into God-ranked experts. With the materials he currently had, Zhao Hai only has enough to make a single God-ranked potion.

Therefore, for Zhao Hai, what he needed the most at this moment was time. As long as he has enough time, then he would

be able to raise a lot of God-ranked experts. And when that time comes, whether they be Demons or the Divine Race, all of them weren't going to be problems anymore.

Another reason why Zhao Hai was unwilling to fight the Demons was the existence of the Divine Race. The Radiant Empire has become more and more mysterious as the days passed. And since Zhao Hai couldn't go there to scout, he was getting more and more anxious as time goes by.

When the Divine Race comes, Zhao Hai didn't know what plans they would have. Therefore, Zhao Hai decided to refrain from going all out against the Demons. He was afraid that if he lost too much in fighting the Demons, then he wouldn't have anything to resist the Divine Race with.

Although Zhao Hai hoped that the Divine Race would divert the Demons' attention, it seems like there weren't any movements coming from the Divine Race. This gave Zhao Hai a sense of dread. This was why Zhao Hai thought of making the Buddha Empire into a huge battlefield. Not only would it help in fighting the Demons, it would also prove useful when the Radiant Empire attacks.

When Berry heard Zhao Hai mention the promotion of 9th ranks into God-ranked experts, she was immediately startled, she seemed to have remembered something. Berry looked embarrassingly at Zhao Hai and said with a shy voice, "Brother Hai, I'm a 9th rank Succubus. When a Succubus consummates her marriage, she will gain a huge boost in her strength."

Berry was blushing as she stared downward. Zhao Hai looked at Berry and immediately understood what she wanted to convey.

Berry was a 9th rank expert, if her marriage goes official, then her strength would gain a huge promotion, it might even be possible for her to advance to God-rank. When he thought of this Zhao Hai's eyes couldn't help but shine.

As for consummating the marriage, Zhao Hai was quick to

understand what it was. Although Berry had become Zhao Hai's wife and had people recognize her status, the two of them had yet to make the marriage 'official'. In other words, they haven't done what married people tended to do.[1]

Zhao Hai looked at Berry and said, "Are you sure?"

Berry gave a shy nod. This made Zhao Hai laugh and said, "Then what are we waiting for, let's go." Then he pulled Berry as they flashed to the Space. However, he didn't go through the villa's entrance but instead appeared directly inside his room.

Berry knew what would happen so she didn't have any intentions to resist. She just lowered her head in embarrassment, making her much more charming for Zhao Hai.

Zhao Hai held Berry's hand as he said, "Berry, I apologize. The situation is quite hectic and I am not able to hold a wedding for you."

Berry looked at Zhao Hai as she shook her head and said, "You didn't do anything wrong, Brother Hai. I don't really care about a ceremony. As long as you treat me as your wife, then that would already suffice."

Zhao Hai patted Berry's head and whispered, "Silly girl." Zhao Hai pulled Berry into his bosom as he gently kissed her forehead. Berry gently closed her eyes as Zhao Hai went down to kiss her eyes, her nose, her cheek, her neck....."

When Berry felt Zhao Hai's lips on her own, she couldn't help but feel an electric current going through her whole body. Her body tingled with numbness, sapping all of her energy away.

Zhao Hai gently removed Berry's clothes as he proceeded to kiss her whole body. In the end his mouth reached Berry's sensitive breasts, he continue to tease it until Berry made a delighted moan.

Zhao Hai didn't expect Berry to taste this good, he was unable to stop himself. He couldn't help but nib lightly on the tip as Berry

gave a tender sound, arousing Zhao Hai even more.

Zhao Hai's tongue explored Berry's peaks for a moment before he went and kissed Berry lips. Berry curled her tongue as she met Zhao Hai's lips, the two of them played around before Zhao Hai removed all of his clothes and started to work on Berry's figure.

Table of Contents

[Bringing The Farm To Live In Another World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 601 – Settling In](#)

[Chapter 602 – Ice Pillar](#)

[Chapter 603 – Perverted Bubble](#)

[Chapter 604 – Bloody War](#)

[Chapter 605 – Wind Bead](#)

[Chapter 606 – Fighting Intent](#)

[Chapter 607 – Excitement](#)

[Chapter 608 – Cooperation](#)

[Chapter 609 – Sea Race Incident](#)

[Chapter 610 – Swordfish Tribe](#)

[Chapter 611 – Stone Column Island](#)

[Chapter 612 – Queen](#)

[Chapter 613 – Secret](#)

[Chapter 614 – Arrogant? I Have Strength!](#)

[Chapter 615 – Curious Fishman Race](#)

[Chapter 616 – Dangerous Character](#)

[Chapter 617 – The Army Departs](#)

[Chapter 618 – Defensive Line](#)

[Chapter 619 – Azure Dragon Battle Snail](#)

[Chapter 620 – Cone Attack](#)

[Chapter 621 – Messenger Fish](#)

[Chapter 622 – Mobile Phone? Telephone?](#)

[Chapter 623 – War](#)

[Chapter 624 – You Take Command](#)

[Chapter 625 – Such a Character!](#)

[Chapter 626 – Devil Scorpion](#)

[Chapter 627 – Poisonous Scorpion Tail](#)

[Chapter 628 – Four Armed Demon](#)

[Chapter 629 – Interesting Thing](#)

[Chapter 630 – Definitely](#)

[Chapter 631 – Lukewarm Elven Race](#)

[Chapter 632 – Imperial Water Oyster](#)

[Chapter 633 – Frequent Each Other](#)
[Chapter 634 – The True War](#)
[Chapter 635 – Besieged](#)
[Chapter 636 – Fierce Struggle](#)
[Chapter 637 – Sacrificial Offering](#)
[Chapter 638 – Resolution of the Sea Dragons](#)
[Chapter 639 – Two Days](#)
[Chapter 640 – Attitude](#)
[Chapter 641 – Turning Misfortune into a Blessing](#)
[Chapter 642 – Demon Realm Aura?](#)
[Chapter 643 – Core and Level Up](#)
[Chapter 644 – Water Refining Technique](#)
[Chapter 645 – Soul Sucking Reef](#)
[Chapter 646 – Tai Ji Eight Trigrams Chart?](#)
[Chapter 647 – Innate Treasure](#)
[Chapter 648 – Startling Changes](#)
[Chapter 649 – The Dragons Must Be Eliminated](#)
[Chapter 650 – Seeing Their Reaction](#)
[Chapter 651 – Startling the Mermaid Queen](#)
[Chapter 652 – Buddha Empire](#)
[Chapter 653 – Visiting the Elves](#)
[Chapter 654 – Voiceless Soundbird](#)
[Chapter 655 – Elf Queen](#)
[Chapter 656 – Anger!](#)
[Chapter 657 – A Suspicious Great Elder](#)
[Chapter 658 – Rebels](#)
[Chapter 659 – Supreme Elder](#)
[Chapter 660 – Fixing the Elven Bow](#)
[Chapter 661 – The Radiant Church’s Backup](#)
[Chapter 662 – Preparation Begins](#)
[Chapter 663 – Taking Two Cities at Night](#)
[Chapter 664 – Dark Creatures of the Underworld](#)
[Chapter 665 – Easily Accomplished](#)
[Chapter 666 – Officially Declaring War](#)
[Chapter 667 – Waiting for a Day](#)
[Chapter 668 – Removed from the Continent!](#)
[Chapter 669 – Rout!](#)
[Chapter 670 – Being Ruthless](#)
[Chapter 671 – Transformation?](#)

[Chapter 672 – The Dragons didn't Appear](#)
[Chapter 673 – Demon!](#)
[Chapter 674 – Blood Void](#)
[Chapter 675 – Seven Days](#)
[Chapter 676 – Rushing About](#)
[Chapter 677 – Your Excellency, You Have No Choice But To Govern Us](#)
[Chapter 678 – History's Most Unique Throne Ascension](#)
[Chapter 679 – Demon](#)
[Chapter 680 – Protecting the Homeland](#)
[Chapter 681 – Influential Figure](#)
[Chapter 682 – Unimportant Person](#)
[Chapter 683 – Slaves](#)
[Chapter 684 – Gan Clan and Barn](#)
[Chapter 685 – Historical Novel like the Three Kingdoms?](#)
[Chapter 686 – Man Eating Flower, Flower Devil Race](#)
[Chapter 687 – Flame Demon](#)
[Chapter 688 – Best Wife Candidate: Succubus](#)
[Chapter 689 – The Weakness of the Undead](#)
[Chapter 690 – Miscalculation of Time](#)
[Chapter 691 – Preparation](#)
[Chapter 692 – Demon Dragon King](#)
[Chapter 693 – Fight](#)
[Chapter 694 – This Enemy Is Hard To Deal With](#)
[Chapter 695 – Billy's Idea](#)
[Chapter 696 – Deploying Troops](#)
[Chapter 697 – Bustling About](#)
[Chapter 698 – Crucial Refining](#)
[Chapter 699 – Dwarf Race](#)
[Chapter 700 – Consummate the Marriage](#)